This is a reproduction of a library book that was digitized by Google as part of an ongoing effort to preserve the information in books and make it universally accessible.

Google™ books

https://books.google.com



COLUMBIA LIBRARIES OFFSITE
1002346672

8240789

Columbia University
in the City of New York

THE LIBRARIES





Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

THE

MEMOIRS

OF

Capt. *Peter Drake.*

CONTAINING,

An Account of many Strange and Surprising Events, which happened to Him through a Series of Sixty Years, and upwards; and several material Anecdotes, regarding King William and Queen Anne's Wars with Lewis XIV. of *France*.

DUBLIN:

Printed and Sold by S. Powell in *Crane-Lane*, for the AUTHOR.

MDCCLV.

Digitized by Google

12-11511

824D789
T

Digitized by Google

TO THE

RIGHT HONOURABLE

ROBERT

Lord BARON of

TRIMLESTOWN.

MY LORD,

AMONG the many and important Favours which Your Lordſhip's Goodneſs has conferred upon me, this of permitting me to dedicate the Hiſtory of my Life to you, is far from being deemed the leaſt conſiderable.

It has ever been the conſtant Ambition of all Authors to endeavour to

Digitized by Google

ſhelter their Works from the Injuries of Malice and Obſcurity, by placing them under the Protection of ſome illuſtrious Perſonage; and if their Caution in that Reſpect has ever been capable of procuring for their Labours, that valuable Sanction, how certainly may mine (however mean) depend on it, when addreſſed to a Perſon, whoſe diffuſive Charity, extenſive Knowledge, and general Benevolence, has rendered him ſo univerſally eſteemed by that Society, of which he is a real Ornament.

Among the many Foibles to which I have been naturally addicted, that mean and abject Derogation from the Dignity of human Nature, that Servility of Diſpoſition which induces Men of dependant Circumſtances to flatter and fawn on their Superiors, could never be truly counted mine. Nay, the Reverſe will ſo obviouſly appear in the Courſe of the following Hiſtory, that could I have bent an high

Digitized by Google

high and ungovernable Spirit to that pliable Diſpoſition above hinted at, (and that even in Circumſtances which might well have apologized for ſuch a Conduct) Preferment, Friendſhip, and Profit might ſometimes have been the pleaſing Rewards of one, inſtead of that, Neceſſity, Enmity and Puniſhment, conſtantly the grievous Effects of the other.

But where is the Neceſſity of warding againſt the Imputation of Flattery, when I dedicate to Your Lordſhip. Were I capable of prefixing to Your Lordſhip's Name all thoſe Epithets of Praiſe, wherewith the beſt and greateſt Authors have conſecrated the Worth, and embalmed the Characters of the beſt and greateſt Men, it would be but a Recapitulation of what Hundreds daily proclaim, Hundreds who have felt, and ſtill continue to experience the ſalutary Effects of Your Lordſhip's Knowledge, and boundleſs Humanity.

Digitized by Google

DEDICATION.

To Gratitude alone then be theſe my Lines aſcribed; to Gatitude excited, by innumerable Favours critically beſtowed on the many Neceſſities of a poor old Man; poor in all other Means of Retaliation, but that of ſincerely ſubſcribing himſelf,

My LORD,

Your LORDSHIP's

Moſt Faithful,

Moſt Devoted,

And Obliged,

Humble Servant,

Peter Drake.

Digitized by Google

TO THE

READER.

THE following Sheets preſent you with the Hiſtory of a Life, which for upwards of Threeſcore Years has been chequered with the greateſt Variety of Fortune. Good-nature may poſſibly influence you to Pity rather than Reproach the Beginning of my Follies, when you find that I was early put to my Shifts, void of Experience, deſtitute of Means, and utterly unacquainted with that Art and Cunning, which are ſo neceſſary Ingredients for the Apparatus of an Adventurer in the troubled Seas of a deceitful World.——— But were I a Subject worth Reſentment, how juſtly muſt it provoke the Indignation of

Digitized by Google

every rational Creature, to find that after Providence had with ſuch ſingular Mercy extricated me out of ſuch numberleſs Difficulties, preſerved me from the greateſt Dangers, and by rendering my Errors ſo obvious from the cleareſt Experience, furniſhed me with ſo ſtrong and ſelf-evident Reaſons for ſhunning and deteſting them, that I ſhould ſtill continue the ſame unthinking, incorrigible Wretch, that my Relapſes into Folly ſhould be as frequent as my Eſcapes from the evil Effects of it; and that I ſhould ſtill prepoſterouſly perſiſt in the ſame ruinous Courſes, that had even ultimately terminated on the very Brink of Diſtruction. ——— I confeſs, with the utmoſt Sincerity, my moſt complicated Faults, and am heartily ſorry that no other Means of Attonement is now left.—Divine Providence, in its perfect Juſtice, has mercifully condeſcended to puniſh me in this World, for my Neglect of thoſe Bleſſings it ſo laviſhly and critically beſtowed upon me, by reducing me, at a very advanced Age, to an irkſome State of Dependence. Irkſome I muſt call it, becauſe the melancholy Recollection of my paſt Follies, conſciouſly convinces me, that the many charitable Favours I daily receive from the humane Bounty of a Number of the moſt good and noble Perſonages (my ſincere and unfeigned Gratitude, which I take this publick Opportunity of expreſſing) is utterly diſproportioned to the vaſt Demerit of my ill-ſpent Life.

But

Digitized by Google

But here, as in all other Inſtances, the Diſpoſition of Providence in regard to ſublunary Things, is truly admirable. The Puniſhment of Vice in me, is made the Means whereby others may exert their Virtue. The Divine Vengeance which I have ſo juſtly incurred, muſt long ſince have ended my Being, had not the Brighteſt of the divine Attributes been exerted for the Alleviation of my Sufferings, and thereby (unſpeakable Goodneſs) the Term of my Repentance moſt mercifully protracted to a juſt and reaſonable Date.

To be addreſſed in ſo moral a Strain, by a Perſon whoſe paſt Life has been fatally looſe and ill conducted, will undoubtedly ſeem very extraordinary to the Reader; but it may be believed, as is really the Caſe, that the main, and indeed ſole Motive of thus publickly exhibiting my own Hiſtory, is founded on an Expectation, that a fair and impartial Account of my own Follies, and the ill Conſequences which attended them, might poſſibly contribute to the Welfare of my Fellow-Creatures, by holding up a Mirrour of Inſtruction, and warning them againſt the Purſuits of thoſe pernicious Practices, to which they will ſee the greateſt Danger of Soul as well as Body moſt inſeparably annexed; that even an Intention ſo honeſtly founded, might operate in my Behalf, and being joined with a firm and ſincere Repentance, effectually cancel the Defects of my

Digitized by Google

my paſt, and powerfully recommend me to the Divine Mercy in a future Life.

I think it may not be improper to furniſh the Reader with an Epitomy of that Character, from which I believe I have already raiſed various Expectations; the Powers of my outward as well as inward Man, have both been conſiderable Sharers in the Conduct of my extraordinary Life; ſo that a ſlight Delineation of that Picture, which will be ſeen at large in the Narrative of my Story, may poſſibly help, but cannot anticipate, the Expectation of the Reader, as the little Satisfaction it is capable of giving, will rather be found to conſiſt in the Variety, than the Aſſemblage of its Features.

To begin then with my Perſon; my Height is exactly Five Feet Ten Inches and Three Quarters, my Limbs neither athletically clumſy, nor finically delicate, but rather that due Compoſition of both, which conſtitutes the Appearance of a ſtrong, well-proportioned Man; extremely active, and ſo indefatigable in point of bodily Labour, that I never knew, or ſcarcely ever heard of any who was capable of undergoing more; and to this Advantage I have often been indebted for Life, as nothing under Heaven, but the moſt robuſt Conſtitution, could be capable of ſupporting the numerous Hardſhips I have ſo often and ſo bitterly encountered.—The Regularity of my Features were

Digitized by Google

were ſuch as induced the World to call a me handſome Man, and indeed, in my Youth, the Teſtimony of my Glaſs, joined to many ſucceſsful Amours, has made me vain enough to think, that it did not altogether flatter me.

Such was the Body which incloſed my Mind, ſteady in Adverſity, yet volatile in Proſperity, a ſound Judgment, and a deep Diſcernment, yet a Slave to Paſſion, and blind to Danger; a Memory moſt extenſive, yet the Recollection of one paſt Folly could never diſſuade me from the Purſuit of another. Humane and benevolent, generouſly affected with the Misfortunes of others, though ſo hardened and inſenſible to my own, that when under Sentence of Death, I cannot recollect it to have given me the leaſt Concern.—In ſhort, I had not one good Quality that was not in a great Degree allayed with ſomething like its Reverſe, and to a Conſtitution of Mind, formed of ſuch diſcordant Principles, can I alone attribute that incorrigible Madneſs, and Inconſiſtence of Conduct, to be found almoſt every where in my Story.

But I fear I have been too tedious, ſo will, without giving further Trouble to the Reader, immediately proceed to my Hiſtory.

SUB-

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

SUBSCRIBERS NAMES.

A.

THomas Ld. Athunry
Rich. Archbold, Eſq;
Mr. Richard Archbold, Merchant
John Archer, Merch.
James Archer.
Peter Adrian

B

The Hon. Mat. Barnewall
Sir Tho. Barnewall, Knt. of Malta
Hon. Capt. Ja. Barnewall
Barth. Barnewall, Eſq;
John Barnewall, Eſq;
Sir Charles Bloys, Bart.
Lady Burrows
Counſellor Blake
James Barnewall, Eſq;
Peter Bath, Eſq;
Step. Creagh Butler, Eſq;
John Browne, Eſq;
Walter Blakeney, Eſq;
Rich. Blake, Eſq;
The Rev. Dr. Ballard
The Rev. Mr. Barrow
The Rev. Mr. Buxton
Mr. Nich. Bellew, Merch.
Auſtin Blake, Merch.
Mrs. Blois
Miſs Blois
Mrs. Barnewall
Mrs. Fran. Barnewall
Mr. James Barnewall
Edward Barnewall
George Barnewall, 14 Books
Birch, Merchant
Mr. Charles Barnewall
John Baggs
Andrew Balffe
Joſeph Bath
George Booker
Wm. Blakeney
Rich. Bourk
Darby Brenan
George Blackburn
Thomas Burn
Edw. Bullock
Rich. Butler
Pierce Butler
Bearcroft, 12 Books.

C

Jaſon Crawford, Eſq;
Counſellor W. Chapman
Rev. Dr. Wm. Clark
Mr. Tho. Caddel
Copeland
James Cavenagh
John Caufield
Carey
Chapman
Chauncey
Michael Chieves
Clarke
Matthew Connor
Patrick Coffee
J. B. Colt
Wm. Coſtegan
John Coleman
J—— C——
Mrs. Eleanor Crange
Mr. John Cuſtis
Mrs. Diana Cuſack

Mrs.

Digitized by Google

SUBSCRIBERS NAMES.

Mrs. Francis Cuſack.

D

Mich. Dally, Eſq;
Richard Dillon, Eſq;
Doctor Dowdal
Rev. Mr. Danny
Rev. Mr. Dawney
Mr. Peter Dalton
—— Davey, 8 Books
—— Davey
—— Dams, Eſq; 13
Mr. Arthur Dams
Edward Deaſe
Pat. Deaſe
Rich. Deaſe
Patrick Dean
Robert Dillon.
Joſeph Dixon
Tho. Downing, Merch.
Mrs. Cath. Dowdall
Anne Dowdall
Mr. Joſeph Dowdall
Miles Dowdall
Edward Dowdall
Moſes Drake
Arthur Dames
—— Dames.

E

Rev. Mr. Elliſhaw
Mr. Euſtace, Merch. 6

F

Oliver Fitzgerald, Eſq;
Robert Fith, Eſq;
Peter Flenagan, Eſq;
John Flemming, Eſq;
Mr. Fr. French, Merch.
Mrs. —— Frenton
Miſs —— Frenton
Mrs. Eliz. Fiſher
Mr. Frances Fleetwood
Chriſtopher Fleming
Samuel Foſter

G

Rt. Hon. Ld. Viſcount Gormonſtown
Sir Tho. Googe, Bt.
Ignatius Geoghagan, Eſq;
David Geoghegan, Eſq;
Conſt. Geoghegan, M. D.
Walter Glaſcock, Eſq;
John Gerver, Eſq;
Rev. Mr. Ralph Grattan
Mr. Mich. Griffin, Mer.
Tho. Gerard
Wm. Gordon
Patrick Gogan.
—— Gedſhall
Mrs. Anne Graham
Mrs. —— Gedſhall.

H

James Huſſey, Eſq;
Rich. Hamilton, Eſq;
Mr. John Hartford, Mer.
Mrs. Hammond
Haſſet
Mr. James Hackett
Francis Heyney
John Healy
James Hanly
Joſeph Harper
—— Hefferman
John Hopkins
—— Helden
Samuel Hornage
Ralph Hunter
Peter Henagan

Mrs.

Digitized by Google

SUBSCRIBERS NAMES.

I

Mrs. Irwin.
Mr. Inman, 12 Books
John Jennings, Eſq;
Rev. Mr. Jones, 4
Mr. Jackſon
Mr. Philip Jute, junior.

K

Rt. Hon. Ld Viſcount Kenmare
Sir John Kemp
Tho. Kanaugh, Eſq;
Rev. Mr. Kemp
Mr. Peter Keerman
James Kyran
Kelly, M. D.

L

George Lattin, Eſq;
Samuel Lucas, Eſq;
Rev. Mr. Stafford Leighthen
Mr. Edward Lyon
George Longworth.

M

Rt. Hon. Lady Viſcounteſs Mountgarret
John Malpas, jun. Eſq;
Patrick Meyler, Eſq;
Euſtace Maly, Eſq;
Robert Martin, Eſq; 30
Captain Mears
George Macklin, Eſq;
Henry Monk, Eſq;
Tho. Meredyth, Eſq;
Mr. Thomas M'Donnal, Merchant
Mrs Margaret Matthews
Mr. Slingſbby Merchant
Tho. Matthews
Mr. Corn. M'Cann
—— Mee
—— Merry
Jew Mooheeſy
Mat. Mullin, 6 Books
Maddin, Merchant.

N

The Hon. Edw. Nugent
Tho. Nugent, Eſq;
Capt. James Nugent
George Nugent, Eſq;
Robert Nugent, Eſq;
George Nangle, Eſq;
Sir Ar. Newcomen, Bt. 24
Walter Nangle, Eſq;
Dr. Edw. Netervill
Mrs. Nugent
Mr. Lavatin Nugent
John Nugent
Robert Nugent
Nich. Netervill
—— Nottingham

O

Manus O'Donnell, Eſq;
Hugh O'Donnell, Eſq;
Mr. George Oxly
Barthol. O'Bryan.

P

Mr. Alderman Porter
Ja. Parviſole, 3
Philip, 2
James Plunkett
Wm. Piers
Tho. Piers

Mr.

Digitized by Google

Mr. Tho. Potterton
Henry Pidgeon

R

John Rider, Eſq;
Wm. Richardſon, Eſq;
James Reiley, Eſq;
Thomas Reiley, Eſq;
Luke Reiley, Eſq;
Mr. Wellers Reiley
Cæſar Reiley
Hugh Reiley
—— Reiley
Philip Reiley
Philip Reiley
Charles Reiley
Darby Reiley
Phily Reiley
Charles Reiley
James Reiley
Miles Reiley
Chriſt. Reily
Mrs. Connor Reiley
Rogerſon
Pat. Ruſſel, Merchant 12
Mr. Rochin.

S

Thomas Shaw, Eſq;
James Shee, Eſq;
Mr. Patrick Shee,
George Scot
Charles Selby
George Shee
—— Seaton
Anthony Sallery
Samuel Smith
Mrs. Anne Smith
Mr. Chriſt. Stanly
Mr. Richard Strange
Lewis Stewart
Mead Swift
Edward Shott
Wm. Shott
—— Sheridan, M. D.
—— Southwell, M. D.

T

The Rt. Hon. Ld. Trimleſtown
Rt. Hon. the Lady Dowager Trimleſtown
Martin Tucker, Eſq;
Sterne Tighe, Eſq;
Philip Tuite, Eſq;
Counſellor Towers
Miſs Marg. Tunin
Mr. Collowb Tolland
James Thompſon
Toole
John Taafe
Tho. Taylor.

W

Rt. Hon. E. of Weſtmeath
John Wade, Eſq;
Benj. Woodward, Eſq;
Haynes Wade, Eſq;
Nicholas Wogan, Eſq;
—— —— Weldon, Eſq;
Rev. Mr. Winer
Mrs. Jane Warren
Mr. Manly Weſtrop
Redmond Wade
Francis Walker
—— Wade
—— Wickenton
John Wilſon.

THE

Digitized by Google

THE

MEMOIRS

OF

Capt. *Peter Drake.*

CHAP. I.

BEFORE I proceed in this Hiſtory, it may not be amiſs to give the Reader ſome Account of my Birth and Family, in which I ſhall be brief, and only inform him, that my Anceſtors were originally *Engliſh*, and accompanied *Strongbow* in his Expedition to this Iſland.

Drake, the Chief of the Name, was of the Family of *Aſhe*, in *Devonſhire*. He had beſtowed on him large Poſſeſſions in the County of *Meath*, and his Manſion-houſe was called from his own Name, *Drake-Rath*, in the Barony of *Kells*, where the Ruins are yet to be ſeen.

I was born the 12th of *October*, 1671. My Father's Name was *George*. He was eldeſt Son to *William*

Digitized by Google

Drake of *Drake-rath*, Eſq; above-mentioned, and married *Elizabeth*, eldeſt Daughter to *Patrick Stanley*, of *Marls-town* in the County of *Lowth*, Eſq; who was Brother to *John Stanley* of *Finner*, Eſq; near *Slane*, in the County of *Meath*.

The Family remained in peaceable Poſſeſſion of this Eſtate from their firſt Arrival, until the War of 1641, when, with many more, they forfeited, and were driven to ſhift for themſelves.

At the Beginning of *Charles* the Second's Reign, there was a Court of Claims ſet on Foot, by which a Few of the Proprietors were reſtored, and my Father was of the Number. He became however poſſeſſed only of Part, and was at the Eve of being reſtored to the Whole, when an Order came from the King to diſſolve that Court, ſo that an End, for that Time, was put to his Hopes.

My Father had, ſome Time before this, with his Family, ſettled in the County of *Kildare*, having taken ſome Lands from *William*, Lord *Dungan* (to whom he had the Honour of being related) at *Kildroughet*, now *Celbridge*, where he built a handſome Houſe. Here he continued till the Revolution, when his Affairs took a new Turn.

Some Time before, or about the Beginning of the Troubles, Lord *Dungan* was created Earl, and, if I remember right, Governor of *Limerick*: Thither he repaired, taking my Father with him, whom he ſoon after promoted: He was appointed one of the Commiſſioners of the Cuſtoms, and chief Comptroller of the Mint. As ſoon as King *James* came to *Dublin*, and called a Parliament; my Father was put in the Commiſſion of the Peace for the County of *Kildare*, and declared himſelf Candidate for the Borough of *Navan*. He was at the ſame Time reſtored to the Remainder of his Eſtate; after which he returned to *Limerick*, to act in his Employments.

In

Digitized by Google

In *June* 1690, he came to visit his Family, and settle his Affairs; but the Loss of the Battle at the *Boyn* (which happened the first of *July* following) obliged him, with all Expedition to move off with his Family, for *Limerick*, staying but one Day after the Battle to inter Lord *Dungan*, only Son to the Earl of *Limerick*, who was that Day killed by a Cannon Ball, and brought to *Castle-town*, the Earl his Father's Seat. This melancholy Affair being at an End, the next Day we set forward on our Journey.

Arriving at that City, we found all Hands employed in repairing the old, and throwing up new Works, for the Defence of the Place, which was soon after besieged; the Particulars of which are so well known already, that it would be needless to descend to a minute Relation: I shall therefore say no more than mention an Instance of the Interposition of divine Providence in my Behalf, by which I have been so often since rescued from Calamity and the Jaws of Death.

There was between our House and the Town-Wall a large Magazine. The Besiegers ordered two Pieces of Ordnance to be levelled at this Building; and several Shots passed through, and hit on the Gable-end, within which was the Apartment where I slept with one Captain *Plunket*, of Lord *Gormanstown*'s Regiment. This Gentleman was to mount Guard that Day, and going out very early, left me a-bed. About two Hours after, I went out to speak to one of the Servants to get me a clean Shirt, and before I had Time to return, a Ball had beat down the Wall, a great Part of which had fallen on, and demolished the Bed: It then passed through my Father's Bed-chamber, broke the Posts of the Bed where he and my Mother were asleep, but, thank Heaven, had no worse Effect than putting the Family in a Consternation.

Digitized by Google

When the Siege was at an End, Lord *Trimleſtown* did my Mother the Honour of a Viſit, to condole with her on the Loſs of my Father (who, though he eſcaped the many Dangers of a Battle, was ſnatched by the irreſiſtable Hand of Death from this Life to a better) and made her a Tender of his Friendſhip, promiſing to provide for my Brother; and added, that if ſhe was willing to ſuffer me to accompany him to *France*, he would take me under his Protection. This kind Offer ſhe thought was not to be refuſed, and immediately conſented, at the ſame Time thanking that generous Nobleman for ſo ſingular a Kindneſs.

In *October* 1691, about the Nineteenth Year of my Age, I left *Ireland* after the Capitulation of *Limerick*, and landed at *Breſt*, the above-mentioned Lord, and my Brother *Bartholomew* in Company, who was one of the Life-Guard to King *James* the Second, in the Troop commanded by that Nobleman. From *Breſt* we marched by Route to St. *Bricux* in *Britanny*, where the Guards were diſcharged, that unfortunate Prince being no longer in a Condition, through a continued Series of ill Fortune, to ſupport them. My Brother and I were recommended by Lord *Trimleſtown* to the Marquis of *Catulan*, who was a Brigadier of Horſe. He entertained him as a Volunteer in his Regiment, but thinking me too young for military Service, left me, on his going to attend the Campaign, under the Care of the Marchioneſs his Lady, with Directions that I ſhould be inſtructed in the *French* Tongue. As the Marquis uſed to return every Winter, during the Time of my Continuance there, I earneſtly ſolicited him each Time to take me with him, but to no Purpoſe.

Lord *Trimleſtown* was killed in an Action on the *Moſelle* in the Year 1693, under the Count *D'Arcourt*. On his Death, I imagined, their Kindneſs

Digitized by Google

neſs towards me began to cool, which made me deſirous of departing, which I effected in the Year 1694, when they took me with them to *Paris*, and there left me to ſhift for myſelf. From *Paris* I went to St. *Germains*, where I found Mrs. *Sarsfield*, Mother to Lord *Lucan*, and her two Daughters, the Ladies *Killmallock* and *Mount-Leinſter*; the eldeſt of whom (Lady *Killmallock*) was my Godmother.

Thoſe Ladies (tho' ſupported by ſmall Penſions) received me with great Generoſity, and treated me with much Good-nature. But my beſt Friend was, *William*, Earl of *Limerick*, who took me to his Houſe, and there ſupported me, with Mr. *Dungan*, his Lordſhip's preſumptive Heir, his Son having been killed at the Battle of the *Boyne*, as mentioned above. But I, preſuming on my Nearneſs of Blood to his Lordſhip, behaved myſelf in ſuch a Manner to Mr. *Dungan* (who now began to take Umbrage at the Favours which this Nobleman was pleaſed to beſtow on me) that it ſoon produced much Bickering and Diſcontent between us, which occaſioned the Earl to tell us one Day (being juſtly incenſed) that ſince we were ſo fond of quarrelling, he would ſoon furniſh us with an Opportunity of exerciſing that Diſpoſition; and accordingly ſent us in the Year 1696 to the *French* Army in *Catalonia*, then under the Command of the Duke *D'Vendoſme*; and there recommended us to the Care of Lieutenant-Colonel *Barnwell*, of the Queen's Regiment of Dragoons, commanded by Colonel *O-Gara*, who then lay at *Perpignan*, Capital of the Province of *Rouſillon*. He accordingly received us, but paid that Deference to Mr. *Dungan*, as to enter him as a Cadet in the Regiment, which intitled him to 8*d. per* Day, and me as a private Centinel, with the Pay of 4*d. per* Day; which ſo chagrined me, that in ſpite of many violent Methods which were taken to pull down my Spirit, I waited only an

Digitized by Google

Opportunity of quitting them, which I accordingly executed; for, having heard from ſome Acquaintances, of a Brother of mine, who was a Cadet in Colonel *Arthur Dillon*'s Regiment of Foot, quartered at a Town called *Lierce*, ſeven Leagues from *Perpignan*, I eſcaped thither, and was introduced by my Brother to his Colonel, who immediately entered me as a Cadet in his own Company. Here we ſpent our Winter, and early in the Spring marched to *Barcelona*, in order to lay Siege to that City, before which we ſat down in the Year 1697, and took it, after a Siege of two Months, with the Loſs of Eight Thouſand Men; and the Garriſon, on capitulating, were ſuffered to march out with all the Honours of War. The Town being taken, Ten Thouſand *French* Troops were ordered to garriſon it, and our Regiment was of the Number.

Here I remained till the Peace of *Ryſwick*, and in this Town had the Misfortune to quarrel with one *Allen*, a Cadet of the Company in which I ſerved: The Cauſe of our Difference was his frequently calling me *Boy* and *Stripling*, with other Terms which ſeemed to reflect on my Courage; which Uſage ſo provoked me, that one Night in the Guard-houſe, where he ſpoke of me with Contempt, I called him out, challenged him, fought, and diſarmed him.

And here I cannot omit the Mention of a very extraordinary Event. The Centinels poſted on the Breach confidently affirmed, that they ſaw in the Night, Numbers of dreadful Apparitions, who were wont to engage one another as in an Attack, furiouſly crying *Kill*, *Advance*, and ſuch like Expreſſions, commonly uſed on thoſe Occaſions; and what added the greater Authority to theſe Aſſertions was, that ſeveral Centinels on that Poſt were found dead without any viſible Marks of Violence,

Digitized by Google

olence, and ſo was ſuppoſed to have died of their Fears. This occaſioned Orders for doubling the Centinels, and being ſometimes of the Number, imagined I both heard and ſaw the like.

About the latter End of *Chriſtmas*, in Conſequence of the Peace of *Ryſwick*, we quitted *Barcelona*, when the Averſion of the Inhabitants was ſo ſtrong, that they poured ſealding Water on us as we marched through the Streets, which irritated the Soldiery to ſuch a Degree, that they fired on them, and wounded ſeveral. From thence we marched for *Perpignan*; and for the three firſt Nights we were ſo alarmed at the Reſentment of the Peaſants, that we lay ſeveral Nights under Arms, notwithſtanding the Severity of the Weather. During the Remainder of this Winter, and the following Summer (1698) we quartered in *Rouſſillon*, about the City of *Perpignan*, and from thence marched to *Valence* in *Dauphine*, were we remained till the Beginning of the Year 1699.

The reſt of the Cadets were early in this Spring reduced to the Condition of private Men, which ſet me once more on returning to St. *Germains*, in order to viſit my Friends, with whom I remained till the Beginning of *July*; but finding no Proſpect of advancing my Fortune, I ſuddenly reſolved on returning to *Ireland*, and as ſuddenly put my Reſolution in Force: For in half an Hour after I had formed the Deſign, I ſet forward (without taking Leave of a ſingle Friend, and with leſs than three Livres in my Pocket) for *Poiſſy*, from whence I proceeded to the City of *Roan* in *Normandy*; and from that I may date the many ſurpriſing Difficulties, unaccountable Eſcapes, and various Misfortunes, which the Reader will viſibly diſtinguiſh through the Sequel of my tempeſtuous Life.

Being arrived at *Roan* with an empty Pocket, an utter Stranger in the City, and conſequently deſti-

Digitized by Google

tute of Friends, I went to a Houſe at the Sign of the *Engliſh* Arms, where the Captains of the Ships bound for *England* and *Ireland* uſed generally to reſort: And here, with a Confidence which nothing but the Inexperience of inconſiderate Youth could ſupport, I expected that any Commander of a Veſſel I could find from *Ireland*, would be undoubtedly acquainted with my Family and Pretenſions, and conſequently carry me to my native Country, without any Reſpect to the Expence of my Paſſage, and uſe me with all the Reſpect due to a Gentleman. But, alas! I was miſerably miſtaken, and learned a Leſſon which I have ever ſince retained, *viz.* That the airy Proſpect of diſtant Poſſeſſions, however ſupported by the Advantages of Birth, are weak and trifling Conſiderations, when put in Competition with a ſingle Atom of real Intereſt. I even offered to work my Paſſage, but all to no Purpoſe, nothing but Money would do, of which I was quite bare. Nor could I return to my Friends at St. *Germain*'s, whom my abrupt Departure muſt have juſtly offended.

Thus my Difficulties hourly increaſed, and the Means of redreſſing them proportionably decreaſed: Depreſſed with theſe tormenting Reflections, I ſcarce ſlept a Wink all Night, and roſe early in the Morning to take a Walk on the Quay, in hopes of meeting ſomething for my Intereſt. Here I ſtroled a conſiderable Time in a moſt melancholy Habit of Mind, till I was at length rouſed by the Beat of a Drum, to which, with many others, I reſorted, and found it to be a Drummer belonging to the Queen's Regiment of Foot, then lying at *Douay*, beating up for Volunteers, and offering a Bounty of Four Louis-D'ors to any Perſon willing to ſerve the *French* King in ſaid Regiment. No ſooner did I hear the Propoſal, but (as Neceſſity is the Mother of Invention) I formed a Deſign of taking the Money,

Digitized by Google

ney, and of making it by ſome Means ſubſervient to the Neceſſity of my preſent Circumſtances. I therefore told the Drummer, I was willing to take on; ſo he immediately ſlung his Drum, and led me to the Captain. As I went to the Inn where the Commanding Officer kept his Quarters, I was preparing myſelf with ſuch Anſwers as I thought neceſſary on this Occaſion, to give to thoſe Queſtions which I judged might be put to me: For knowing the Regiment to be *French*, and that none but Natives were entertained in it, I thought it expedient on the uſual Queſtions concerning my Parentage, Calling and Religion, being propoſed, to feign to the Captain, that I was a Native of *Bretagne*, born in the City of St. *Brieux*; that my Father, *Peter Goutier*, followed the Trade of Shoemaking in the ſame Place, and that I, his Son *Lewis*, being of an enterpriſing Diſpoſition, was determined to attempt the Advancement of my Fortune in the Service of my King and Country. He aſked me ſeveral Queſtions concerning the Town, Inhabitants, Governor, and ſuch-like Things, as he thought could moſt effectually help him to a Knowledge of the real Truth of my Story; all which I was well capacitated to anſwer, having (as I informed my Reader above) lived three Years and a Half in that City. He ſeemed well ſatisfied with the Accounts I gave him, but, however, endeavoured to leſſen the Bounty-Money proclaimed by his Drummer, by firſt offering me two, and then three Louis D'ors, which I abſolutely refuſed, and thereon left the Houſe: I had not gone far before the Drummer overtook me, and, deſiring me to come back, told me the Captain was ſatisfied to pay the full Money: On which I returned, but told the Captain before I received the Gold, that I knew it was cuſtomary on thoſe Occaſions to confine Recruits till ſuch Time as they

Digitized by Google

were ſent to Garriſon, but that I entered as a Volunteer, with a firm Reſolution to be ſteady to my Engagement; therefore would by no Means ſubmit to that Condition, as I then thought it would be an Act of Compulſion and not of Free-Will. At this the Captain heſitated for ſome Time, and at length told me he would indulge me as to Confinement, provided I would conſent to be conſtantly in Company with two or three of the Soldiers, during my Stay at *Roan*: To which I anſwered, that I never deſired better Company than my Fellow Soldiers; ſo taking his Money, I became one of his Men, but with a determined Reſolution to honour him with my Company as ſhort a Time as poſſible.

A Corporal and two Soldiers were appointed for my Companions, or rather Guards. I propoſed to them to take a Walk in the City, which they complied with, and afterwards I invited them to ſome cool Houſe in the Suburbs (it being the Beginning of *Auguſt*, and the Weather exceſſively warm) where I promiſed them a Dinner, and a hearty Drink. This was a Propoſal too agreeable to be rejected by my Half-famiſhed Brethren, who received it with elated Hearts and repeated Thanks, and led me over the Bridge of *Roan* (licking their Lips) to a Houſe in the Extremity of the Town. I here beſpoke Dinner, and made frequent Excuſes of going to the Door, but obſerved that two of them conſtantly attended me: This gave me a ſtrong Suſpicion that my Scheme would miſcarry; and to mend the Matter, that my Diſappointment would be aggravated with the Expence of the Treat. However, reſolving to try all Means of Eſcape, I propoſed after Dinner, that we ſhould take a Walk in the Fields, and that on our Return I would give them a Supper at the ſame Houſe, which they readily comply'd with.

Without

Digitized by Google

Without the Suburbs there lay a delightful Tract of Meadow, through which ran a Canal or Trench of about Twenty Feet broad, cut from the River, ſtretching a greater Length than I could ſee: We walk'd along the Brink of this Canal for near a Mile, till we came to a Bridge of Planks, which I ſuppoſe was laid a-croſs it for the Convenience of drawing over Hay. This Bridge we croſs'd, and walked up the oppoſite Bank, till we got near the City: Here I found that there was no Way of getting into the Town otherwiſe than by the ſame Road we came; on which it immediately occurr'd to me, that were I able to leap the Canal, they could not poſſibly follow me, which if it ſo happen'd, I might undoubtedly make my Eſcape, they having no Means of returning, but by the Bridge of Planks, which would give me better than a Mile Advantage of them. Having thus determined with myſelf, I immediately propos'd to my Companions that we ſhould leap for a ſmall Wager; which they agreeing to, I artfully ſuffer'd them to get the better, and then ſuddenly propoſed leaping a-croſs the Canal; at which their burſting into a loud Laughter, convinced me of their Incapacity to follow me, as well as of their Ignorance in regard to my Deſign.

They ſtill continued laughing, and deſired me to leap firſt, and that they would follow, which I deſignedly ſeemed twice or thrice to attempt in vain, they continuing highly diverted, and ſtill encouraging me to try again, which I did; and making the laſt Leap I ever gratified them with, got ſafe on the other Side. Thus alighted on the Land of Promiſe, I ſat me down awhile to conſider the Phyſiognomies of my aſtoniſh'd Companions. They all three look'd at one another with much Surpriſe; but the Corporal, on whoſe Conduct (I ſuppoſe) the Captain had a particular Reliance,

Digitized by Google

Reliance, diſplayed viſible Marks of Shame and Confuſion. We all remain'd for ſome Minutes in ſilent Contemplation, they at their bad, and I at my good Fortune: 'Till I (as Winners are generally the moſt alert) call'd to them, and aſked why they did not follow me? they ſaid they could as well leap over the River, that they thought the thing impoſſible, nay, that yet they had ſome Doubts, and in order to prove it was no Deluſion, begged I would take t'other Leap back again: But that being no Part of my Scheme, I begged to be excus'd, but promiſed faithfully to wait for them till they came round. They often intreated me for t'other Leap to no Purpoſe; ſo finding me inexorable, march'd back, often turning their Heads, to view the active Source of their Misfortune. When they had got about half way to the Bridge of Planks, I got up, made them a low Bow, and with Heels as light as my Heart, ſped away for *Roan*. I immediately went to the *King's Arms*, enquir'd for the Captain of the Ship bound for *Ireland*, who now for a ſingle Louis-D'or, granted that Requeſt which he a little before refuſed to a long Pedigree of illuſtrious Anceſtors, and an old Title to a good Eſtate. So that Night I went aboard, and falling down the River next Morning, arrived in a ſhort time at the Cove of *Cork*.

Had I known the Reception I was to meet with at *Cork*, I ſhould have ſooner attempted any Part of the Globe than my native Country. As we were driving before the Tide, towards the *Cove*, the King's Officers came aboard, as is uſual when Ships enter any Port. I ſoon had Reaſon to reflect that it is not always to a Perſon's Advantage to be in good Company; and, in a few Months after, that bad Company proves ſometimes more to ones Advantage, as ſhall be ſeen by the Sequel of this Story.

There

Digitized by Google

There were aboard the Ship ſeveral other Paſſengers, among the reſt five Friars, who, as I was informed, had been baniſhed the Kingdom ſome time before: Being found in ſuch Company was probably the Occaſion of near ſix Months cloſe and hard Confinement, as ſhall be told preſently. The King's Officers examined us, and thoſe Gentlemen owning themſelves to be Clergymen, we were all taken into the King's Boat, and landed at the *Cove*. As ſoon as we were on ſhore, the Officers put it to our Choice, to be put that Night into a filthy Priſon, or to pay ſome Men who ſhould be appointed to guard us at a Publick-houſe: We choſe the latter, and had the Company of the Officers the beſt Part of the Night, and made ourſelves as eaſy as our Circumſtances and Condition could admit of.

Next Morning as ſoon as the Tide ſerved, we were put into the King's Boat, and carried to *Cork*, which was about ſix or eight Miles. As ſoon as we were put on ſhore, we were conducted to the *Tholſel*, where the Magiſtrates ſoon appeared; and, after a long and tedious Examination, committed us all to Gaol to the *Northgate*: But before I go to Priſon, I muſt beg leave to tell my Reader, that one of the Aldermen, whoſe Name was *French*, would have been ſo kind as to make me a better Man then I really was, or ever intended to be, *viz.* a Friar; and, in order to find out ſome Proof of what he ſuſpected, he ordered the Lining of my Coat to be ripped out, and a ſmall Bruſh covered with Leather to be ripped, to no purpoſe; but though there was no farther Proof, I was obliged to ſhare the Fate of the reſt.

As ſoon as we entered the Priſon, the Inquiry was, how Caſh ſtood? or whether we would have Beds? The Friars being better provided in Pocket than I was, ſaid, they would have Beds; however, we

Digitized by Google

we were all bolted. As ſoon as that was done, my Pockets not anſwering the Gaoler's Expectation, I was ſeparated from the reſt, and put into the common Gaol among the pooreſt and moſt dreadful Objects my Eyes had then ever ſeen. About eight o'Clock at Night the Turnkeys came to lock up the Priſoners, and ſee that every Thing was ſafe. I ſaw one of them take an Iron Bar about eight Feet long, and put a Loop of the ſame Metal about a Man's Neck, and run the Bar through the Loop. He then called another of the Priſoners, and treated him in the ſame manner: I looked very earneſtly all the time, and thought myſelf very happy not to be in their Condition; but, behold! my Joys were not laſting: For, as ſoon as he had fixed that Couple, he called to me ſaying, *Come, young Friar, and try how this will fit you*, and then fixed a Loop on my Neck, and ſaid, it fitted me very well, and faſtened me to the Bar with the other two, and ſo left me for that Night. I made the beſt Shift I could with my Yoke Fellows on a rotten Straw Bed as ſmall as Chaff, and full of Vermin. In this Condition did I remain for ſeveral Days without any other Allowance but Bread and Water.

About this Time the Judges were expected to hold the Summer Aſſize, which put us in great Hopes of our Liberty, though we ſoon found ourſelves deceived; for Lord Chief Juſtice *Pyne*, and Judge *Coote*, being arrived, we were brought to Court with the other Priſoners; but no Preparation being made for our Trials, we were by them committed till the Spring Aſſize. Soon after the Judges were gone, whether by Order of the Magiſtrates, or others, I know not; but we were removed from the North to the South Gate: This Removal was of ſome Advantage, which was to get clean Straw, and more Room, beſides being freed

Digitized by Google

freed from the Yoke and Yoke Fellows. For ſome Days, the Friars were put to the Keeper of this new Gaol's Houſe, having ſtill wherewithal to pay for Beds. I was put into the common Gaol among a Set of new Acquaintance not much better than the former, and on the former Allowance of Bread and Water, until kind Providence did ſomething better for me, as you ſhall hear. In the Room in which I ſlept, there was a large Window with ſtrong Iron Bars, which looked fully fronting the main Street: I often, as well as other Priſoners, frequented this Window to amuſe myſelf with ſeeing the People going backwards and forwards. I ſoon took notice of a ſmart comely Wench coming often out of a Houſe about fifteen or twenty Doors from the Gaol. She uſed to paſs to and again very often, and often looked up at the Window, as People frequently do when they paſs by a Priſon. I one Day aſked the head Turnkey, with whom I had the good Fortune to be pretty intimate, whether he knew her? who anſwered with a Smile, that he did, very well, and that if I could get acquainted with her, I need not want a good Dinner every Day. I told him there was little or no Probability of that in my Circumſtance, and aſked him, how long he had known her? He told me from her Infancy: That he had known her Parents; that ſhe was born at *Mallow*, twelve Miles diſtant; and ſo we parted for that Time. I ſaw her paſs backwards and forwards ſeveral times that Day, and was racking my Invention the Remainder of that, and the next Day, in forming Projects to bring my Deſign of getting acquainted with her to bear: At laſt I thought I had hit on it, if I could get the Turn-key in my Intereſt. Accordingly the next Time I ſaw him I propoſed it: He aſſured me, with an Oath, he would do all the Service in his Power; and, at my

Digitized by Google

my Requeſt, he told me her Name was *Elizabeth Toomy*; that ſhe had lived moſt of, if not all her Life, in *Mallow*; that her Father kept the Sign of the *Black Raven* in the Town, time out of mind. I heartily thanked him for his kind and good Intelligence, telling him I did not doubt, with his Aſſiſtance, to accompliſh my Deſign, and, at our next Meeting, to give him a Detail of the Methods I uſed to put it in Execution.

The next Day, he ſeemed to be in greater Haſte than myſelf, and aſked me ſmiling, if I had come to a Reſolution. I told him I was, and believed I had hit on a ſure Way; and, if he approved of it, his Part was very eaſy, which was only to tell the Girl, that there was a young Man in Priſon who came from *France*, had a great Deſire to ſpeak with her; and if ſhe conſented, I did not doubt but through his Intereſt I might be admitted to the Keeper's Houſe to take a Glaſs with her, which he aſſured me of; and that he would alſo ſpeak to her the firſt Opportunity; for which I thanked him. And now I began to think myſelf at the Eve of keeping a better Table, but found more Rubs in my Way than I expected; for the next time I ſaw the Turn-key, he told me with a Look of Concern, that he had delivered my Meſſage to no purpoſe, ſhe telling him ſhe never had been in *France*, and could not imagine what Buſineſs any body from that Country could have with her; but he aſſured me, he would ſolicit her again. I deſired that Favour of him, and he never deſiſted till ſhe gave her Conſent.

About this Time, I was again (to my Sorrow) every Night put to the Yoke with my new Yoke Fellows; but, in a few Days, had the Comfort of knowing from the Turn-key, that with Difficulty

Digitized by Google

culty and Perſuaſion, had at laſt prevailed with the Girl to grant my Requeſt; and that the next *Sunday*, after Evening Service, ſhe would come to ſee me, which was no ſmall Comfort in my Affliction. The Day being come, I ſent in the Morning to the Friars, to beg they would ſend me half a Crown, on an urgent Neceſſity, which they granted; and being now ſtrong in Caſh, and the longed-for Hour arrived, the Turnkey came for, he led me to the Keeper's Houſe, introducing me to the Object of my Deſire; before whom I made but a mean Figure, fettered and in Rags. We looked awhile at each other, and I not having Power to ſpeak, ſhe broke Silence, by aſking me very coolly, what my Buſineſs might be with her? I begged her Pardon for the Freedom I had taken, which was occaſioned by a ſtrong Notion I had entertained of having the Pleaſure of ſeeing her before. She aſſured me I was miſtaken, and that ſhe never was twenty Miles from *Cork* in her Life. I told her that might very well be, but that I might have ſeen her nevertheleſs, and begged Leave to aſk if her Name was not *Toomy*? She ſeemed ſurpriſed, and told me it was *Elizabeth Toomy*. Then ſaid I, I am ſo far right: I ſaluted her, which ſhe very faintly admitted. I then demanded of her if ſhe was not a Native of *Mallow*, and mentioned her Father and Mother's Names: At this her Surpriſe increaſed: The Turnkey alſo, in whoſe Preſence all this happened, pretended to ſeem aſtoniſhed. I called for a Bottle of Wine, which being brought, I preſented my Reſpects to her in a Bumper, which ſhe as kindly pledged. I filled a Glaſs for the Turn-key, who drank both our Healths. Then I deſired to know if her Father did not keep the Sign of the *Black Eagle*, or *Black Lion*, or *Dog*, that I was ſure it was ſomething black? ſhe told me he kept the

Digitized by Google

Black Raven: Then I desired her to look at me, and recollect if she could see any thing in my Face she could remember; but she declared in the negative: I told her, that in truth she was but a small Girl when I saw her, but yet I remembered her, and asked, if she had seen any of King *James*'s Forces in *Mallow* in the War-time? She answered, she had: I told her I was at that Time quartered at her Father's, with some others; and told her so many Stories, that she seemed to think she remembered something of me. However, this Visit, which lasted about two Hours, fully answered the Design I took so much Trouble for; she offered to pay for the Wine, which I would by no means suffer, and so we parted for that Time. The next Morning as soon as the Prison Doors were open, I was called to the Grate, and received a Couple of Plates, neatly tied in a clean Napkin, in which was a hot buttered Manchet, and a Bottle of strong Beer. The Messenger told me he would call again for the Things, which he did about One o'Clock, with a fresh Cargo in the same manner, with a handsome Plate of powdered Beef and Greens, and another of roast Mutton, and a Bottle of strong Beer; and at Night for my Supper cold Meat, Bread, and a Slice of Cheese, with a Bottle of the same Liquor. This good Fortune continued as long as I remained in Prison, which was about three Months, during which time I had the Pleasure of seeing my Benefactress at least twice a Week, and sometimes oftner: She always treated, for it was not in my Power to treat her; and if it had, she would not suffer it.

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. II.

ABOUT the Beginning of this my good Fortune, there was a Man brought in for Cow-ſtealing, who was made one of my Yoke Companions. His Name was *Arthur Kife*, and reputed a very underſtanding Man in the Buſineſs of Cow-ſtealing, and knew very well (being an old Offender) how to evade the Puniſhment due to his Crimes. But as we were ſo cloſely linked together, I was obliged to be acquainted with him; and he being a hearty merry Fellow, we grew intimate. I perceived he began to place ſome Confidence in me, and talk to me indirectly of the Sweets of Liberty, which I agreed to, and told him I thought it could not be purchaſed at a Price too dear. He ſaid, if I was of that Opinion, he would require but two Things of me, which, if granted, he did not doubt but that we ſhould ſoon get out of the deplorable Condition we were then in. I aſked him, if he thought that thoſe Things he required were in my Power? He aſſured me they were, and but a very eaſy Taſk. I ſaid if it was ſo, he might freely ſpeak, and aſſure himſelf I would not heſitate a Minute to grant his Requeſt. He ſeemed well pleaſed, and told me in a little Time I ſhould know more.

There was at that Time in the Priſon one Captain *Barrett* under Sentence of death for returning from *France* without the King's Sign Manual, which the Laws then required. Numbers of People came to ſee him, among whom was one *Johnſton* who was married to his Siſter, with whom I got acquainted, and of whom I ſhall have occaſion to ſpeak hereafter. The next Converſation my Companion had with me about his Project, he told me the two Things he required of me, in

Digitized by Google

order to our Liberty, were Secrecy and Reſolution. I aſſuring him of both: He ſaid *Chriſtmas* was drawing near, and that ſoon after the Holidays I ſhould have better News; and that in a few Days he expected his Wife who might lend a helping Hand. She came and was every Day with him: I was not of their Council, but am ſure ſhe acted her Part, and he ſtrengthened my Hope, by aſſuring me that the happy Day was drawing near.

Chriſtmas came, and ſoon after the Holidays, the Quarter-ſeſſions for *Cork* began. My Companion told me, with an Air of Aſſurance, that in five Days at fartheſt we ſhould be at Liberty. I told him, I thought it next to an Impoſſibility, conſidering our Bolts, and being yoked at Night; he bid me not to mind that, and that he would find a Remedy in a ſhort Time. Accordingly on the 11th Day of *January* in the Morning, as ſoon as the Priſon was opened, and we had taken off the Yoke, his Wife came to him, and as ſoon as ſhe was gone, he ſhewed me a Spring Saw of a very fine ſhining blue, as I thought, telling me that that would ſoon do the Buſineſs; and that very Day he deſired me to go and lie down on our Straw Bed, whither he ſoon followed me, and began to work, though I hardly perceived it; and, in a very ſurpriſing manner cut my Bolt almoſt off, cloſe to the Rivet, in a ſhort Time, unheard by any of the other Priſoners, or hardly by myſelf. He then roſe and walked about awhile, and ſoon after went to work on his own, which he alſo cut.

All this Time the Priſoners were carrying backwards and forwards to and from Court; and it was reported that the Court would hardly break up before ten o'Clock. This was favourable to our Undertaking; and my Companion gave the finiſhing Stroke to our Bolts by ſeven o'Clock, when he told

Digitized by Google

told me his Wife was to let him know when the Turnkeys would come to lock up, and begged I would be ready, and not faint-hearted; and as ſoon as I ſaw the Candle put out to ſlip off my Bolt, and keep it ready in my Hand, and that he would do the ſame with his; that we ſhould both ſtand in the ſame Place and Poſture we uſed when they came to examine our Irons; that as ſoon as the Turnkey ſhould ſtoop to look at mine, I ſhould fell him, charging me to make ſure of my Blow, aſſuring me he would do as much with the other Turnkey. About ten o'Clock the Wife came and told her Huſband they were coming; we went to our Poſts, the Turnkeys came in, and were received and treated agreeable to our Scheme. Several of the Priſoners cried out, but we inſtantly ran into the Street, my Deliverer one Way, and I another; and I never ſaw, nor heard of him ſince.

As ſoon as I got to the Bottom of the Stairs I went out of the Gate, at which Place was a Grenadier Centinel in the Gate-way: As I paſſed him by, he, having heard the Uproar, made a Stroak with his Muſket, but, fortunately for me, he miſſed his Blow, and I eſcaped. The Night being exceedingly dark, I could not well ſee where I was, but in a ſhort Time found myſelf in a Church-yard, and diſcovering no Path I got ſeveral Falls: Remaining thus for above a Quarter of an Hour, at laſt I eſpied a Light, and reſolved at all Events to go to it. Arriving at the Place, I liſtened at the Door, and hearing them talk *Iriſh*, I knocked; a Woman came to the Door, and as ſoon as ſhe ſaw me, ſhe knew me by having ſeen me at the Priſon Grate often as ſhe paſſed by: She aſked me how I came there, and ſeeming ſurpriſed, I made no Difficulty to tell her, thinking myſelf pretty ſafe, as it really happened. I aſked her for ſome

Digitized by Google

Drink; ſhe brought me Milk, and called her Huſband, who, when he had heard my Story, told me I was no way ſafe there, and adviſed me to make the beſt of my Way to a Village that was about ſix Miles diſtant, where he had an Acquaintance he would direct me to, whom I might truſt. Accordingly, he went with me a good Way, and putting me in the right Road, told me the Man's Name, and gave me a particular Deſcription of his Houſe, deſiring me to mention his Name, which would gain me admittance, as well as hoſpitable Treatment. I ſet forward as directed, and after a toilſome and dangerous Walk arrived at the wiſhed for Place. On Enquiry I found my Man, and uſing his Friend's Name as directed, he received me with open Arms. I told him my Story, with which he ſeemed affected, and regaled me with a Meſs of Milk and Potatoes. I eat heartily, and after fell aſleep on a Straw Bed he had provided for me.

He awoke me before Day: I roſe, got my Breakfaſt and proceeded on my Journey with my humane Friend, who travelled with me about an Hour, telling me, two Miles forward there was a Ferry, which I muſt croſs; that as ſoon as we ſhould come within Sight of it, he would leave me; and ſhewed me a Gentleman's Houſe on the other Side of the River, which he told me I muſt paſs by, and adviſed me to call there, telling me that he was a *Roman Catholick*, and a very charitable Man; that his Name was *Charles Valee*; that he was ſure it would be ſomething in my Way. I rejoic'd at this Piece of Intelligence; for I had ſome Knowledge of the Gentleman, by having ſeen him twice or thrice in the Priſon, diſtributing Charity among the Priſoners.

About

Digitized by Google

About this time the Dawn of Day began to appear, and he ſaw the Ferry-Man coming to his Boat. He told me that I had nothing to do but go to the Boat, and give the Man a Penny, that he would put me over without aſking any Queſtions. I aſſured him I had not a Penny to give him, upon which the poor Man gave me two Pence. I thank'd him, and taking my Leave, went to the Boat, and gave the Ferry-Man his Fare, who immediately put me over. I went to Mr. *Valee*'s Houſe full of Hope, but to my Grief and Loſs, the Family were gone abroad to ſpend the Holidays. However, I went to the Houſe, and the Servants received me kindly as well as hoſpitably. I told them my Hiſtory, and they furniſh'd me with ſeveral Neceſſaries, as Shoes, Stockings, *&c.* and afterwards made a ſmall pecuniary Collection.

I travelled the Remainder of the Day with infinite Fatigue, the Road bad, and the Accommodations worſe. At length I came to a lonely Cottage, where I lodg'd that Night. I aſked how far it was to *Cork*, and was ſurpriſed when they told me ſeven Miles; for I am ſure I had travelled four or five and twenty ſince I left that Place. The poor People indeed made me very welcome to ſuch coarſe Fare as they had, Potatoes and Butter-milk.

Early in the Morning I had my Breakfaſt, and the Man put me on the Road to *Mallow*, which was about ſix Miles, and but twelve from *Cork*. I then got on the *Dublin* high Road, and reſolved, happen what would, not to quit it till I got to my Journey's End. I lodged that Night at an Alehouſe in a little Village half way between *Mallow* and *Mitchelſtown*. I made Enquiry for Mr. *Johnſton*'s Houſe, who, as I ſaid before, was married to Captain *Barret*'s Siſter. They told me he lived four Miles off, directly on my Road, two Miles this Side of *Mitchelſtown*, and gave me a clear and

Digitized by Google

plain Deſcription of the Houſe. The next Day I went thither, but was told that Mr. *Johnſton* and his Wife were gone to a Chriſtning to Mr. *King*'s at *Mitchelſtown*. This Mr. *King* was Brother to Lord *Kingſton*. Thither I went, reſolving to ſee Mr. *Johnſton*. I enquired for him, he was call'd, and great was his Surpriſe at ſeeing me. He aſked me ſeveral Queſtions, upon which I told him my Story, which ſo moved him, that he went up and acquainted the Company therewith, who ſent for, and kindly received me: But my Joy was not without ſome Mixture of Apprehenſion on ſeeing Mr. *Remons*, a Proteſtant Gentleman, who had ſeen me in the Priſon ſome time before, to be one of the Company. I thought I ſhould be ſtopped, but it proved quite otherwiſe.

Here the Company made a Collection of about fifteen Shillings for me; and Mr. *Remons*, the Sight of whom had ſo much alarmed me, took me to his Houſe that Night, and entertained me there a Fortnight. This Gentleman treated me very kindly, gave me a Couple of Shirts, a Waiſtcoat and Breeches, which fitted me very well, he being about my own Size; with many other Neceſſaries, and a Crown-Piece beſides. He aſked me if I had ever ſeen Lord *Kingſton?* I told him I had, and his Lady and Children too at *St. Germains*, and had the Honour to be very well known by them. He told me they lived but a few Miles off, and not much out of my Way, and adviſed me to call there; which I promiſed to do, and ſo took my Leave of that worthy Gentleman.

I went the ſame Day to Lord *Kingſton*'s Seat, call'd *Bellafoureen*; which I reach'd about an Hour before Sun-ſet; and entering the Hall, there were two young Ladies, his Lordſhip's Daughters, diverting themſelves there: They knew me, and ran to my Lady, who was in the Parlour, ſaying, Mamma, here's

Digitized by Google

here's young *Drake*. Whether ſhe ſaw me or not, I can't tell, but there ſoon came to me a Servant out of Livery, (I ſuppoſe the Butler) who deſired me to follow him. He led me into the Yard, and out of the Gate: I was ſurpriſed at not being aſked into the Houſe of a Family to whom I was ſo well known. However I followed my Guide, who led me to a very neat Cabin, ſpoke to the Man of the Houſe, to whom he introduc'd me, and ſo left me. Here I was kindly entertained that Night; and next Morning, after Breakfaſt, the Gentleman of the Houſe accompanied me about a Quarter of a Mile, to ſhew me the right Road; and at parting put a Guinea into my Hand. I judged, tho' he ſaid nothing to me about it, that this was an Inſtance of Lady *Kingſton*'s Bounty; and was confirmed in my Opinion ſoon after by enquiring of ſome People I met, who lived in the Houſe; for ſhewing them the Place, they told me it was the Pariſh Prieſt that lived there.

CHAP. III.

AND now being pretty well cloath'd, and having ſome Money, I changed my Way of living, and from a Mumper at Cottages became a Gueſt at the beſt Inns. Thus I travelled to *Kilkenny*, without any thing worth Notice happening. I went from thence to one Mr. *Butler*'s at *Carrickin*, where I was kindly received: But for Reaſons beſt known to themſelves, it was not thought proper that I ſhould remain in the Houſe; ſo I was ſent to a very neat Cabbin, where I had good Accommodation. Here they made me ſtay four or five Days, ſending me Proviſion daily from the Houſe. There happened there at that time, one Colonel *Plunket*,

Digitized by Google

Plunket, who knew my Father and Family: He was a Relation, and came twice to visit me. The last Night I stay'd there Mr. *Butler* sent for me, and having supp'd with him, I took my Leave of that generous Gentleman; who judging of my Necessity, put into my Hand fifteen Shillings. I returned him my sincere Thanks, and went back to my Cabbin.

The next Day I went again to *Kilkenny*, and from thence set out on my Journey. I met with a Gypsey, accompanied by two young Girls: I heard her at a distance mutter some Words to herself, and when I approached her, she accosted me with these Words, *Young Man, you have of late been involv'd in many Difficulties, and e'er long you'll meet with many more.* The first Part of her Discourse was too true to make me doubt of the latter, and I would willingly have stopped to hear her, but she desired me to give her a piece of Silver before she would discover any more. I was at that time fonder of my Money than of the Knowledge of my Fate, and the Price which the Gypsey had set upon her Words put an End to my Curiosity. I proceeded on my Journey towards *Dublin* without meeting with any thing material, till I came to *Kildoughet*, where our Family lived before the Battle of the *Boyne*, and where I had then a Sister living. When I went to her House, I saw great Preparations making for the Reception of some Friends who had been invited. The Company were extremely joyous, and my Arrival, after ten Years Absence, added (as they were pleas'd to tell me) to their Pleasure, being personally known to most of them. Among the rest was Doctor *Price*, Parson of the Parish, and Father to the late Bishop of *Meath*, who died Arch-Bishop of *Cashel*.

This Gentleman who had been a little unkindly used by my Father before the Battle of the *Boyne*, took

Digitized by Google

took no Notice of me that Day, being unwilling to give the Company the leaſt Uneaſineſs; but the next, he came to my Siſter's, and deſiring to ſee me, I was called. He told me very civilly, tho' gravely, that he had no Reaſon to ſhew any Favour to my Father's Son; that he would not viſit my Father's Sins on me, but bid me not to let him ſee me any more, for if he did, he would commit me, which he might very well have done, as he was circumſtanced, for he was in the Commiſſion of the Peace. This Declaration, though not pleaſing to my Brother and Siſter, yet I could be no ways diſpleaſed at, knowing what he ſaid in relation to my Father was too true. I thought myſelf very well off that it was no worſe, took his Advice, and went for *Dublin* the next Day. I ſtaid there a few Days, then went to *Drogheda*, where I had many Relations on my Mother's ſide. Here I was kindly received, ſtaid a Month or longer, then went to the Barony of *Kells*, where my Anceſtors, for ſome hundreds of Years, were poſſeſt of a plentiful Fortune, until forfeited, in the Rebellion of Forty-one. I went to *Drakerath*, the ancient Manſion-houſe of our Family, and which my Father got Poſſeſſion of in King *James*'s Time. This Houſe and Demeſne were held in Leaſe by Mr. *Patrick Drake*, a Relation, from *Samuel Jackſon*, Eſquire, of whom I ſhall have occaſion to ſay ſomething preſently. Mr. *Drake* received me kindly; I ſtaid ſome Time at his Houſe, during which I viſited ſome Friends in that Part of the Country. In about three Weeks after I came there, Mr. *Drake* told me that he had a Letter from Mr. *Jackſon*, acquainting him that he would be down with him in a few Days, telling me, though Mr. *Jackſon* was a very worthy Gentleman, he did not know how he might reliſh my being there, and deſired me to go and ſpend a few

Digitized by Google

few Days at Sir *John Flemming*'s during his Stay; that he would take an Opportunity to ſpeak to him about me before he went away; and that as ſoon as he was gone, he would ſend for me, the two Houſes being but half a Mile diſtant. Mr. *Jackſon* came and ſtaid a few Days, during which I was at Sir *John*'s: As ſoon as he was gone, Mr. *Drake* ſent for me, who, as ſoon as I came, told me he had ſpoke to Mr. *Jackſon* about me, and that he ſeemed very deſirous to ſee me, aſſuring him he would do ſomething for me if I would come to him in *Dublin*, leaving a Direction where I might ſee him; and Mr. *Drake* preſſed me very hard, ſeeing me unwilling to go: At laſt I was prevailed on, and, he not knowing my Story, I reſolved on it; and in two or three Days took my Leave of Mr. *Drake*, and went to *Dublin*.

My Direction was to the two *Black Poſts* in *Fiſhamble-ſtreet*. I went the next Morning by ten o'Clock, and Mr. *Jackſon* received me very kindly. He aſked me what I had a mind to apply myſelf to, that he would put me to any Buſineſs I liked; I thanked him; he propoſed ſeveral, but could hit on none, my head being turned another Way. He propoſed putting me to a Merchant to go to the *Weſt Indies*, alledging, that by behaving myſelf prudently, I might one Day make a Fortune, as ſeveral others had done, aſſuring me at the ſame time, that he had no other View in what he propoſed than that of ſerving me; and as he was poſſeſt of an Eſtate, which he was informed had belonged to my Fore-fathers, and being unprovided for, he made me theſe Offers, and was ſorry they did not anſwer his Intention: I thanked him very kindly, telling him my Inclination ran more on a military Life than Buſineſs; that we ſeemed to be juſt at the Eve of a War, and that I was reſolved, with the Bleſſing of God, to try my Fortune

Digitized by Google

tune that Way. He told me, that in his Opinion it was the worſt Choice I could make; and putting a green Purſe with twenty Guineas into my Hand, wiſhed me Succeſs in my Undertaking, and deſired me to accept that Trifle as a Token of his good Wiſhes. I made a very low Bow, and thanked him, and ſo we parted. I went away without a particular Knowledge of the Contents of the Purſe; and repaired to a Public-houſe in order to an Examination. I no ſooner entered the Room, but I opened it, and was amazed to ſee myſelf Maſter of ſo much Gold, and vainly thought the Fund inexauſtible: But, alas! how much I was miſtaken ſhall be ſhewn in a ſhort Time. I went in a few Days to *Drakerath*, to thank Mr. *Drake*, and tell him of my good Succeſs. He ſpoke much in Mr. *Jackſon*'s Praiſe, not more indeed then he deſerved. I was now too rich to lead a ſolitary Country Life, ſo I haſtened to *Dublin*.

The firſt conſiderable Breach I made in my Treaſure, was to gain a Qualification that I thought both uſeful and neceſſary for the Life I intended to lead, *viz.* to learn to handle the ſmall Sword. Accordingly, I went to one Captain *Butler* who kept a School of that kind in *Cook-ſtreet*, who was then reputed the beſt Maſter of the Science in the City. I gave him a Guinea Entrance, and promiſed to pay him monthly, according to our Agreement. I went conſtantly twice a-day for three Months, and may juſtly ſay, I did not prove the worſt of his Scholars for that Time. The Captain himſelf having freely owned, that he got Credit by me, there being ſeveral Gentlemen of much longer ſtanding, who had not made half the Proficiency. The three Months being expired, and I thinking myſelf an able Swordſman, and the Money being above three Parts gone, I began to think

Digitized by Google

think of another Journey to the Country. I ſet out for *Drakerath*, and from thence to *Kilmainham*, to Captain *Barnwell*'s who was married to Lord *Trimbleſton*'s Siſter, who did me the Honour to own me as a Relation. The Captain and his three Brothers were very kind to me. Here I ſtayed ſome time, viſiting my Friends in this Part of the Country, and ſo concluded the Year 1700.

CHAP. IV.

EARLY in the next Year I paid them another Viſit, to take my Leave, intending to begin my Travels in the Spring. I then went to *Drogheda*, where I gave the finiſhing Stroak to my Money, one Guinea excepted. I expected in taking my Leave my Relations would have done ſomething conſiderable towards bearing my Charges, but was miſerably diſappointed, having received among them all but a ſingle Piece. However, I went to *Dublin* with this ſmall Sum, madly intending to take a Tour over the beſt Part of *Europe*, which I ſoon performed, as ſhall be ſeen hereafter.

From *Dublin* I wrote to my Siſter's Huſband, to let him and her know, that I ſoon intended to go abroad, and would be glad to ſee them before I went, which I thought would be towards the latter End of *April*; and that they ſhould hear of me at Mr. *Drake*'s in *Church-ſtreet*, where I lodged. He was a Combmaker by Profeſſion, and in good Circumſtance; a kind friendly Man, from whom I received many Civilities. While I ſtaid in *Dublin* I uſed to go often to Captain *Butler*'s to take a Breathing with ſome of his Scholars, and ſometimes with his Uſher, having the Captain's Leave to do ſo; by which Means I retained what I had learnt,

Digitized by Google

learnt, and made a farther Improvement. I was as frugal as poſſible of my Money, but muſt needs be at ſome Expence. My Brother and Siſter came to Town the beginning of *March*, and took their Leave of me, wiſhing me Succeſs; but, to my unſpeakable Surpriſe, gave me nothing. When they were gone, I began to reflect on my paſt Conduct, and to repent (though too late) that I did not go off before my Finances were ſo low. But looking back was a Folly, Ways and Means muſt be found, but how was the grand Queſtion: The Month of *April* at hand; the Weather very fine; I low in Pocket for a long Voyage, and yet anxious to be be gone. I often went to the Quays, ſometimes to *Rings-End*, in hopes to contrive ſome Method of Conveyance, even by working my Paſſage to *Holland*, which I would willingly have done, to ſave the little I had left for the other Shore, which did not amount to above ſeventeen or eighteen Shillings; and thinking myſelf quite forſaken by my good Fortune, I went to the Coffee-houſe, ſcarcely knowing what I was doing, or where I was going; I took one of the Papers of the Day, in which there was an Advertiſement ſetting forth; that any young able bodied Men, not leſs then five Feet nine Inches tall, who had a mind to inliſt in a Regiment immediately to be raiſed for the Service of the States of *Holland*, under the Command of Colonel *Bellcaſtel*, might repair to any of the ſeveral Places directed by the ſaid Advertiſement, ſhould enter into preſent Pay, at Six-pence *per* Day, and Quarters, and Four Guineas Advance in hand, giving Security they ſhould go on board when required. This Paper I pocketed, and ran overjoyed to Mr. *Drake*, telling him that Providence had put a favourable Opportunity in my way of ſailing for *Holland*, and ſhewed him the Advertiſement, which he

Digitized by Google

he read. I begged of him, as he knew my Intention of going abroad, he would be my Security; and if two were required, he would prevail on his Brother *Hewit* to join with him, which he promiſed me to do. I immediately went to a Captain, who was the Colonel's Brother; his Name was *La Mennerie*. I agreed with him; gave my Securities Names, and Places of abode: He ſent a Serjeant with me to inquire, who approved of them, and appointed ten o'Clock the next Day to come to the Captain's Lodgings, who lodged in *George*'s *Lane*. My Security gave ſuch a Note as the Captain required, *viz.* to ſee me ſafe on board, or to pay any Damage he ſhould ſuffer by my failing ſo to do. I received my four Guineas, entered into preſent Pay, had Quarters aſſigned me, and ſo we parted. This was on the 28th of *March* 1701. I continued in *Dublin* all the Month of *April*, enjoying myſelf with my Friends and acquaintance, often viſiting my Officers, who began to grow pretty fond of me. Towards the latter End of *April* we received Orders to be ready at a Day's Warning to go on board. This News was very welcome to me, for I longed to be gone. At laſt, we received on the 28th, our final Orders to go on board.

On *May* Day I acquainted my Friends with it, deſiring them not to be out of the Way, and to ſee me on board, to take up their Note, which they both promiſed. Early on *May* Day I came to Mr. *Drake*'s, where I found his Brother. After Breakfaſt we took Coach, and went to *Rings-End* to the Place of Rendezvous appointed by the Officers, who came ſoon after. There we dined, and, as ſoon as the Tide ſerved, we went to the Water-ſide, where there were Boats ready to receive us. My Friends delivered me to my Captain, who gave them up their Note; ſo, taking my Leave,

we

Digitized by Google

we parted, and ſailed to the Ship, which lay at Anchor in the Bay. We ſtaid there a Fortnight, occaſioned by ſuch Delays as generally attend the Tranſportation of Troops, and made ourſelves as merry as our Circumſtances would admit: There was a *French* Serjeant on board, together with his Wife, who had a Barrel of Ale, and ſome Spirits to ſell, which had like to have been the Occaſion of a great deal of Miſchief. Among the Recruits we had two Prize-fighters, who, getting drunk, fell to quarrelling; the Company declaring, each for the one whoſe Cauſe he eſpouſed; an Uproar enſued, and ſeveral Strokes were exchanged. The Officers, however, by menacing and ſoothing, as occaſion required, produced a Calm in their Minds, and getting them under Deck ſhut down the Hatches. This had like to be followed by very ill Conſequences; for, in leſs than a Minute the Candles were extinguiſhed for want of Air, and the Men were well nigh ſtifled. This occaſioned a general Outcry: At length, the Hatches were opened, and indeed very critically, for a Minute's Confinement longer would have terminated in our Deſtruction. Upon this, ſome were for going on Deck, in order to cool themſelves, but were prevented by the Ladder's being taken away by the Officers Orders, to prevent any going on Deck but *Frenchmen*. There was one *Blunt*, an *Engliſhman*, a Drum-Major to the Regiment, who was very tall; I deſired him to let me mount on his Shoulders, in order to enable me to reach the Hatch with my Hands, and, by that means, ſpring up: This was approved of, and immediately put in Execution. I put my Sword on, and ſo mounted. There was a *French* Centry, who ſeeing me attempt the Hatches, challenged in *Engliſh*, but I anſwered him in *French*; ſo hearing me ſpeak that Language, he called one of his

Digitized by Google

Companions, and both courteouſly helped me up. As ſoon as I got on Deck, I drew my Sword, and made ſeveral Paſſes at them, ſwearing I would die or have the Ladders put down, and let all come up that pleaſed; ſo I took a Ladder that was juſt at my Feet, and put it down; then the Officers ordered the other Ladders down, and the People came on Deck.

That Night there was an Account of the Affair ſent to *Dublin*, and the next Day by Eleven o'Clock all the Officers came on board. There was a very cloſe Inquiry made to find out the Ring-Leaders; and the two Prize-fighters, who began the Fray, were ordered on ſhore. Then was I called, and I told them (as was the Caſe) that I was no ways concerned in the Quarrel; that what I did in putting down the Ladder, was to let my Countrymen up to breathe wholeſome Air, which was abſolutely neceſſary. To this it was anſwered, that I was a Mutineer, and was ordered to give back the four Guineas I had received, and go about my Buſineſs. I told them, that I inliſted to ſerve, was willing ſo to do, and by that means earn the Money I had received; but that I neither could nor would return any. This poſitive Anſwer (after ſome Conſultation) determined them to ſend me on ſhore, which, however, did not pleaſe me, and I was ordered to the Boat, where the Prize-fighters were. As ſoon as I got into the Boat, I took off my Hat, and bowed, wiſhing my Countrymen a good Voyage; but, behold! in an Inſtant, they all declared, if I was ſent aſhore they would immediately follow. The Officers dreading the Conſequence, ordered me to come up again, which I refuſed. There was then an Officer ſent into the Boat to intreat me, promiſing me more then ever he intended to perform, and at laſt prevailed; for I went back to the great Joy of my Countrymen.

Every

Digitized by Google

Every Thing being ſettled, the great Officers returned to *Dublin*, not without giving me fair Words and Promiſes, praying me to uſe my beſt Endeavours to keep the Men quiet, aſſuring me I ſhould be no Loſer by it; which I promiſed to do, and was as good as my Word; for every thing was quiet while we remained in the Bay. The Officers were indeed very kind to me, and often aſked me to dinner with them in the Cabbin. At laſt our ſailing Orders came, and the Wind proving fair, we ſet ſail on the 18th, and I never once ſaw my native Country for thirty-ſeven Years after. We were eight Days in our Paſſage, and caſt Anchor before *Williamſtat* on the 26th in the Evening. The next Day we were all put into Bilanders, or ſmall Veſſels, and ſailed to *Gorcum*, the Place deſigned for our Quarters, till the Regiment was compleated and clothed.

Here we landed the next Day: It is a pleaſant and well-ſituated Town. The firſt Week I diverted myſelf in the diſciplining of my Company, as they called themſelves. It was compoſed of thirty-ſix young Fellows, who all profeſt a great Eſteem for me, and complimented me with the Title of Captain. The Officers took Umbrage at this, and forbid it. Then to divert ourſelves, we walked out of the Gates, and viſited the pleaſant Villages along the River. One Day as I was on my Walk, paſſing by a Baker's, and ſeeing a great deal of Bread, I took up one of the Loaves, and aſking him the Price, was ſurpriſed when he anſwered me Six-pence, for it was as much as I could buy in Town for a Shilling. I informed my Companions when I went home, and we had Thoughts of buying our Bread there, but were told it was againſt the Law; and that there were Officers at all the Gates to prevent the Inhabitants, or others, from bringing in any, on Pain of forfeiting the Bread,

Digitized by Google

and ſome other Penalty; ſo we dropped it for that Time. Two or three Days after, one *Johnſton*, who was my Comrade, and I being at Dinner, one of the Men came and told us, that *Murray*, a Companion of ours, coming in at the Gate with a Loaf, was ſtopped by the Officer, his Loaf taken from him, and himſelf put Priſoner on the Guard. We left our Dinner, ran to the Gate, and coming to the Priſoner, aſked how he came there? He told us, and ſhewed me the Officer. I went to him, and civilly requeſted him to reſtore the Bread. He refuſing it moroſely, I took him in my Arms, and held him over the Town Ditch, ſwearing, if he did not reſtore it, I would fling him in, which I would certainly have done, knowing that the *Dutch* generally can ſwim; he aſſured me he would, and was as good as his Word. As ſoon as the Man got the Bread, I deſired him to go home; but a Trooper, who was Centry, made ſome Oppoſition, and I tripped up his Heels, while *Johnſton* puſhed the Priſoner out; ſo we went back to our Dinner. As ſoon as we had dined, we went about, and gathered to the Number of thirty of our Companions, deſiring them to provide Cudgels, and meet at the Village of *Dalem*, which they did: I then deſired them to make ſharp Points to their Sticks; and getting all the Money they could make up, we bought thirty Six-penny Loaves, and gave one to each Man, bidding them to put them on their Sticks. This being done, and every thing ready, I gave the Word of Command to ſhoulder and march, putting myſelf at their Head, and ſo led them into the Town, amidſt the Acclamations and Prayers of the lower ſort of People, who are generally fond of ſuch Scenes.

That Night, Orders were given to the Regiment to be on the Parade at Ten o'Clock the next Day, which was done; but as they had not

Digitized by Google

not Clothes, Arms, nor the Articles of War read to them, this Indiſcretion had not the bad Conſequence it juſtly deſerved. The Magiſtrates came about Eleven, with our chief Officers, going through the Ranks, and telling us the Puniſhment we were intitled to, and exhorting us to a better Behaviour for the future. They told me in particular, that I deſerved to be moſt ſeverely treated, as the Ring-leader; that they muſt ſend an Account of our Proceedings to the States General, but that they would do all in their Power, in order to our Pardon. The Officers adviſed me to have particular Regard to my own Conduct, as well as that of my Comrades; for they perceived I had an Influence; and that as ſoon as the Colonel ſhould arrive, they would endeavour to get me an Halbert.

CHAP. V.

THAT very Night, Orders were given that no Man ſhould be out of his Quarters after Tatoe. Sometime after, as it was beating, and my Comrade *Johnſton* and I were going home, we met on the Market-place the Major, and two other Officers, who coming up to us, aſked how we happened abroad ſo late? I anſwered, we were going home, and that the Drums had not yet done beating. They ſaid it was true, but that this was a favourable Opportunity of doing ſomething to deter my Countrymen from being out late, and to let them ſee they muſt expect no Favour, when we, who were ſo much regarded, were put to Priſon for a Breach of Orders, aſſuring us, however, we ſhould be no Sufferers by a Night's Impriſonment; and that we ſhould not only be well treated, but ſet at Liberty the next Day; the Major telling us,

Digitized by Google

he would go along with us himſelf, and give the Gaoler Directions to that Purpoſe.

At the Priſon Door we delivered our Swords: When we were lodged in Gaol, and the Officers gone, we were ſhewed to different Cells, or Dungeons, where I found ſome clean Straw, and was complimented with a Chain, though not of Gold, fixed to my right Leg and left Arm, the Gaoler telling me, that this was the firſt Reward of my Mutiny, and that I might expect more. I ſuppoſe my Comrade was uſed in the ſame Manner; for I ſaw him no more until I came to *London* ſome Months after: Here I remained about ſeven Weeks in this Condition, no-body being permitted to ſee me.

I was at length called from my Cell by the Gaoler, who told me I was ſent for, and led me down to the Major, who informed me, with a grave Air, that now I was about to receive my juſt Reward: I told him unconcerned, that I was willing and ready to undergo any Puniſhment, rather than remain in the Condition I had been in theſe ſix or ſeven Weeks paſt. My Chains were taken off, I was led out of the Priſon Door, and delivered to the Care of a Serjeant, and eight Men, with their Bayonets fixed, the Major ordering the Serjeant to do his Duty. This by no means affrighted me, not having been tried, and I fancied I was going to take my Tryal before a Court-Martial; but, to my great Surprize, was led out of the Town Gate, with poſitive Orders, on pain of Death, not to return to the Town again. I had the River before me, and could not turn to the Right or Left for Water. In this Situation did I remain for above two Hours: At laſt, there paſſed by a Boat, which I hailed; the Waterman came, and for two *Dutch* Schillings (Eleven Pence) ſet me on the oppoſite Shore. I had no other Road to go,

Digitized by Google

go, but to a Town called *Worcum*, which was about a League diſtant, where there was an *Engliſh* Regiment in Garriſon. I was brought before the Commanding Officer, who, examining me, I freely told him the Uſage I had received, and that my Deſign was for *England*. He had heard, he ſaid, of me; that I was the Ring-leader of the Mutiny at *Gorcum*; that where-ever my Deſign was, I ſhould not go through that Town, and ordered me to be put out of the Water-gate, to ſhift for myſelf. There was I left, and in the ſame Condition that I was left at the Gate of *Gorcum*, until I got another Boat, at the Expence of a Guilder, to put me back to the ſame ſhore I came from. As ſoon as I landed, I went to a Public-houſe I uſed to frequent in my Walks about the Village of *Dalem*, where I had bought the thirty Loaves before-mentioned: The Landlord was glad to ſee me, and made much of me. I ſtaid all Night; he told me he was going to Town, adding, if I had any Meſſage to ſend, he would faithfully deliver it; and that he was ſure I had many Friends there. I ſaid, I wiſhed them very well, but had no Meſſage to ſend I thought worth troubling him with, except my Compliments to ſuch of them as he ſhould happen to ſee. About ten o'Clock he returned with one of the Burghers of the Town in Company: He had his Hat in his Hand, as if there was ſomething in it; he ſtretched it to me, telling me there was a Trifle he had collected among ſome of my Well-wiſhers; and that if he had Time, he would have collected a good deal more. It was about Fifteen Guilders, no ſmall Sum as Things ſtood. He told me alſo, that that Gentleman, pointing to the Burgher, had joined him in making the Collection: I returned them both my hearty Thanks, and we ſat taking a Glaſs, and talking, until about twelve. I told my Company I intended for *England*, and

Digitized by Google

enquired my beſt Way to *Rotterdam*. The Landlord ſaid, he would adviſe me to go by Land; that the Stage Waggon for that Town was to paſs by his Door at ten o'Clock the next Morning; and if not full (which ſeldom happened) I might have a Place for two Guilders. The next Day, as ſoon as that Carriage arrived, my Landlord told the Waggoner he had a Paſſenger for him if there was a Vacancy: He told him there was, for he had but two Paſſengers. I took a Place, bid my Friends farewell, and ſo ſet out for *Rotterdam*.

That Night I lay at the Inn where the Stage put up, and next Morning went to the Quay to inquire for a Ship bound for *London*, and, as I was going along, an old Beggarman approached and accoſted me by Name, telling me, that he had been enquiring ſeveral Days for me, to inform me my Comrade *Johnſton* was gone to *London*, and deſired I would, without Delay, go to him; that Mr. *Johnſton* gave him a Schilling to deliver the Meſſage, which he had faithfully done. I was glad to hear of my Friend, and gave the poor Man another. I ſoon heard of a Ship, and, in a very ſhort Time, reached *London*.

CHAP. VI.

JOHNSTON had alſo left with this Man his Direction, ſo I found him in a few Days after my Arrival, and he ſeemed over-joyed at ſeeing me. I ſpent the beſt Part of the Evening with him, talking of our paſt Adventures. We dined together the next Day, but I never ſaw him more; though at parting he deſired to ſee me often: I went ſeveral times to his Lodging, but could never meet with him; and, as there was no Meſſage left

Digitized by Google

left with the Servant, I concluded I was not welcome, and ſo went no more.

Now was I without Friend, or Acquaintance, low in Pocket, and at a Loſs what to do. After ſauntering about the Streets for two or three Days, I took a Walk to the Cuſtom-houſe Quay, where I was accoſted by a Man, who aſked me if I would work? I demanded of him at what? he told me, ſmiling, it was only to walk; I anſwered, that I could walk very well: Then come along with me, ſaid he. I went, and he led me to a Ware-houſe, where they were drawing up Hogſheads of Sugar by a Crane, where were two Men in a large Wheel. I was deſired to go in and walk with theſe Men (for it was really but walking) and that I ſhould be paid. I conſented, and walked there for about four Hours, had a Shilling given me for what I had done, and was aſked to return the following Day, which I agreed to, and for about a Week, I earned to the Amount of eighteen or twenty Pence *per Diem*; ſo that I thought there was no Danger of Want. This happened about the latter End of *Auguſt*; and I took a Turn to *Bartholomew* Fair among the Croud, where I ſaw a Number of Men kneeling in a Circle. I had the Curioſity to ſee what they were about, and found them engaged at Hazard; I having ſome Pence, kneeled down in like manner to make one in the Diverſion, and try my Fortune. There was a Man among them who ſeemed better dreſſed than the reſt; he was an *Iriſhman*, and often looked earneſtly at me, as if he thought he knew me, and ſeemed to have a mind to ſpeak. I judged he had ſome Deſign on me, for I had been pretty fortunate, and won to the Amount of fourteen or fifteen Shillings. This Man clapped me on the Shoulder, with a how do you, Countryman? I gave him my Hat, and, with

Digitized by Google

with great Coolneſs, told him I was an *Iriſhman*. I thought ſo, ſaid he, by your Clothes (for I had a Ratteen Coat that I brought from *Dublin*) He invited me to take part of a Pot of Beer, which I accepted of, being willing to ſee what he would be at.

Our Converſation turned on *Ireland*, as, how long ſince I left it? how long I had been in *London?* and what I followed? I told him I lately left *Ireland*; that I had been about ten Days in *London*; that I was informed it was the beſt Place in the World for a young Man to try his Fortune; at which he ſmiled: I then added, that I was in no Buſineſs, and that I had ſome Thought of returning home. He adviſed me not to think of that, and that there was little or no good to be expected there, or here; but if I had a mind, and was reſolved to travel farther, he was ſure he could ſerve me, and recommended *Holland* as the beſt Place for a young Man to puſh his Fortune, being at the ſame time laviſh in praiſe of that Country, and People: He then aſſured me, if I would go, he would recommend me to a worthy Gentleman who intended going thither in two or three Months; and who he was ſure would be very kind to me on his Recommendation.

I enquired of him, what I was to do? he ſaid, to ſerve in the Army; and that as I was a clever young Fellow (as he was pleaſed to tell me) I could not fail of Promotion. I thanked him, and giving him to underſtand I would go with him, he expreſſed himſelf glad of it, for my own ſake, and that he would ſerve me, for he was Paymaſter to the Company as well as Serjeant. So he took me from *Smithfield* to *New-ſtreet*, *Covent-Garden*, left me at a Publick-houſe for a Quarter of an Hour, and came back with the Captain, a *Frenchman*,

Digitized by Google

man, who enquired of me, if I had a mind to liſt? To which I anſwered in the affirmative. He then aſked me on what Terms I was willing to entertain? To this I pleaded Ignorance, aſking my Countryman in *Iriſh*, what it meant? who anſwered me in the ſame Language, that it was Money I ſhould now receive, perhaps a Guinea or two. I deſired him to get me as much as he could, and that I would give him half; for I concluded that this would put him on pleading the Cauſe to my Advantage: Nor was I miſtaken. The Captain enquired in *French* what I ſaid, for my Countryman had a little ſmattering of that Language. He was anſwered, that I aſked five Guineas; at which he ſhrugged his Shoulders, bidding him to offer me a Couple; and if I took it, he ſhould have a Pair of Gloves over and above what he uſed to give him for every Man he got. I aſked him what the Captain ſaid, he anſwered me again in *Iriſh*, with an Oath, that I ſhould ſoon be made a Serjeant, if I behaved myſelf well. At this I could hardly forbear ſmiling. He repreſented to the Captain, that I was a comely perſonable Fellow, and that any of the recruiting Officers would be glad to have me, and give the King's whole Bounty-money, which was four Guineas. At laſt, the Bargain was ſtruck; I was to have the Sum mentioned, and Eightpence *per* Day, beſides Quarters, until we had embarked.

The honeſt Captain pulled out his Purſe to pay me the Money, but I told him I would not have it until we were ready to go off, for I ſhould only ſpend it, and that a Day or two before we went on board, I would lay it out in ſome Neceſſaries I wanted. This my Declaration pleaſed him, and he gave me a Crown to drink his Health; ſo ordered the Serjeant to go and provide Quarters, and to take Care of me. As ſoon as we left the Captain,

Digitized by Google

Captain, we went to a Publick-houſe to drink his Health, and my pretended Serjeant was very much out of Humour, aſking me in a very angry Tone, why I did not receive the Money? I told him I did it for the beſt: But you know, ſaid he, that I was to have had half: And ſo you ſhall, anſwered I, when I receive it. We drank our Beer, he came to ſhew me my Quarters, and I never ſaw him more. This Man's Name was *Thomas Fling*, as I was told, was a Soldier in the Foot-guards, and imployed by ſeveral Recruiting Officers, both from *Flanders* and *Holland*, and had a Guinea for every Man he got.

CHAP. VII.

AFTER I parted from him, paſſing along *Fleet-ſtreet*, a Man imployed to diſtribute Bills, put a printed one in my Hand, ſetting forth, that any Perſon who had a mind to *Liſt* for the *Weſt-Indies*, ſhould have all neceſſaries for the Voyage provided; and, for a further Encouragement, ſhould receive five Pounds on going on board, and immediately be ſupplied with proper Accommodation, at the *Black Bull* on *Fiſh-ſtreet Hill*, near the *Monument*, where all that were willing were deſired to repair: I looked on this as a lucky Affair, and the next Day went and entered: I was well received, and had a good Lodging, as well as other Neceſſaries.

There was at that Time a Regiment in the *Tower*, commanded by General *Steward*. I became acquainted with one of the Serjeants, who knowing that I had entered myſelf for the *Weſt-Indies*, endeavoured to diſſuade me from going thither, which, by the by, I never intended: I aſked what he would have me do; he ſaid any thing but go

Digitized by Google

go there; for that it was a very unwholeſome Climate, and bid me inliſt with him; that the Captain, in whoſe Company he ſerved, was a very worthy Gentleman, and I ſhould have a Couple of Guineas. I told him I would freely do it, on condition he would give me his Aſſiſtance and Advice, how to manage with the People on *Fiſh-ſtreet Hill*. He told me he would do me all the Service he could, but did not know how to adviſe me. I alledged, that as he was a Serjeant to the Company, he might diſpenſe with my not lying in the *Tower* Barracks, and by that Means I might go daily to the *Black Bull*, eat, drink and ſleep, and ſo ſave my Pay until they ſailed for the *Weſt Indies*. This he approved of, and granted my Requeſt. He took me to his Captain, whoſe Name was *Cary*, and we made a Bargain. I received two Guineas, entered into preſent Pay, and thought my ſelf happy.

I ſpent moſt of my Time with my *Weſt-India* Brethren, and made myſelf acquainted with thoſe I thought had the moſt Influence, and uſed ſometimes to get merry with them, often pretending Impatience to be gone, and inquiring what Venture I had beſt lay out my five Pounds in. By theſe means they made no doubt of their being ſure of me; and I viſited the *Tower* every Day to ſhew myſelf. Thus I paſt my Time for about eight Weeks: At laſt the joyful News came, and Orders were ſent to go on board the next Day. I leaped for Joy, ſupped with my Companions, and went cooly to Bed at the *Tower*, firſt taking a Bottle with my Serjeant; and thus ended my *Weſt India* Voyage.

About three Weeks before this, there was a ſtrong Report of the Regiment's being ordered for the *Weſt Indies*, which was no way pleaſing to the Serjeant; but it gave me no Concern, I never intending to ſee that Part of the World, if I could avoid

Digitized by Google

avoid it at any Rate. I then intended to go in queſt of my *French* Captain, if he was not already gone: And accordingly went the next Day to the Publick-houſe, where I had inliſted with him, to know if they could inform me where I might find Captain *La Coot* (that was his Name). They bid me go to the *French* Coffee-houſe in *Cecil-Court* hard by, and that there I might hear of him. Thither I repaired, and found my Chap: I made him a low Bow, and he ſeemed not to know me, demanding of me whom I wanted? I told him he was the Perſon, and deſired to ſpeak a Word with him. He took me to a little Side-Room, where I informed him, I had liſted with him ſome Weeks before; that I had fallen ſick, and did not know how, or where to ſend to him; that I was afraid he was gone, and was very glad to find him. He told me I was an honeſt young Man, took me to his Lodgings, gave me a Shilling, and ordered his Man to let me ſleep with him, telling me that we ſhould go on board the next Morning. This gave me a ſincere Pleaſure, for I longed to be once more on the Continent. We roſe early, and a Coach was called, the Captain's Trunks, *&c.* put in, and driven to *Billings-gate*, where we waited his Arrival. He came about ten o'Clock, and hired a Boat to carry us to the Ship, which lay below *Graves-End*. He bid me go into the Boat; I demanded my four Guineas, which he immediately gave me. Then I deſired him to give me my Pay, at the Rate of Eight-pence *per* Day, ſince I inliſted, which I had carefully kept an account of, and amounted to fifty-five Days; he ſeemed diſpleaſed at this, but finding the Porters and Watermen take my Part, he paid me, and I went into the Boat very chearfully, tho' I muſt confeſs I had a damp on my Spirits, for I was to paſs cloſe by the *Tower* Wharff, were there was a Poſt

Digitized by Google

Poſt called the Spur Guard, and I was afraid I ſhould be ſeen by ſome of the Soldiers: To prevent which, I feigned myſelf ſick, and fell on my Face, remaining ſo until we got to St. *Catherines*, then ſaid I was better, and my Captain gave me a Dram. The Servant was a *Fleming*; but ſpoke a little *French*, and the Captain, as we ſailed along, aſked him the Names of ſome Towns, in that Language, and ſome he could not tell, I informed him of. He aſked me, if I could ſpeak *French?* I anſwered, I could. He enquired where I had learned it? I told him in *France*. He deſired to know, why I did not ſpeak it when he inliſted me? I ſaid, becauſe he ſpoke *Engliſh* to me, and I thought it proper to anſwer him in the ſame Language. We converſed in *French* until we got to the Ship; and he promiſed to be very kind to me, which he really performed.

The next Day I got Permiſſion to go on ſhore to *Graveſend* to buy ſome Things I wanted; and I went in Company with Mr. *Broderick*, a Cadet, who was Nephew to the then Lord Chancellor of *Ireland*. As ſoon as we had made our Market, we went to a Publick-houſe to dinner, and had not been long there, when two Men came in, neither of whom we knew: One of them had a Serjeant's Coat on, the other in coloured Clothes: The latter, in a commanding Strain, ordered me to go on board immediately: I told him, I had Leave for the Day, and that my Hour was not yet come; aſking him by what Authority he laid his Commands? he ſaid, he would let me know, offering at the ſame time to collar me; upon which I puſhed him off: He then drew his Sword, and raiſed his Arm in order to ſtrike me; but I run in on him, ſeized his Sword, and, in the Struggle, bent his Arm and Sword over his Shoulder, and wounded his Companion, who was behind him.

At

Digitized by Google

At this Time, one of the Officers coming in, ended the Scuffle, and ſent for a Surgeon to dreſs the Wound, ordering the other (who really was my Serjeant, though I did not know it) to let it paſs, and that I ſhould be puniſhed on board, according to the military Rules, for diſobeying Orders: Towards Evening we went on board, and the next Day there was a cloſe Examination, and Mr. *Broderick* declaring how the Affair began and ended, the Serjeant was reprimanded, and I acquitted; but, from that Moment, he commenced my moſt inveterate Enemy, doing me every ill Office in his Power, and was, in fact, the Occaſion of my quitting the Regiment ſooner than I intended.

In a few Days the Wind being fair, we ſailed for *Holland*, and ſoon caſt Anchor at *Helvoetſluys*. When we arrived there all the Recruits were put on board of Bilanders to go to their reſpective Garriſons, and join their Regiments. Ours lay at *Gertrudenberg*, and had been commanded by the Marquis of *Pezza*, who in coming from *Ireland* to join his Regiment, was loſt at Sea: Upon which we became General *Seymour*'s, and ſoon after the Lord *Marlborough*'s; ſo that in leſs than five Months, we had three Colonels.

Gertrudenberg is a ſmall, but ſtrong Town within three Leagues of *Breda*. Here I ſpent the Winter as Gentlemen of that Profeſſion generally do, with ſlender Diet, and hard Duty, learning among the Girls to ſpeak *Dutch*, in which I made a pretty good Progreſs. There was likewiſe a Fencing-ſchool I often frequented, where I became acquainted with one *Butler*, who was a Quarter-maſter in a Regiment of *Dutch* Horſe. One Day we had a Diſpute about a Thruſt I made, the Button of my Foil tearing his Coat a little: He ſeemed to reſent it, aſking me if I thought I could puſh ſo well

Digitized by Google

well with the Point? I told him I could not tell unleſs I tried: He replied ſharply, that he would try me the firſt Opportunity. I obſerved to him, that he ſeemed to be angry at what was not intended to injure him; but if that did not give him Satisfaction, he muſt pleaſe himſelf; that I would neither ſeek nor avoid him.

The next Day we met accidentally in the Street, and he aſked me, if I would take a Walk on the Rampart? I anſwered in the affirmative. In ſhort, we went, fought and wounded each other; I ran him in the Sword Arm, and he ran me through the left Breaſt, and ſo we parted, to take care of ourſelves. This happened about the latter End of *February*, and all the Forces had Orders to be ready to march out of their reſpective Garriſons the tenth of *March*, and proceed directly to *Rozendall*, where the Army was to aſſemble. At the Time appointed they ſet forward, leaving ſeveral ſick and diſabled Men behind, and I was of the Number. At the Beginning of *April*, being able to walk about, I was one Day informed, that General *Steward*'s Regiment, which I had left in the *Tower*, and which I thought had been gone to the *Weſt Indies*, was come to *Breda*, which not a little diſconcerted me.

About the Middle of this Month, there was ſent an Officer, who had Orders to conduct all thoſe who were able to the Army, and I being one of them, was ordered to get ready the next Day. Accordingly, by ten o'Clock in the Morning, we marched out, to the Number of Ninety, compoſed of Part of the Regiments that wintered here, and about three in the Afternoon we came to the Gates of *Breda*. I was now torturing my Invention to prevent being diſcovered by any of *Steward*'s People, but all to no purpoſe; for at the Gate at which we entered, was the very Serjeant with whom I had inliſted, who inſtantly

Digitized by Google

ſeized me, and acquainting the Officer who led us, that I was a Deſerter, I was ſent directly Priſoner to the Main Guard.

Here I remained four or five Days, until Report was made to General *Ingoldſby*, who then commanded the *Engliſh* Army, the Lord *Marlborough* being not yet arrived. On the fifth Day of my Confinement, there came a Serjeant, with eight Grenadiers from the Army, who guarded me Handcuffed to the General's Quarters: He queſtioning me about the Cauſe of my Deſertion, I anſwered, that I could ſay nothing in my Defence, that I ſuppoſed would avail me; it was only an Averſion to the *Weſt Indies*, whither it was reported the Regiment was to go: That I thought, as we were at the Eve of a War with *France*, my Endeavours to ſerve my Country might be as uſeful on the Continent as in that Hemiſphere. The General obſerved to me very civilly, that I had forfeited my Life by deſerting, but ſhould be pardoned this Time, kindly putting it to my Choice which of the Regiments to ſerve in. I returned Thanks, and told him, that ſince he was ſo good to indulge me ſo far, I would chuſe to ſerve in Lord *Marlborough*'s. Colonel *Tatton* was then Lieutenant-Colonel to our Regiment, who kindly aſked me, applying his Hand to his Breaſt, how I fared of my Wound? ſaying at the ſame Time ſomething in my Praiſe to the General, who immediately ordered my Hand-cuffs to be taken off, and myſelf to be ſet at Liberty, warning me to take care for the future.

At this time Pikes were in uſe, a very unweildy Weapon for War: The talleſt Men were choſe for the Purpoſe, and my Size made me a Pikeman ſore againſt my Will, though indeed I liked that Exerciſe, and thought it the moſt becoming and manly of all. There was an Encouragement

(to

Digitized by Google

(to induce a briſk and ſmart Motion in charging) of half a Crown to every one that ſhould break a Pike in that Motion, and I had the good Fortune to break two before I left the Regiment, which happened ſoon after as ſhall ſoon be related. For the Serjeant, by conſtant ill Treatment (though often reprimanded) inſpired me with a Notion of going to the other Side, in hopes of bettering my Condition. In order to this, I agreed with four Men of other Regiments, and my Captain's Man, the *Flemming*, before ſpoken of. We appointed a Time and Place to meet at, and go off, but reſolved to defer it till the Night before the Army was to march, as being the propereſt Time to put our Deſign in Execution.

In a few Days Orders were given out to have every thing in readineſs, and about Sun-ſet I went to my Tent, put on a Shirt over that I had on, and ſo went to the Rendezvous, where I met my Companions: We went to take a Glaſs together at a Sutler's, and about eight o'Clock (the Night being pretty dark) we ſet forward, and got ſafe by ten the next Morning within the *Brabant* Lines, near *Antwerp*, where lay a *French* Army, commanded by Monſieur *D'Arthaniac*. We were carried before that General, who examined us very ſtrictly: But when I told him the confederate Army had marched that Morning, he ſhook his Head, ſaying, that I endeavoured to impoſe on him, and ſo ordered us all Priſoners to the Guard.

Soon after he was confirmed of the Truth of what I told him by other Deſerters who came, as well by Intelligence from his own People; ſo we were diſcharged, got Paſſports, and went to *Antwerp* that Night. Here we ſtaid two Days to refreſh ourſelves, and ſo came to *Bruſſels*.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. VIII.

WHEN we were within about a League of the Town, on the Canal Side, we were beckoned to by a Gentleman in his Coach. As ſoon as I came near, I obſerved a Coronet over the Arms, by which I judged him a Nobleman. He proved to be the Lord *Aileſbury*, an *Engliſh* Roman Catholick, who then reſided at *Bruſſels*. He aſked us ſeveral Queſtions, which we anſwered to his Satisfaction, and he gave us a Guinea, wiſhing us Succeſs. We went to *Bruſſels* the next Day, where I deſired my Companions to tell me what they intended to do? They ſaid they would be ruled by me: I anſwered them I would uſe my Endeavours for them as for myſelf.

That very Day I was informed there was a Regiment to be raiſed for the Count *de Grimberg*, who was Son to the Prince of *Berg* then Governor of *Bruſſels*; that it was to be raiſed by the Pariſhes in the Country, and the City Diſtrict, where the young Men were to draw Lots: That there were ſeveral Magiſtrates of the Villages, in Town, looking for Men, and that they would give a round Sum advance; I immediately made Enquiry, and was directed to one of them. He ſpoke good *French*, in which Language, I told him, that being informed he wanted Men, I came to wait on, and acquaint him, that there were five more beſides myſelf, who were willing to enter. He told me he would acquaint his Brethren, and if they approved of it, he did not doubt but we ſhould make a Bargain, deſiring at the ſame Time to know where I lodged, and that without fail he would inform me the next Morning by ten o'Clock; and he directed that we ſhould all be in the Way, in order to be ſeen, which I promiſed.

Accordingly,

Digitized by Google

Accordingly, the next Morning at the Time appointed, there came to the Number of Five of thoſe Country Magiſtrates, who liked us extremely, telling each other, that if the Prince approved of it, they would have us at any rate. Theſe Words were ſpoke in *Flemiſh*, which I underſtood, and was pleaſed to hear; for they made me inſiſt on higher Terms then I could have expected. They aſked me to go with the Men before the Prince: I deſired to know on what Conditions, if he liked us? The Gentleman I firſt applied to, told me, that in ſuch Caſe, we ſhould have an handſome Advance; and that it was no great Trouble to go to the Prince, to which we conſented. Coming to the Palace, we were conducted into a Hall adjoining the Apartment in which his Highneſs was at dinner, where, after waiting ſome Time, there came forth three Gentlemen, one uſhering a beautiful Lady who had the Curioſity to ſee us. She viewed us earneſtly, and paſſed three times round, beſtowing large Encomiums on us. The laſt time, as ſhe walked behind, her Uſher aſked, which of us ſhe would chuſe for her Soldier? She did me the Honour to clap her Hand on my Shoulder, ſaying, ſhe would chuſe me: On which I turned about, made a low Bow, and told her, if I were commanded by ſuch a Leader, I would follow and fight to the laſt Drop of my Blood. She ran to her Father (for ſhe was the Prince's Daughter) in a ſeeming Surpriſe, telling him that one of the *Engliſhmen* ſpoke as good *French* as ſhe did. Soon after the Prince came out, and after obſerving us narrowly, ſaid to the Magiſtrates we were fine Men; that he liked us much better than the Countrymen, but deſired them to conſider, that a few Days ago we had been in the Confederate Army, and probably would return thither on the firſt Offer of Pardon, or perhaps repair to our native Country;

Digitized by Google

but that if they, [the Magiſtrates,] would run the Hazard, he would reſt ſatisfied. To this I anſwered his Highneſs, that we were Roman Catholicks, and did not come for Lucre-ſake (the *Engliſh* Pay being better than what we were to expect) but that Religion alone was the Motive of our Conduct. I then informed him of what I had ſuffered in *Ireland* for returning from *France*: Upon which the Magiſtrates told the Prince they would venture, and ſo carried my Companions and me to a Tavern, where after having taken a Glaſs or two, they deſired to know our Terms. I aſked my Companions what they propoſed? They ſubmitted the Matter to me, telling me they would abide by any Bargain I ſhould make.

As I knew the Money was to be paid by the Country, I was pretty extravagant in my Demand, which was one hundred Crowns *per* Man, for three Years Service; and if any ſhould be maimed or diſabled in the War, during that Time, he ſhould be taken Care of, and ſupported for Life, by the Pariſh or Village he entered for. This was thought too much, and they propoſed an Abatement of Forty Crowns *per* Man, and that the Reſt ſhould be complied with. I told my Companions, that I thought (as I really did) that it was a good Offer, leaving it to their Choice to reject or embrace it, obſerving to them, at the ſame Time, that I intended to take ſome other Courſe for my ſelf. This ſhocked them a little; and they aſſured me, that though the Offer was good, they had rather accompany me. I thanked them, and ſaid I had no Thoughts of ſtirring yet, but would not enter however until I had ſeen what Time would produce. With this they ſeemed pleaſed; and I endeavoured with the Magiſtrates to raiſe the Advance for the other five, telling them that I had ſome Thoughts of doing better for myſelf, and would

Digitized by Google

would not inlist with them. They declared themselves sorry for it, and said they did believe the Prince would prefer me; but desired me to tell my Comrades no more was to be expected; and that if they would agree, I should have a handsome Present for my Trouble. I told my Companions, who said they would consent, provided I approved of the Præmium they should make me. In short, they were to receive sixty Crowns a Man, to enter into present Pay, and, in case of any Accident, to be taken Care of.

They received five Pistoles a Man earnest, the Remainder to be paid in a Week, and I sixty Crowns for my Trouble. That Evening the Magistrates took the Recruits, and presented them to the Prince, and his Son their Colonel, who received them with a visible Pleasure: Being told by the Magistrates, that I did not enter with the rest, he asked me, what I intended to do? I answered him, I would wait some time longer, in hopes of doing better. He assured me that all the Commissions for Subalterns were at that time full, but that he would remember me; so I thanked him, and took my Leave. The Magistrates parted with their Men and me at the Palace-gate, promising to meet us that Day Seven-night, and we repaired immediately to our Inn, where we enjoyed ourselves till bed-time. The next Day we took a Walk to a Place where we were informed the new-raised Regiment were instructed in their Exercise, in order to see their Performance. Here an Adjutant was employed in teaching them the Discipline of the Pyke. I asked Permission to perform, which he readily granted, and went through the Exercise, and shewed him several Motions that the *English* had, which they wanted. He seemed well-pleased with my Performance, and, at the same Time, returned me Thanks. I suppose this was

Digitized by Google

reported to the Prince, for the next time I had the Honour of ſeeing him, both he and his Son made a Propoſal to me for diſciplining of the Pikemen, promiſing me a Sub-Lieutenant's Pay until better Proviſion could me made for me. I thanked his Highneſs, and aſſured him I would uſe my beſt Endeavour to acquit myſelf of the Charge with which he meant to honour me, and which I accepted of with Pleaſure.

Though the Appointment did not exceed ten Stivers *per* Day, yet it gave me ſome glimmering Hopes of better Fortune, and furniſhed me with an Opportunity of paying my Reſpects at the Palace, which I daily repeated: I had alſo the Honour of often ſeeing Madamoiſelle *de Grimberg* (the Governor's Daughter) and ſhe often aſſured me, ſhe would uſe her Endeavours in order to my Preferment. This increaſed my Hopes, ſo that I thought myſelf in a fair Way of being advanced, which certainly would have happened, if my evil Stars had not once more infatuated me.

About this Time there came to *Bruſſels* a Number of *Iriſh* Officers to raiſe ſix Companies of one hundred Men each, as Guards for the Chevalier, who were to have *Engliſh* Pay. One Day being at the Governor's Levee, theſe Officers came in a Body to pay their Reſpects to him, ſhewed their Commiſſions, with their Orders, deſiring his Permiſſion to raiſe Men in his Government, from among the Subjects of *England*, who ſhould deſert from the confederate Army, and were willing to inliſt with him, which he readily granted. Whilſt theſe Gentlemen ſtaid at the Governor's, I happened in Company with ſome of them, who, finding me to be an *Iriſhman*, ſeemed glad to ſee me, and very courteouſly invited me to dine with them, which I unluckily accepted of. When they left the Palace, I took my Leave, promiſing to meet them at the Hour

and

Digitized by Google

and Place appointed, which I did, and was politely received by them all.

Dinner being at an End, and the Glaſs circling briſkly, we became very merry. The Converſation ran chiefly on this new Regiment, the great Appointment, and rich Cloathing, which they ſaid was to be made at *Bruſſels*. I was aſked by Captain *Odriſcall*, how long I had been here, and in what Service, Regiment or Station? All which I anſwered, and they ſeemed highly to diſapprove of my Conduct, telling me, that the *Spaniſh* Service in general was very bad, and to be in a new raiſed Regiment of Militia much worſe; that they were ſorry to ſee a Gentleman of my ſeeming Merit ſerve among a Parcel of Boors, when it was in my Power to do much better. I thanked them for the good Opinion they had of me, aſſuring them, if I knew how to mend myſelf, I ſhould not have remained among them. They told me it would be much more to my Credit, as well as Advantage, to enter with them, and aſſiſt in the intended Levies; that they would render it worth my while, until they could diſpoſe of me more to my Advantage: To this I anſwered, that it was now too late to think of that, being under ſome Engagements to the Prince, who had been very kind to me, and promiſed ſoon to procure me a Commiſſion. To this I was anſwered, that there was no doubt of that, but the Appointment was ſo ſmall, that a Gentleman could hardly ſubſiſt on it; and that if I would join them, I ſhould have an *Engliſh* half Crown *per* Day, until better Proviſion could be made for me: I thanked, and told them, the Offer was too great to be rejected, if I could find a genteel way to diſengage myſelf from the Prince. Captain *Mac Carty* aſſured me, if I was willing, he would take that Part on himſelf, and diſcharge it to my Credit and Satisfaction, without in the leaſt

leaſt diſobliging the Prince; and on theſe Terms I unfortunately agreed to join them. At parting, he told me that in two or three Days he would wait on him on purpoſe, and deſired to meet me there. I agreed; ſo on ſeeing his Highneſs, he told him, that to his great Surpriſe, as well as Satisfaction, he had met me his very near Relation; that he was inclined (as in Duty bound) to do for me to the utmoſt of his Power, but that I had informed him, I was under ſome Engagement; that if I was permitted to go, he thought it would redound to my Advantage, by being among my Countrymen and Relations, beſides the Advantage of better Pay than was to be expected either in the *French* or *Spaniſh* Service. To this he was pleaſed to anſwer, that though he was ſorry to loſe me, he had too great a Regard to my Intereſt to hinder me from bettering my Condition; turning to me at the ſame time, and telling me, I ſhould ſoon have had a Commiſſion in his Son's Regiment; but that he really thought I would be much better with my Kinſman, and among my Countrymen. He aſſured me, however, he would do any thing in his Power to ſerve me, kindly recommending me to my Couſin as a Man of great Merit. I returned him my ſincere and hearty Thanks, offering my daily Service, while I remained at *Bruſſels* to exerciſe the Pikemen. Thus I unfortunately parted with that excellent Prince.

The firſt Step my new Maſters took was to get me a handſome Suit of Cloaths proper for a Recruiting Officer, as well as other Neceſſaries; and to do them Juſtice, encouraged me far beyond my Expectation. The firſt Week I inliſted ſix Deſerters from the *Engliſh* Army, two of whom I knew. This Succeſs, I ſuppoſe haſtened my Departure from *Bruſſels*; for, in about ten Days, every thing

Digitized by Google

thing being ready, I was diſpatched to the *French* Army, then lying in the Dutchy of *Cleves*, about fifty Leagues from *Bruſſels*. I arrived there but two Days before the Battle of *Nimeguen*, as it was called, and the firſt Action of Note in the *Netherlands* this War. The *Engliſh* Army was commanded by General *Ingoldſby*, the Lord *Marlborough* being abſent. I was an Eye-witneſs to this Engagement, and the Advantage fell to the *French*, having driven the Confederate Army to the Gates of *Nimeguen*. This was the only Advantage of any Note gained by that Nation in the *Netherlands*, during the whole Courſe of the War. At my Return towards *Cleves* after the Battle, I perceived Numbers of Moroders running in and out of a Caſtle, about half a Mile diſtant from me. Thither I ſped in hopes of meeting ſomething to my Advantage, and found ſeveral Soldiers returning loaded with Plunder. I entered, but could diſcover nothing worth while. There were indeed many Sacks of Corn, but that was neither valuable, nor eaſily portable. However, I took out my Knife, and cut a Sack of Wheat from Top to Bottom, from which proceeded a leathern Bag. This I lifted unperceived of any, and marched off, thinking my Fortune made, for it was bulky as well as heavy. I repaired ſtrait to my Quarters at *Cleves*, and opening my Bag, found, to my great Surpriſe, but an hundred Silver Ducatoons, Value about five Shillings and ten Pence each, near thirty Pounds Sterling; a pretty good Booty, though much inferior to my Expectation.

About this Time the Duke of *Burgundy* came to take the Command of the *French* Army. I ſtaid here about three Weeks after, in which Time I inliſted fifty Recruits, all Deſerters from the *Engliſh* Army. With theſe I ſet out for *Bruſſels*, without loſing a Man. At our Arrival, we were conducted

Digitized by Google

ted to the Prince Governor, who was pleaſed to declare himſelf glad to ſee me, and congratulated me on my Succeſs, praiſing the Men, who were really Praiſe-worthy, being all clever, tall Fellows. My Chiefs alſo were not leſs pleaſed, than ſurpriſed, at my Progreſs, and made me a Compliment of two Louis d'Ors for my Care. The firſt Journey to the *French* Army was too ſucceſsful not to be repeated: However, they ſuffered me to remain a Week, in order to reſt, when I was ſent off, with two Serjeants to aſſiſt me. The *French* Army at this Time was encamped nearer to *Bruſſels* by more than twenty Leagues than before. At this Time the Confederate Army, commanded by the Lord *Marlborough*, had laid ſiege to *Venlo*, and taken it; immediately after that General opened the Trenches before *Ruremond*, which he alſo made himſelf Maſter of.

During theſe Tranſactions, I inliſted one-and-fifty Men. I had Orders to pay them for their Clothes as much as they could be ſold for, which I did, and ſo returned towards *Bruſſels*. I was to march over a large Heath, within ſix Leagues of *Maeſtricht*, at the Skirt of which was a Wood, about a Mile on the Right of the Road, through which I muſt needs paſs, and I was informed by a Peaſant of a neighbouring Village, that if I did not take Care I might be intercepted, for that there was a Partizan Party of thirty Men from *Maeſtricht* in the Wood. This was unwelcome News, but I uſed the beſt Means in my Power to avoid the Danger. In order to this, I procured as many Poles, about the Length of a Muſket, as I had Men, got ſome Packthread, and ſo marched until we came within half a Mile of the Heath. Here I halted; got all the Swords and Bayonets that were among us, tied them

Digitized by Google

them to the Poles, and ſo marched my Men in order over the Heath: The Deſign of this was to deceive the Enemy, by the glittering of the Swords, &c. to make the Poles at a Diſtance appear like Fire-Arms. Whether this was of any Avail, or that the Enemy had left the Place, I cannot ſay, but we paſſed unmoleſted, and arrived ſafe at *Bruſſels*. We were conducted to the Governor's as before, who again expreſſed himſelf glad of my Succeſs. My Superiors were no leſs pleaſed, though they did not ſhew it as before by a Preſent. They indeed uſed many kind Expreſſions in my Favour, and, in about ten Days, I was ſent a third time to the *French* Army, that then lay near *Tongres*, the Confederates having marched towards *Liege*.

Here my Succeſs was beyond the former, having in three Weeks got fifty-two Men, at the Head of whom I marched back as before. And though I had not now above a dozen Leagues of Peregrination, I had the Misfortune to loſe three of my People, who deſerted me; but this could not, nor indeed was it, laid at my Door. The Day of my Arrival the Captains *Odriſcal* and *Mac Carty Reagh* had the Honour to dine with the Prince: I was, according to Cuſtom, conducted with my Men to the Palace, about the Hour Dinner was ended, and the Prince and his Company came to view us. Among the reſt was my Amazon Captain, the Prince's Daughter, who was pleaſed to tell me, ſhe was glad to ſee me, but ſorry I did not ſtay in her Brother's Regiment, hoping however I had done better. To this I returned her Thanks for her good Wiſhes, and never ſaw her more.

The Officers were not idle on their Part; for, by the Middle of *Auguſt*, our ſix hundred Men were compleat, with a few over; and now the whole Myſtery was diſcovered, and this fine Regiment of Guards

Digitized by Google

Guards was ordered to march for *Italy* to recruit the *Irish* Brigade there. This was ſhocking to many, but there was no Remedy. In a few Days the Route with marching Orders came; and on the 25th we began our March towards *Italy*; a long Journey to begin ſo late in the Year, being between two and three hundred Leagues. I ſhall not trouble my Readers with a Deſcription of the Country or Towns we marched through, but ſhall only inform him, we marched through ſeveral Provinces of *France*, by the Way of *Lyons*, until we reached *Grenoble*, at the Foot of the *Alps*. Here we reſted about ſix Weeks; from hence we marched on the 30th of *November* about ten Days, every Day riſing higher until we came to *Brainçon*, where was a *French* Regiment in Garriſon. During two Months we ſtaid here, I got acquainted with ſome of the Officers. It was commanded by the Marquis of *Jenſack*, of whom I ſhall have Occaſion to ſay ſomething hereafter. Here we were obliged to remain, by reaſon of the deep Snows, till the Concluſion of the Year 1702.

CHAP. IX.

THE 20th of *January*, 1703, we began our March from this Town, having one hundred Peaſants before us, with proper Tools to clear the Snow out of a winding Path or Road made up an high Mountain, called Mount *Geneva*, the higheſt paſſable Mountain in that Part of the *Alps*: When we paſt this, we deſcended for about ten Days, until we got to the Plains of *Piedmont*. The firſt Town, at the Entrance is called *Suſa*. Here we lay two Nights, and then continued our March through that delightful Country, until we came to the Banks of the *Po*. At this Place we croſſed

Digitized by Google

croſſed that River, then enter'd the Dutchy of *Milan*, and ſhortly arrived at *Burgdevercelli*. We met in this Town ſome Officers of the *Iriſh* Brigade, who came on Purpoſe; and the next Day we marched to *Novara*, the firſt Frontier Town belonging to the King of *Spain*, on that Side. We now had a Sejour, or Day's Reſt, and ſoon after made a general Muſter of all our Recruits, and found, that we had loſt ſince we left *Bruſſels* two hundred and fifty-ſeven Men by Deſertion, having not loſt a ſingle Man by any other Means.

This done, we continued our March daily, until we reached *Pavia*, where this tedious and diſagreeable Journey ended, and where thoſe Men were divided among the ſeveral Officers of the *Iriſh* Brigade, who waited there to receive them. I ſtaid however but three Days, finding that all my Fatigue and Labour was to be rewarded only with an Halbert, which I rejected with Scorn, and took my Leave with Deſign to return to *Flanders*; but being within twenty Miles of the fine City of *Milan*, I reſolved to ſee it. During my Reſidence in this Place, I was informed, there was a *Neapolitan* Nobleman in Town, who was Colonel of a Regiment of Body-guards, compoſed of that Nation, for the Service of the King of *Spain*, that lay then at *Novara*; that they only waited for their Horſes, and were to march through *France* for *Madrid*; that he would entertain ſuch Men as ſhould apply to him, if well recommended: I concluded, that though I had no Recommendation, I could be no Sufferer by waiting on him, and ſo I reſolved on it. After having paid my Reſpects, I informed him of my Buſineſs, and of what had paſſed between the *Iriſh* Officers and myſelf, from the Beginning, to the Day I left them at *Pavia*, and that I had ſome Thoughts of returning to *Flanders*; but hearing of him, I came voluntarily to offer my Service;

Digitized by Google

vice; that I had no Recommendation, but was of a good Family, and willing to ſerve his Catholick Majeſty. He aſked me ſeveral Queſtions, which I readily anſwered, and without any Difficulty, he entertained, and ſent me immediately to *Novara*, to join the Regiment, furniſhing me with a Letter to the Commanding Officer, and a Gold Ducat to defray my Expences.

The next Day after my Arrival, I received the uniform Clothes, which were a good Grey Cloth, faced with blue, and looped with Gold. Our Allowance was very good while I ſtaid here, having Plenty of Bread and Rice, together with a Proportion of Fleſh Meat at times, but not one Farthing of Money, which by no means pleaſed me. Thus I remained ſome time, until the *French Gens d'Arms* paſſed from *Italy* to *Germany*, and they marched by Detachments through this Town. Here I was informed by one *Moor*, an *Iriſh* Gentleman, of our Regiment, that in the Detachment that were expected the next Day, there was a Gentleman of my Name, perhaps a Relation; and aſked me, if I knew or heard any thing of him? I anſwered, I had a Brother, in whoſe Company I left my native Country, but that I had not heard from him theſe ten Years. I alſo mentioned his riding in King *James*'s Guards; and that he had been recommended by Lord *Trimbleſtown* to the Marquis *de Catuelan*, at St. *Brieux*, who received him into his own Troop, and he ſeemed poſitive in the Recital of this, that it muſt be my Brother. Next Day *Moor* and I went out to meet the Detachment, which when arrived, he inquired for Mr. *Drake*. Having met, they walked and diſcourſed together, until they reached my Brother's Quarters, for ſo he proved. As ſoon as he alighted, Mr. *Moor* beckoned to, and introduced me to him as a Nameſake, not having ſaid a Word of me before;

Digitized by Google

fore; but we ſoon recollected each other, and I need not ſay how overjoyed we both were on this Occaſion.

My Brother invited Mr. *Moor* and me to ſup with him and his Comrades, and we were extremely merry. Here I informed him of the Station I was in, the manner of our Subſiſtence, and the Emptineſs of our Purſes, at which he and the Reſt laughed heartily, alledging we were rather Capuchins than Soldiers, and all adviſed me not to tarry any longer, to which indeed I had no great Inclination: So I went the next Day to my Commanding Officer, demanding a Diſcharge, and acquainting him at the ſame time, that I had met a Brother in the *French Gens d'Arms*, whom I was reſolved to accompany. I was pretty ſure of not meeting with a Refuſal, Guards of a Prince's Houſhold being ſeldom detained, when unwilling to ſerve. Accordingly I got my Diſmiſſion, and ſet out with my Brother through *Piedmont*. When we were within a League of *Turin*, he got Permiſſion to go with me there, in order to ſee that City and Court. Here we ſtaid ſome time, and ſaw as much as could be expected from ſo tranſient a View. Before our parting, he told me he was about to quit the *Gens d'Arms*; that he was ſpeedily to be married to a Lady who had forty thouſand Livres to her Fortune; that her Uncle had a Regiment of Foot, in which he was to have a Company; and that when he ſaw me again (which he hoped would be ſoon) he would be able to do ſomething for me worth while; all which, (our Meeting excepted) came to paſs; for I never had the Happineſs of ſeeing him more.

Soon after my Brother's Marriage, his Lady's Uncle got a Regiment of Horſe, in which he was made a Captain, and was killed at the Battle of *Turin* in the Year 1706. After he left

Digitized by Google

me, I ſtaid at *Turin* five Days, and began my Journey back for *Flanders*. When I reached *Briançon*, I renewed my Acquaintance with the Officers of the Marquis of *Jeanſac*'s Regiment, and they told me they were to march for *Germany* in three Days. I was glad to hear this, not doubting but I ſhould by their Intereſt get the Benefit of the Rout as far as *Lyons*, which would be of Service to me, in ſaving the Expence of my Journey: So I propoſed it, and they aſſured me they would ſpeak to the Marquis the next Day, and introduce me to him, which they did. He received me politely, and inquired for all the *Iriſh* Officers of my Acquaintance, and my Reaſons for leaving them. I told him they had affronted me by offering me an Halbert, as the Recompence of my Service. Then he made ſome Propoſals to me to enter with him, which I did not approve of, and I offered in Excuſe for myſelf, that I had ſome conſiderable Relations in General *Sheldon*'s Regiment of Horſe, which were my Countrymen, and would for that Reaſon ſerve among them; but that if he would do me the Favour of letting me have the Benefit of his Rout as far as *Lyons*, I ſhould gratefully acknowledge the Obligation. He ſaid he would with Pleaſure, and do me any other Service in his Power, and gave me the Eſtapp of a Serjeant: I thanked him, and accepted his Offer. The Eſtapp, or Allowance, was three Pounds of Bread, two of Fleſh, and four Quarts of Wine *per* Day, with Quarters: Thus I marched with this Regiment until I came to *Lyons*.

Here I was again put to my Shifts, the Regiment marching no farther my Way, and having ſtaid two Days, I ſet forward for *Paris*, ſometimes meeting with Recruits, or Regiments marching; ſometimes lodging in Houſes endowed for the Entertainment of poor Travellers, or making other

Shifts

Digitized by Google

Shifts until I arrived at *Paris*. I went directly to the *Hotel de Dieu*, where poor Travellers are received, and hoſpitably entertained for three Days. From thence I went to St. *Germains*, hoping to meet with ſome Friends, but found a vaſt Alteration, though it was but four Years ſince I had left that Place to go for *Ireland*, moſt of my Acquaintance being either dead or diſperſed. Here I met with one *Luke Keating*, who was a Captain in a *French* Regiment, commanded by the Marquis *d' Chateaubrillien*, then living at *Dreux*, twelve Leagues from St. *Germains*, who was looking out for Recruits. I entered myſelf with him, on the Terms of being a Serjeant, to have Ten-pence *per* Day, which was Two-pence more than the uſual Appointment of a Serjeant, and to be Pay-maſter to his Company, and went with him to *Dreux*. There the Company was drawn out to be viewed by the Captain, and I preſented to them as their Serjeant, which is a Form always uſed. We remained in this Place a Fortnight longer, to receive Cloths and Arms, and then marched to *Bruges*, where we remained in Garriſon the whole Summer.

We had not been long here, when there was an Order for all the Grenadiers, and other Detachments from the ſeveral Garriſons in the Country, to join the Mareſchal *Bouffiers*, who commanded a flying Army of ten thouſand Men. All the Forces being arrived, and reviewed by that General, the next Day we marched, in order to attack *Obdam*, who commanded much about the like Number of *Dutch* Forces, near a little Town called *Ecren*. The Action was pretty ſharp, and ſeveral were killed on both Sides; the Advantage at firſt was on our Side, and *Obdam* fled to *Breda*, acquainting the Governor of that Place, that all was loſt, but he proved miſtaken; for the Officers that were under him, whom he left behind, rallied the

Digitized by Google

Dutch Troops, and obliged *Boufflers* to retire. Though this Action was not very conſiderable, yet the *Dutch* had an Advantage by it, which was to prevent the *French* from penetrating farther into that Part of their Country.

Two Days after the Battle, the Grenadiers, and other Detachments, were ordered to return to their reſpective Garriſons; our's had five killed, and a few wounded. Soon after I obtained Permiſſion to go to *Antwerp*, for a Fortnight, to ſee a particular Friend, who was a famous Partiſan, named *D'Aras*, with whom I commenced an Acquaintance at *Bruſſels* the Summer before. He was preparing Volunteers to make an Incurſion into *Holland*, and propoſed it to me to be of the Party, promiſing to make me his Lieutenant; adding, that I would find my Account in it. I knew him to be an enterpriſing as well as a brave Fellow, and agreed to go; ſo having collected twenty-four Men, and got a Paſs from the Governor, we went from *Antwerp* on our intended Expedition on the 24th of *June*, and got early the next Morning to *Rozendal*, where the Confederate Army lay when I quitted them the laſt Year.

Here we were refreſhing ourſelves at a Publick-houſe, not dreaming of an Enemy, when our Centry alarmed us, by ſaying, that a Party of Horſe was juſt at hand. We ran to Arms, fixed our Bayonets, and drew up before the Door, in the Street, not above ſixty Paces from the Enemy, who halted on ſeeing us. Whether they had got Intelligence of us, or our Number, I cannot ſay; but to ſhew that we were not afraid, and to put on the beſt Countenance we could, *D'Aras* detached a Serjeant with ſix Men to challenge them, directing, if he found them Enemies to fire, and rejoin him. They alſo advanced, and daring us in like manner; and well they might, for they were near double our Number,

Digitized by Google

ber, beſides the Advantage of being on Horſeback, and much better armed. The Fight began, the *Dutch* Officer ordering his People to give no Quarters, which our Commander hearing, gave the ſame, and advancing boldly, was killed inſtantly by my Side; upon which I ſtooped, took the Commiſſion out of his Pocket, and put it into my own. By this Time we were mixed, and much Slaughter enſued, inſomuch, that in leſs than ten Minutes, we had twenty out of twenty-five killed on the Spot, and three wounded. And now being Commander in Chief of an Army of five Men, three of whom were wounded, I thought it highly prudent to retire, and that with Precipitation; ſo perceiving a Turn-ſtile between two Houſes, I ordered my little Army to turn that Way, as the Cavalry could not poſſibly purſue. And thus, by the Almighty's Providence, we eſcaped without further Damage, though ſeveral Shots were diſcharged at us as we paſſed over a Meadow. Soon after, we ſheltered ourſelves in a Wood, where we ſtaid ſome Hours to reſt, one ſtanding Centry whilſt the others ſlept. About two Hours before Sun-ſet, our Centinel ſaw three of the Dragoons (for ſo they were that attacked us) making towards the Wood, of which he gave us Notice. We aroſe, took to our Arms, got a little farther into the Wood, and poſted ourſelves in a convenient Place, where we might obſerve them unſeen. As ſoon as they reached the Wood, they alighted, and lay down, having taken the Bits out of their Horſes Mouths to let them feed. I called a Council, wherein it was reſolved to wait a Quarter of an Hour, and ſee if any more of them ſhould appear, if not, to ruſh on a ſudden on them and make them Priſoners. We kept a profound Silence, and no more appearing, we proceeded ſoftly until we drew near them, then ruſhed on them, three on one ſide, and two on the other, and by this Means they fell a Prey to us; but one

Digitized by Google

of them being more vigilant or active then the other two, had got his Foot in the Stirrup in order to mount, which coſt him his Life; for one of my little Army, who was not wounded, with a Stroke of his clubbed Muſket, beat out his Brains, and there left him.

We tied the other two, all keeping very ſilent; and, as ſoon as it was dark, I ordered my three wounded Men to mount the Horſes, and guard the Priſoners: Thus we marched all Night, and by Sun-riſe arrived at the City of *Antwerp*. The Gates being open, we entered, and were conducted to the Governor, to whom I returned the Commiſſion which he had given to *D'Aras*, furniſhing him with a full and exact Account of this unfortunate Expedition. He congratulated me on the taking the Horſes and Priſoners, Part of which was his Right for granting the Commiſſion. The Horſes, Arms and Accoutrements being ſold, and having received three Piſtoles for the Ranſom of the two Dragoons, amounting in the Whole to about 33 *l*, the Sum was juſtly divided as uſual in ſuch Caſes. I ſtaid here, taking my Pleaſure until my Fortnight was expired, and then returned to *Bruges*. Thus began and thus ended this unhappy Expedition, and thus my honeſt and brave Friend *D'Aras* loſt his Life.

CHAP. X.

BEING come to *Bruges*, my Captain *Keating* was glad to ſee me, and informed me, that in two or three Days he intended ſetting out for *Paris*, and recommended the Charge of his Company to my Care. In a Month after his Departure the Regiment was ordered to a Place called *Dam*, remarkably unhealthy, particularly about Autumn. Here were five Battallions in Garriſon, and not a Man from

Digitized by Google

from the Colonel to the Drummer was free from an Ague, the Town ſtanding on a Marſh: I had it for three Months, and was brought very low. In about a Month after I recovered, our Regiment returned to *Bruges*, where I had an Account of my Captain's not intending to return to the Regiment any more, being made a Lieutenant-Colonel in the *Spaniſh* Service. However, I continued my Care of the Company, having no Orders to the contrary; and thus I continued quietly the Remainder of the Year 1703, and indeed until *April* 1704, when there came a new Captain, who would neither give me the additional Two-pence *per* Day, which Captain *Keating* allowed, nor ſuffer me to be Pay-maſter to the Company, having ſome Friend of his own to gratify. I quitted the Regiment, and came to *Bruſſels*, once more turned looſe to the wide World.

At the Beginning of *May*, I got to *Bruſſels*, where I was not long before I met with Captain *Gibbons*, who had a Company in a *Spaniſh* Regiment. He entertained me as a Cadet, made many Promiſes, and aſſured me if I behaved myſelf well, he would endeavour to promote me. The Regiment lay at *Namure*, and in a few Days I went with the Captain to join it. Here we remained until the Duke of *Marlborough* marched into *Bavaria*, and the *French* Army marching to lay Siege to *Huy*, our Regiment, and another of Dragoons belonging to the Prince of *Liege*, were ordered to join them. The Town being ſoon taken, we marched to *Luxemburg*, where we ſtaid the reſt of the Summer. There is a little Town in this Dutchy, called *Vienden*, where ſtands an old Caſtle of ſome Strength: To guard this Place there was a ſtrong Detachment from *Luxemburg*, which was to be relieved every Month, and here reſided Monſieur *de la Croix*, a famous Partiſan, and Brigadier-General

Digitized by Google

of the King's Armies: To this Place I marched with the reſt in my Turn. The next Day after my Arrival I paid my Reſpects to the Brigadier, acquainting him who I was, and offered him my Service as a Volunteer in any Expedition, where he choſe to employ me. He received me politely, and after ſome Diſcourſe, paſt a *French* Compliment, giving me a general Invitation to take Pot-luck. I viſited him every Day, and often had the Honour to dine with him.

One Day he told me, he had not forgot me; that there was an Expedition on Foot, where was Honour and Profit to be got, which would ſoon be put in Execution; and that if I choſe to go, I muſt take care to be in the Way, and that when every thing was ready, they were to march at an Hour's Warning: I thanked him, and promiſed to be in readineſs. Three Days after there came a Detachment of a *French* Regiment, to relieve ours, the Marquis *de Ledes* being to review us, and ſome other *Spaniſh* Regiments in the Neighbourhood of *Luxemburg*; and the next Day I took my Leave of Monſieur *de la Croix*, luckily leaving the Expedition for the reſt, (more unfortunate than my ſelf) to execute, and ſo went to join the Regiment. In a Month after, *France*, *Germany*, and I believe all *Europe* rung of the above-mentioned Expedition: The Officer, who laid the Scheme, was one of Monſieur *de la Croix*'s Lieutenants, and had contrived to convey five-and-twenty Men privately into the City of *Duſſeldorp* in *Germany*, in order to take away a young *German* Prince, and having accompliſhed indeed his Deſign of getting in the Men in Diſguiſe, lay in the Houſe appointed for their Reception a few Days, but the arch Villain betrayed them, and every Man was either ſhot or hanged, as ſo many Spies. Thus ended this

Digitized by Google

this Expedition, from which the Hand of God, and his kind Providence ſaved me.

I ſtaid in this Regiment at *Luxemburg* until the Middle of *October*, and then left it for the following Reaſon: As Men are generally partial in their own Favour, and often conceited of their own Merit, ſo it happened to me: For at this Time, one *Barry*, a Cadet in the ſame Company, who was a Man but of indifferent Figure, and whom I thought more prudent in ſaving Money, than brave in military Exploits, was made a Lieutenant. Upon which thinking myſelf injured, I demanded my Diſmiſſion, and quitted the Regiment. There was at this Time in *Luxemburg* a *French* Regiment, commanded by the Marquis *de L'Eſtrange*, and I being very well known by all the Officers, a Captain ſeeing me at Liberty, made me the Offer of an Halbert; adding, that I ſhould be Pay-maſter to his Company, and he would allow me Twelve-pence *per* Day. I inſiſted on Fourteen, which he agreed to, and entered on preſent Pay.

About this Time, there came to *Luxemburg* one Captain *Sheeby*, with whom I had been acquainted at *Bruſſels*. He told me he had been lately in Company with Baron *Drake*, who was Captain of Grenadiers in *de Courriere*'s Regiment; that he was a *Limburger*, of *Engliſh* Extraction, had a handſome Fortune, and was telling him, he never had ſeen a Man of his Name among the *Engliſh*; that he mentioned me to him, and gave him my Character; he expreſſed a great Inclination of ſeeing me, deſiring, if I ſhould chance to go to *Flanders*, to enquire for that Regiment, and the Baron; and that he (*Sheeby*) would be glad to ſee me, being Captain-Lieutenant in the ſame Regiment. I thanked him, and promiſed to take his Advice, if Fortune ſhould lead me that Way. I requeſted of him alſo to preſent my Compliments to my Name-

ſake

Digitized by Google

ſake the Baron. I am the more particular in this, as I ſhall have Occaſion to ſay a great deal on the ſame Subject hereafter.

We ſtaid in this Town until the Middle of *November*, and then marched to *Buckenum* in *Lorrain*, where we ſpent the Remainder of the Year 1704. I cannot but take Notice here of the Diſcipline the Hogs are kept under; though there are great Numbers of them in this Town, yet one Herd keeps them all. Every Morning early the Inhabitants open their Styes, and the Herd ſounding a Horn along the Streets, the Swine run from all Parts of the Town, to join and follow him to the Gate they are to go out at; then he leads them to the Foreſt, where they diſperſe themſelves, and feed on Acorns until Evening; then he ſounds his Horn, and all run to join him, and ſo leads them to Town, the Styes being left open every Hog runs to his own Apartment.

CHAP. XI.

IN the Beginning of *March* 1705, there came to this Town an *Iriſh* Officer, who ſent for me to take a Glaſs with him at his Inn, and after ſome Diſcourſe, told me I muſt accompany him to *Metz*, at the ſame Time ſhewing me the King's Edict, impowering all *Iriſh* Officers belonging to the Regiments of that Nation in the *French* Service, to draft ſuch *Engliſh* Subjects as they ſhould meet with, in any *French* Regiment, Troop or Company, allowing them the ſame Station and Appointment as they had enjoyed in their reſpective Regiments. I was by no means diſpleaſed at this; for I choſe rather to ſerve among my own Countrymen than among the *French*. This Gentleman and I went to the Commanding Officer, to whom he ſhewed his

Digitized by Google

his Orders, and the next Day we ſet forward. Arriving at the deſtined Place, I found myſelf diſappointed in my Expectations, the Officers refuſing to allow me more than Four-pence *per* Day, a great fall from the Fourteen Pence promiſed At laſt one Colonel *Arthur* hearing my Name, and aſking me ſeveral Queſtions relating to my Family, whom he well knew, was pleaſed to offer me a Penny more, I ſtill inſiſting on the King's Edict, but to no purpoſe. At laſt a Serjeant ſhewed me to my Quarters, and offered me five Days Pay at Five-pence, which I refuſed: Upon which he frankly told me, my Refuſal was Mutiny, and that if I did not think better of it, he had Orders from the Governor to carry me to Priſon. This I had no Stomach for, and rather than run the Hazard, took the Pay.

At this Time the Garriſon were making Preparations to appear in the beſt Order poſſible before the Mareſchal *de Villars*, who was to review them as he paſſed through that Town in his Way to *Germany*, where he was to command the *French* Army. This gave me ſome Hopes of Redreſs, being reſolved on making my Complaint to him the firſt Opportunity. He came, and the next Day the Troops were drawn out: He viewed them Rank by Rank, and as ſoon as he approached the Right of the Rank in which I was, I plucked up my Spirits, and with a loud Voice begged he would hear me a few Words. The Officers endeavoured to prevent me, but the Mareſchal (always the Soldier's Friend) ſtopped, and ordered me to ſpeak freely. I told him my Caſe in few Words, and he inſiſted on the Obſervance of the King's Edict, or to let me go. This I ſuppoſe they promiſed to do by a low Bow, as a Token of their Aſſent; but as ſoon as he had left them, which was the next Day, they thought no more of it; ſo that all I got by

Digitized by Google

by this Complaint was the Honour of ſpeaking to ſo great a Man.

In *April* the Regiment was ordered for *Germany*, directing our March to *Straſburg*. I accompanied them through Part of the Duke of *Lorrain*'s Territory as far as *Marſall*, where we reſted a Day; and the next I ſlipped into *Lorrain*, where I was ſafe from any Purſuit. The firſt Village I came to I ſold my Regimentals, Arms and Accoutrements for five Crowns, and went on to a Town called *Meercour*, where I was informed the Duke of *Lorrain*'s Foot Guards lay. Here I met ſeveral Acquaintances, who had ſerved with me in *Dillon*'s Regiment at the Siege of *Barcelona*; I ſtaid with them for three Weeks, and then took my Leave.

The third Day after my Departure, I entered on the *French* Territories, in my Way to *Flanders*, and had hardly gone a League when I was met by a Man well mounted, who ſtopped me in the King's Name, demanding to ſee my Paſs. I told him I had a Furlow; that I came from *Metz*, and was going to *Barr-Sur Aube* to viſit a Kinſman named *Nugent*, who was Guardian of the *Iriſh* Capuchins in that Place. He demanded to ſee my Furlow, which I complied with (though it was of my own making) he did not like it, ſo told me I muſt go with him to *Chaumont*, and give an Account of myſelf to the Provoſt. I was then ſeven Leagues from *Barr-Sur-Aube*, and as far from *Chaumont*, which was ſeven Leagues out of my Way. I intreated him not to hinder me in my intended Journey, but to no purpoſe, for he inſiſted, and drew out one of his Piſtols, which he charged, and then ordered me to walk at the Diſtance of ten Paces before him.

Thus I travelled for about half a League, and perceiving a ſmall riſing on the Road where it was pretty narrow, I ſtood there, and begged he would hear

Digitized by Google

hear me; and demanding what I had to ſay, I ſpoke much to the ſame Purpoſe as before, adding, that he had not ſufficiently examined the Furlow: Upon which he took it from his Pocket, and began to read; when on a ſudden I wreſted the Piſtols from him, cocking that which he had loaded (for I obſerved him narrowly) and in my turn, commanded him in the King's Name to diſmount, or I would blow out his Brains. He obeyed, and as ſoon as he was on Foot, I ordered him to advance ten Paces, and no more; then I put my Foot in the Stirrup, and mounted, bidding him go on, obſerving the ſame Diſtance, and thus proceeded to the next Village.

Here I enquired for the Chief Magiſtrate, and deſired him to let me have an armed Peaſant for my Guide, to guide that Man to *Chaumont* to the Provoſt; for that I ſuſpected he was a Robber. This was ſoon complied with, and my Priſoner obſerved to me, that he was one of the Provoſt's People. I affected to diſcredit his Story, and ſaid, if he was, I ſhould deliver him ſafe to his Maſter, and aſked him where his Carbine belt was? (for I could ſee none) that being their Commiſſion, without which they cannot act, though the Oppoſer is puniſhed with the Gallies, if they can produce it. This I knew, which made me act the bolder, and he offered ſeveral frivolous Excuſes, but to no purpoſe. I had my Peaſant relieved by another, and ſent the former home; and this I did at every convenient Place, until I reached the Gates of *Chaumont*, which being guarded by the Burghers, was ſhut for form-ſake, it being ten o'Clock at Night. Here my Priſoner called out with a ſeeming Authority to open the Gate, which was immediately complied with, and they were all ſurpriſed at ſeeing him on Foot, and me mounted and armed in the manner I was. They were beginning to

make

Digitized by Google

make Inquiry after the Cauſe of all this, but I demanded to be conducted to the Provoſt's Houſe, where being come, he knocked at the Door, and a Servant in Livery anſwered, who was no leſs ſurpriſed than the Burghers, and ran to his Maſter to inform him of what he had ſeen. He immediately came forth, and aſked what was the Matter? I demanded of him, if he was the Provoſt? to which he anſwered in the affirmative; I then alighted, delivered him the Piſtols, and told him I had taken an Opportunity to diſarm, and diſmount that Man, whom I ſuſpected to be a Robber, who had impudently perſonated one of his Archees: Upon this, he deſired me to walk in, and I followed him to the Parlour, where they were at Supper, and he deſired me to relate the whole Affair, with which he, as well as the Company, was highly pleaſed, and he furniſhed me at a Side Table, with Part of every Diſh that was at their's, as well as Plenty of excellent Wine. In the Concluſion, he examined me in the Manner his Archee had done before, and I told him the ſame Story. At the mentioning the Name of *Nugent*, he ſaid he knew him very well, and had a particular Regard for, and would write to him by me. He then ordered my late Priſoner to ſhew me to an Auberg (or Inn) which he named, and to give Directions in his Name for me to be well accommodated: This gave my Spirits Wings. At parting, he aſked me to breakfaſt next Morning, and I ſet out with my Guide, who never ſpoke till we arrived at the Lodging where he delivered his Meſſage. I went at the Time appointed, found the Provoſt, who furniſhed me with a good Paſs, and a Letter to Father *Nugent*, beſide a Piſtole to bear my Charges, at the ſame time wiſhing me ſafe to *Flanders*; ſo I took my Leave, and thus ended this Adventure.

I got

Digitized by Google

I got to *Barr-Sur-Aube* that Night, went directly to the Capuchin Convent, inquired for Father *Nugent*, delivered to him the Provoſt's Letter, and was kindly and hoſpitably received. The Letter being read publickly in the Refectory by the Guardian, the Capuchins were very merry, the Provoſt having given a full Account of the whole Affair. I remained among them a Fortnight, had ſome ſlight Propoſals made by Father *Nugent* to quit the World, and embrace that Courſe of Life, to which I told him I had no Call.

At my parting from theſe religious People, I proceeded on my Journey to *Flanders*, meeting with little worth Notice, until I came to *Louvain*, where the firſt Man I met with that I knew, was the Officer who took me out of the *French*, and brought me to *Dorrington*'s Regiment at *Metz*. When I perceived him approaching towards me, I put my Hand to my Sword, to be ready, if there ſhould be occaſion; but on drawing near, he came to me with a Smile, and aſked me kindly how I did; aſſuring me he intended no harm. I ſaid, I apprehended none, as being conſcious of no Crime: So we repaired to a Publick-houſe, took a friendly Glaſs, and thus parted.

Next Morning I ſet out for the Army, and had not got two Leagues, when I heard a Report among the Country People, that the *Brabant* Lines were ſurpriſed and entered by the Duke of *Marlborough*, which I thought incredible, and went on. In leſs than half an Hour after I heard a ſmart Firing, and ſoon perceived ſome Troops, whether Friends or Foes I could not diſtinguiſh, but plainly ſaw they were in quick Motion; and drawing nearer, I diſcovered a Horſe in a Field of Corn bridled and ſaddled, whoſe Rider I ſuppoſe had been killed: The Creature did not ſtir, and I mounted him. By the Furniture he muſt have been an Officer's.

Digitized by Google

Officer's. Some of theſe Troops rode towards me, and I turning to make the beſt of my Way to *Louvain*, ſeveral Shots were diſcharged without Effect on me, but the Horſe was deſtroyed. At length I arrived at the wiſhed-for Place, where I remained until I had a Certainty where the Army was, and whether there was a ſafe Communication between *Louvain* and it. Being informed they lay at *Leer*, and that there were Guards poſted along the Road for that Purpoſe, I repaired to the Camp, where the firſt Step I took was to inquire for *de Courière*'s Regiment, and Captain *Sheehy*; and having found him, he received me with open Arms, and took me directly to Baron *Drake*'s Tent, introducing me to that Gentleman, who expreſſed as much Joy on ſeeing me, as if I had been his neareſt Relation.

It being near the Hour of Dinner, he aſked my Friend, the Captain, and me, to dine; and then entered into a particular Inquiry of my Family and Country, in which I gratified him; adding to the reſt a minute Account of my Adventures. He warmly declared his Willingneſs of ſerving me, but at preſent, ſaid he, I have little in my Power. However, Dinner being ended, he ſent for one of his Serjeants, ordering him to bring a Couple of Grenadiers to pitch a ſmall Tent near his own, and procure ſome Straw, or dry Forage to put into it, bidding his Servant to add a ſmall Mattras to the reſt. After this, we continued drinking, and were very jovial, when the Man came to acquaint him all was ready. As ſoon as the Bottle was at an end, I was conducted thither, and the Baron told me, that where-ever we ſhould march, that was to be my Quarters until Winter, when he hoped to provide for me better; at the ſame Time aſſuring me of a general Welcome at his Table. This gave my Friend *Sheehy* a ſingular Pleaſure, as it was the Reſult

Digitized by Google

Reſult of his Recommendation; ſo he preſented me with two Crowns to keep my Pocket, unſeen by the Baron, and took his Leave. My Patron and I walked and diſcourſed on ſeveral Subjects, and I found he had no great Veneration for the *French*, though then in that Intereſt. In the Evening he ſent for his two Lieutenants to ſup with him, to whom he introduced me as a Perſon for whom he had a great Eſteem, recommending me to their Favour, which they promiſed. Next Morning at Breakfaſt, he ordered the Officer, who was Paymaſter to his Company, to let me have Sevenpence *Engliſh per* Day, which was conſtantly done while I remained in the Regiment.

In this Camp the Army continued till the Concluſion of the Campaign, when the Confederates having laid Siege to, and taken Fort *Izabell*, both Armies ſeparated, and went into Winter Quarters. *Ghent* fell to our Lot, and thither we marched: Being arrived, the Baron took the greater Part of a genteel Houſe ready furniſhed. Here I had an elegant Apartment, and a good Table, and was ſhortly after furniſhed with a regimental Suit, like thoſe worn by the Officers. Being thus equiped, and having the Rank of a Cadet, I was qualified to go into any Company, by which means I frequented public Places without Exception; and this paſt the Winter agreeably without any thing material.

CHAP. XII.

EARLY in the Year 1706 we begun to talk of and prepare for the Campaign, but did not ſtir until the latter End of *April*, when we marched by the Way of *Bruſſels* for *Louvain*, where the Army was to aſſemble. We ſtaid ſome Days to

Digitized by Google

lay Bridges over the *Dile*, for the more convenient paſſing the Army and Train, whilſt the Baggage marched through the Town.

Every thing being ready early in *May*, it was ſtrongly reported, we were to go ſhortly in queſt of the Enemy. We encamped two Days at ſome Diſtance from *Tongres*, where I heard of the Count *de Grimberg*'s Regiment being in the Army, I immediately inquired for my old Companions, whom I parted with in 1702, who were all well, and rejoiced at ſeeing me. We took a hearty Bottle together, then parted, and never ſaw each other more.

On *Whitſun* Eve we were furniſhed with ſixteen Charges of Powder and Ball a Man: Orders were given out at Night for the General to beat at Dawn of Day; the Chaplains to ſay Maſs at the Head of their reſpective Regiments; the Tents to be ſtruck, the Baggage loaded, all ſure Tokens there was Work cut out for the following Day. At four the whole Army was in Motion, marching in Columns; *viz.* the two Lines, firſt and ſecond, in order of Battle, the Train of Artillery between the Lines, a Proportion being aſſigned to each Brigade, and the Baggage on our Right between us and our Garriſons. Thus did we proceed without the leaſt Interruption until twelve o'Clock. Coming in ſight of the Enemy, the Cannon was ordered to the Front to be placed on proper Ground to annoy them; they doing the like on their Part.

The *French* brought this Year among their Train many Three-bore Field-pieces; a new Invention, of which they were ſo careful, for fear of a Diſcovery, that they had them caſed over, and never expoſed to View, until they came to the Plain of *Ramillies*. The Scene of this bloody Engagement, where they, together with the reſt of their Artillery, became a Prey to the Confederates.

They

Digitized by Google

They indeed acquitted themſelves ſhamefully, and fled, with great Precipitation, like frighted Sheep; inſomuch, that I ſaw one of their beſt (called the King's) Regiment, compoſed of four Battallions, lay down their Arms like Paltroons, and ſurrender themſelves Priſoners of War. In ſhort, they all left the Field with infinite Diſgrace, except Lord *Clare*'s, which ingaged with a *Scotch* Regiment in the *Dutch* Service, betweeen whom there was great Slaughter; that Nobleman having loſt two hundred and eighty-nine private Centinels, twenty-two commiſſioned Officers, and fourteen Sergeants; yet they not only ſaved their Colours, but gained a Pair from the Enemy, which we may ſuppoſe the *Scotch* did not fare much better than the *Iriſh*. Ours did not engage, but about three o'Clock, the whole Brigade was ordered on, and having got within Piſtol-ſhot, we were commanded to face to the Right about, and retire.

We had not got forty Yards in our Retreat, when (by ſome means I know not) the Word *(ſave qui peut) fly that can*, went through great Part, if not the whole Army, and put all in Confuſion: Then might be ſeen whole Brigades running in Diſorder, the Enemy purſuing almoſt cloſe at our Heels, and with Regularity. Thus circumſtanced, we went on until we came to a ſmall Rivulet, where was a Ford, in paſſing which we were Waiſt-high; and the Enemy having advanced nearer, ſome Grenadiers poured ſeveral Platoons in amongſt us, which we returned in the beſt Manner we were able. At this Time I diſcovered my Captain in the Water among the Croud, I went with ſome Difficulty to help him out; and being a light ſlender Man, I lifted him up in my Arms, and ſet him on the Bank. The Left-hand Colonel having ſeen what paſt, congratulated him on the Danger he had eſcaped by my Aſſiſtance, and was pleaſed to

Digitized by Google

compliment me on the Zeal I ſhewed in ſaving my Benefactor's Life, at the Hazard of my own. His Friendſhip for me daily increaſed after this, and I gained Ground alſo in the Eſteem of all the Officers of our own as well as other Regiments, who heard the Story. Having waded the Ford, we contrived our March pretty faſt up a gradual Aſcent.

Though the Enemy appeared no more that Night, yet we never halted until Break of Day, near *Louvain*, when we croſſed the River diſpirited and weary, having been on our Feet twenty-four Hours without the leaſt Reſt. It was indeed a Sight truly ſhocking to ſee the miſerable Remains of this mighty Army, which the Day before conſiſted of 70,000 Men reduced to a handful; ſuch Havock does the Ambition of Princes make.

Next Morning 10,000 Sacks of Flower were thrown into the *Dile*, to prevent its falling into the Hands of the Conquerors, the *French* having neither Courage nor Leiſure to carry it off. At ten we marched with the ſhattered Remains of our Troops to *Bruſſels*, in the Neighbourhood of which we remained ten Days; during which we were detached to every Place where there was the leaſt Probability of the confederate Army's approaching us, to fell Trees, and by other means obſtruct the Roads. Now the Army increaſed, by the coming in of Stragglers, to near thirty thouſand, which it hardly exceeded the reſt of the Campaign.

From *Bruſſels*, we marched through *Ghent* and *Oudenard* to *Tournay*, where the Army was diſperſed in the ſtrong Towns, *Menin*, *Liſle*, *&c.* and about ten thouſand remained in *Tournay*, of which Number our Regiment made one. Here I took up my Quarters at a Houſe of Entertainment, where was a good Ordinary. The Landlord had three Daughters reputed handſome: I addreſſed the

Digitized by Google

the eldeſt, as being of moſt conſequence in the Houſe. My Flame affected at firſt an Indifference, but I had ſome Reaſons to think it but a Copy of her Countenance, either to try my Sincerity, or ſee how I could bear a Rival; ſhe, in conſequence of this, encouraged a *German* Lieutenant. One Day returning home, I found him ſitting in Company with the three Siſters, and, as I thought, too cloſe to my Miſtreſs. It would have paſſed for Coolneſs in me, if I had not reſented ſuch Familiarity, and he might attribute it to my Want of Courage, both which I was reſolved to prevent, it being a military Maxim not to ſuffer a Rival, though the Love be not real; I therefore ſeated myſelf down, and appeared more uneaſy then I really was, which cauſed ſome Mirth, and a few dry Jokes at my Expence: Upon which I told this Man of War, that I had ſome Pretenſions to the Lady, and was reſolved to aſſert them, adviſing him civilly to ſpare himſelf the Trouble of any future Viſit. He aſked (with a loud Laugh) if I knew whom I talked to? I anſwered, Yes, and would let him know who talked to him, at the ſame Time ſtriking him over the Face. He put his Hand to his Sword; I propoſed taking a Walk without the Gates, as quarrelling in Garriſon was forbid: He readily accepted it, and out we went. After having gone about a Quarter of a League, he propoſed, that at the firſt drawing of Blood, the Perſon wounded ſhould, at our Return, reſign all Pretenſions to the Lady. I agreed, and immediately we drew, and in a trice I diſarmed him. I aſked him, if he thought that equal to the firſt Blood? He anſwered me in the negative, though I had it in my Power to draw it without Danger, as he had no Sword; but I obſerved to him, I ſcorned to gain the Prize in ſo ungenerous a Manner, and returned him his Sword, deſiring him to defend himſelf, which he really did

Digitized by Google

pretty ſmartly, and we exchanged ſeveral Thruſts, till at laſt I had the good Fortune to wound him ſlightly in the Sword Arm. Then I demanded of him, if he was ſatisfied to ſtand to the Terms, or if he would proceed farther. To which he replied, that he would contend no longer with ſo generous an Enemy, but relinquiſh according to Agreement; and ſo we came back lovingly together to our Company, who were in no ſmall Concern for us. There was a Surgeon ſent for to dreſs his Wound, in whoſe Preſence my Antagoniſt took the Fair-One by the Hand, and delivered her to me. She ſeemed in ſome Degree concerned, though, in reality, ſhe valued herſelf highly, for being thought an Object worth contending for. Thus ended this Love-quarrel, and I had no more Rivals (at leaſt to my Knowledge) whilſt I ſtaid here.

Soon after this, the Duke of *Marlborough* laid Siege to *Menin*, and ordered a general Forage to be made towards *Tournay*. The Governor of that Town having Notice of it, commanded the Garriſon to keep in readineſs to march at an Hour's Warning. His Spies having brought Intelligence, that the Chain was poſted to cover the Foragers, he directed the Grenadiers and Pickets, as well as the Cavalry, to march with Paterro's, and ſome Field-pieces to follow, and ſtrong Detachments to ſupport in Caſe of need, himſelf being at the Head of them. They proceeded boldly to attack the Enemy, and an obſtinate Engagement enſued, ſeveral being killed and wounded on both Sides; but at laſt we prevailed, broke their Chain, and got a conſiderable Booty of Horſes, beſides many Priſoners, ſome of Note; the Chief of whom was General *Cadogan*.

In this Action, my Captain received a ſlight Wound in the Neck, and we had two Grenadiers of our Company killed, beſide ſome wounded.

My

Digitized by Google

My Proportion amounted to about three Piſtoles, though every Man not ſo much.

Soon after this, there happened a ſtrange and unlucky Adventure in the Town, which I cannot omit relating, as I was in ſome Meaſure concerned in it. Here were thirteen of us, all Friends, and Bottle Companions, merry-making together, two of the moſt intimate (both Officers in the ſame Regiment) fell out, as is often the Caſe, about a Trifle next to nothing, nor could either be appeaſed without fighting; this Humour unhappily drew in the reſt, ſome declaring for one Side, ſome the other. It was at laſt agreed, that at the Opening of the Gates we ſhould walk out to decide the Matter at the Points of our Swords; and ſoon after hearing the Drums beat the *Revallie*, all began to rouſe their Spirits, and thought leſs of the diſmal Conſequence that followed; we went towards the Gate to the Number of thirteen.

Here ſomething odd, as humorous, happened, for going to the appointed Place, we met one Monſieur *de la Sall*, a Lieutenant of Grenadiers, who was well acquainted with us all. He inſiſted on knowing our Deſtination, and what we were about, which being told, and obſerving there were but thirteen, ſaid, the Party was unequal, that there muſt be ſeven to ſix, or ſomebody go home, which he ſwore he would prevent, by making one to produce an Equality; that he could not, nor would, ſee ſo many of his Friends ingaged in a Cauſe of Honour, and be an idle Spectator. Thus this whimſical Gentleman, inſtead of endeavouring to ſoften Matters, added Fewel to Fire. As we were approaching the Place of Action, ſome propoſed to the two Principals to put an End to the Diſpute; and I was at the ſame time ſpeaking to *la Sall* (the laſt Comer) on the ſame Subject, who laughed heartily, and with a loud Voice, cried

Digitized by Google

out, (*puiſque le vinn eſt tire il fault le boire*) that is *Since the Wine is drawn, it muſt be drank*; to which I anſwered, if it muſt be ſo, he and I muſt touch Glaſſes together; to which he chearfully agreed, at the ſame Time embracing me: By this time we reached the fatal Place, where an Accommodation was propoſed again, but in vain. Upon which we drew up in two Ranks, ſeven againſt ſeven; and it was agreed, that *la Salle* ſhould give the Word to draw, which he did chearfully and audibly. The Fight began, every Man tilting at his Opponent, and the two Principals engaged; and in a ſhort time killed each other: There was another loſt on the Part for which I fought, and ſome wounded on both Sides; and I had the good Fortune to wound and diſarm Monſieur *de la Salle*. Thus ended this unchriſtian and bloody Skirmiſh, to the Shame, Scandal and Confuſion of all thoſe who were unthinkingly concerned.

When the Conflict was at an End, three more and myſelf went off for *Liſle*, and remained there for ſome Time, till we were certainly informed that the Thing was connived at, having been conſidered only as the Reſult of Drunkenneſs. Convinced of the Truth of this, we returned to *Tournay*, and heard little more of the matter; I went directly to ſee Monſieur *de la Salle*, who was now almoſt recovered of his Wound, being but ſlight: He expreſſed his Joy at ſeeing me, but was under the greateſt Concern that he had not joined me in my Endeavours to make up that unhappy Quarrel.

My Baron was much diſpleaſed at my Conduct in this Affair, and looked with ſome Coolneſs at me for ſome Time; however, it ſoon vaniſhed, and we were as good Friends as ever: Soon after, our firſt Lieutenant (who had been an old Partizan) having received Intelligence that the Duke

of

Digitized by Google

of *Marlborough* had ordered a Bridge of Boats to be laid acroſs the *Scheld*, for the more convenient graſing the Train Horſes in the Meadows on the *Tournay* Side of that River, applied to the Governor to get a Commiſſion or Paſs for himſelf, a Lieutenant, and five-and-thirty Men, to make an Excurſion on the Enemy. He ſucceeded, adopting me his Lieutenant; in two Days after we marched out about the Duſk, and came to a Wood not far from the Bridge, where we had a full View of the Cattle, but could make no Advantage, though we remained there four Days, daily ſending out our Guide to get Intelligence, who had often, on other Occaſions, gone into the Enemy's Camp in diſguiſe; and at this Time went to the very Bridge, ſold them Eggs, and brought us Word that all the Horſes were chained and ſtrongly guarded; ſo that nothing was to be expected from that Quarter. Then we marched two Leagues farther in hopes of better News, and repaired to a ſmall Village not far diſtant from the Enemy to get ſome Refreſhment. The Inhabitants informed us (perhaps in order to affright) that ſtrong Detachments of Horſe came often that Way; ſo we marched off, and returned to the Wood, reſolving to remain a few Days more, in hopes of meeting ſomething worth while, our Guide giving us Incouragement, and daily going out to make Diſcoveries. At length, the third Day after our Return to the Wood, he came in a great Hurry, bidding us follow him, alledging that there was a ſtrong Detachment of *Dutch* Horſe directing their March this Way; and that if they advanced half a League farther, they would fall a ſure Prey to us. We followed, and he led us to a ſmall Wood on a Hill, through which was a Road in Depth Five-and-twenty Feet, and about forty Perches in length. Here we called a Council, in which was agreed

to

Digitized by Google

to divide into two Parties, the one to be conducted by the Commander, the other by me; and thus to line both Sides of the Way, obſerving a profound Silence; and if the Enemy ſhould come, all to continue quiet till they were got to the Middle of the hollow Way, when Notice was to be given by our Chief firing a ſingle Shot; and who was immediately after to repair with ten Men to oppoſe their Paſſage at the End of the Road through which they were to march, whilſt I was to go with the like Number to the other Extremity, to prevent them if they ſhould attempt to turn about, which in fact they did, but were prevented by my ſhooting the firſt Horſe, which fell acroſs the Road, and in a great Meaſure prevented the reſt from coming that Way: our Commander having killed another in the Front, produced the like Effect on his Side: In the mean time there was a briſk Firing from both Sides of the Paſſage, with Orders however not to kill the Men, unleſs they returned the Salute, which they did not; ſo our People ordered them to diſmount, offered good Quarters, which if they did not accept, ſhould be put to the Sword. They inſtantly obeyed, and were conducted by four at a time to the Wood, where the Strings and Buttons of their Breeches were cut, and Hands tied with their own Garters. All being thus ſecured, (the Officers excepted, who gave their Parole) we then proceeded to bring up the Horſes, and linked them by tens, ſo that one Man could eaſily lead ſeveral; and thus with our Booty, and Priſoners, we marched in Triumph to *Tournay*.

I do not mention this as an Inſtance either of the Courage of thoſe on my own Side, or of the Cowardice of the Enemy, we having ſurpriſed them in a Situation which rendered a Defence impoſſible; nor could they judge of our Inferiority, which however would have availed them but little. The Booty

Digitized by Google

Booty consisting of one hundred Men, and Non-commissioned Officers, a Captain, two Lieutenants, one hundred Horses, besides Arms and Accoutrements, did not amount in the Whole to more than three hundred and twenty-five Pistoles, the greater Part of which was the Ransom of the Troopers, at two Pistoles *per* Man, and the Officers in proportion, the Horses being sold at about the twentieth Part of their Value, some at ten Livres, fifteen at most; the Captain's Horse and Furniture for sixty-five. Every thing being disposed of, and Deductions made, each private Man shared about five Pistoles; my Proportion amounted to twenty.

Soon after the taking of *Menin* by the Duke of *Marlborough*, the *French* marched some Troops to form a Camp near *Armentiers*, between *Lisle* and and *Ypres*, in order to cover that Part of the Country; and our Regiment was of the Number. Here we spent the Remainder of the Campaign, nothing happening worth Notice; for at the latter End of *October*, Orders came for the Army to march into Winter Quarters.

Baron *Drake*, my Patron, notified to me at this Time an Intention of laying down his Commission, and going into the Emperor's Service, whither he invited me to go and partake of his good or bad Fortune: I thanked him, but said, I intended trying my Fortune at Sea; at which he smiled, and wished me better Fortune on that Element than I had met with at Land.

The same Day the Camp broke up, the Baron took me with him to the Colonel's, where, without Ceremony or Apology, he laid down his Commission, and got me my Discharge, and we both set out immediately for *Tournay*. Here he continued a Week to settle his Affairs, and sent off his Equipage to *Brussels*, which he soon followed, taking a friendly Farewel. I remained some

Digitized by Google

ſome time at *Tournay*, and lodged at the before-mentioned Public-houſe with my Girl, until the Middle of *November*, and then went to *Dunkirk*.

Here I inquired if any Privateer was fitting out, and in order to be better informed, I went to an Ordinary, where moſt of the Officers of thoſe Ships of War reſorted, and fell into Diſcourſe with ſeveral, without informing them of my Intention. I dined with them every Day, and by that Means I got well acquainted with moſt of them, particularly one *Quierroret*, a clever young Fellow, reputed brave, and no leſs fortunate, having taken ſeveral rich Prizes. We had then a ſmall Ship fitting out, and almoſt ready to ſail. I often converſed with him on the Subject of Privateering; in the Praiſe of which he was not very laviſh, notwithſtanding his good Fortune: He aſked me, if I had ever been in that Way? I anſwered that I never was. This happened at the Cloſe of the Year 1706.

CHAP. XIII.

AT the ſame Time, the Captain, with ſome other Friends, informed me they intended ſoon to ſail, that there was an *Engliſh* Fleet of Merchant Ships to rendezvous in the *Downs*; that they were deſigned for the *Weſt-Indies* under Convoy of ſome Men of War, until they were ſuppoſed out of Danger; but that notwithſtanding he made no doubt of picking up one of them before they paſt *Portſmouth*. This a little ſurpriſed me, but hearing much of his Gallantry, I made no doubt of what he alledged: He added, that he had fifty reſolute Men, full of Spirits, who feared no Danger, and that he wanted nothing to compleat him but a Perſon who could ſpeak *Engliſh*: At this Time he knew nothing of my

Digitized by Google

my underſtanding that Language. I told him I knew one for his Purpoſe, who would be glad to enter with him on good Terms; that he indeed was a Stranger to Sea Affairs, but would in other Reſpects prove a good Hand. He inquired if he might not ſee him; I told him he had done that often, and that I was the Man. After ſome Pauſe, he deſired to know if I was in earneſt; and I aſſured him I was willing to venture a Voyage, if I liked the Terms. Upon which he offered to appoint me his ſecond Lieutenant, which I declined accepting, on account of my Unexperience in maritime Affairs, having always been in the Land Service. He aſſured me, I ſhould not be troubled with Sea Buſineſs; but that he thought me capable of heading a Parcel of brave Fellows in boarding a Ship, which wanted little, beſide Activity and Reſolution; neither of which he believed I wanted. I thanked him for his good Opinion; aſſuring him, that if I engaged, I ſhould uſe my Endeavour to deſerve it. We parted, and next Morning he called at my Lodging, and aſked, if I was ſtill in the privateering Humour; I aſſured him I was, and only wanted to be certain of the Footing I was to be on. He informed me, that he propoſed going to the Admiralty that very Day about his own Commiſſion, and meant to have me Captain of the Volunteers on board his Ship, which would intitle me to four Shares, himſelf having but ſix: So we agreed, and he invited me to Breakfaſt at a Public-houſe on the Quays: I ſuppoſe he carried me thither to know how well I could ſpeak *Engliſh*, the Man of the Houſe being of that Nation; I had a good deal of Chat with him in that Language, which mightily pleaſed the Captain; after Breakfaſt, he deſired me to give him my Name in Writing, which I did; and he informed me that he was going to the Admiralty about what he had

Digitized by Google

had ſpoke of, and at Dinner-time I ſhould hear more. We met, and he obſerved to me, that every thing went according to his Wiſhes; that our Commiſſions were ordered to be filled, and in three Days we were to go and receive them. The Time being come, we went to the Admiralty, paid the Fees, and received our Commiſſions, and were very merry with our Companions.

Two Days after, there happened an unlucky Accident that had well nigh put a Stop to my Expedition. I went into a Tavern kept by a Man, who had three Years before been a Sergeant in the ſame Regiment with me, to take a Glaſs, and a Farewel before I embarked. Here I unfortunately met by chance a Woman, who had more Beauty than Virtue, with whom I began to frolick. In the midſt of our Dalliance, there entered a ſmart young Officer, who ſeemed much out of humour at our Freedoms, and at once bid me to unhand the Lady, or he would oblige me: I civilly aſked him, if ſhe was his Wife or Siſter? He anſwered me neither, hitting me a ſharp Slap on the Cheek: Upon which I tripped up his Heels, which ſtruck his Head againſt the Stones: The Landlord, and the reſt of the Company hearing the Noiſe, came in and prevented farther Miſchief for the preſent; however, we had ſufficient Opportunity of ſpeaking, and appointed to meet next Morning at eight o'Clock on the Parade, to decide this Difference. He had not Patience to wait the Time; for at ſeven he came to my Lodging, knocked at my Chamber-door, and aſked if I was aſleep? I anſwered that I was up and dreſſed, and expreſſed my Concern that he gave himſelf the Trouble of coming, for I intended a moſt punctual Obſervance of Time and Place; but that the Hour was not as yet come. That is true, ſaid he, but that inaſmuch as Men often forget what they promiſe over Night, he came to rub up

Digitized by Google

up my Memory. I thanked, and told him, mine was very good. So we walked out, in order to wait the Opening of the Gates; when he aſked, which we ſhould go out at, I ſaid it was indifferent to me; but however I named one. He objected, from a Poſſibility of my having ſome ill Deſign in it, which gave me a very bad Opinion of him; then he nominated one in his Turn, and I refuſed for the Reaſon before alledged. At laſt, the Point being ſettled, to the Satisfaction of both, we pitched upon a convenient Place, where having made ſeveral Paſſes at each other, he retired a little, and in his Retreat fell againſt a ſmall Sand Hill. I put my Sword under my Arm, and bid him riſe; we engaged a ſecond Time, and I ſoon diſarmed him, promiſing however notwithſtanding his Behaviour to reſtore his Sword in Town, where the Diſpute began, if he thought proper to meet me there. He earneſtly entreated that I would not expoſe him, offering to aſk Pardon publickly, if I required it, or give me any other Satisfaction I ſhould deſire.

As he was an Officer, I was unwilling to expoſe him, ſo returned him his Weapon, and we walked in ſeeming Friendſhip together, until we came within Sight of the Centinels; when all on a ſudden, whilſt I turned my Head, he drew, which I fortunately perceived, and flew back, before he had time to make his Thruſt: I drew alſo, and made at him, reſolving to have his Life, as a Puniſhment for his Perfidy, or die in the Attempt; ſo attacked him with uncommon Fury, and in a ſhort time ran him through the Body. This done, I made all imaginable Haſte to Town, went to my Captain, and told him what had happened, who adviſed me to take Boat, and go directly on board.

I embarked immediately, and the Captain ſoon followed, and informed me, he heard nothing of my Adventure, except from myſelf; but that it

was

Digitized by Google

was rumoured about Town, that there was an Officer found on the Sands who had been killed, as was ſuppoſed, in a Duel; and that a Sergeant and ſome Soldiers were ſent to bring the Corps to Town. He immediately gave Directions to prepare for ſailing, and about eight o'Clock that Night we weighed Anchor, intending, with the Bleſſing of God, to reach the *Britiſh* Coaſt by the Dawn; but in leſs than two Hours, the Wind chopped about, and blew ſo hard, that it was next to a Storm, ſo that we were driven back to the *French* Shore, and with Difficulty made the Port of *Calais*, very much ſhattered in our Rigging, beſide other Damages.

Early next Morning, we got to the Quays, and ſent for proper People to repair our Veſſel; and here we lay along-ſide a ſmall *Engliſh* Ship that came ſome time before for the Exchange of Priſoners. The Maſter and Sailors viewed us very narrowly, during the two Days they ſtaid, after our Arrival, which proved of very bad Conſequence to us, as ſhall be told in its proper Place. Here we ſtaid about a Week to repair our Damage, during which ſeveral Plans of Operation were propoſed, and at laſt the following concluded on; that as ſoon as every thing was ready, the Wind permitting, we ſhould ſail in the Evening, and paſs *Dover* by Day-break, under *Engliſh* Colours; that as ſoon as we got in Sight of the Fleet, we ſhould keep between it and the Shore, and on the Turn of the Tide, drop our Anchor Peek, and never appear more than three Hands on Deck, to prevent Suſpicion; and if the Fleet ſhould ſail to accompany them, and pitch upon one of the beſt Sailors, to keep her in View until Night, and then make up and board her at once; ſo turn our own Ship adrift, and ſail with the Prize for *Dunkirk*.

This being agreed on, we ſailed full of Hopes towards the *Land of Promiſe*, but ſoon to the *Houſe* of

Digitized by Google

of Bondage. For early the next Morning finding ourſelves between *Dover* and *Deal*, in full Sight of our Wiſhes, under Convoy of ſeveral Ships of War, we ſailed, as agreed on, until we came under *Sand Down Caſtle*, between *Deal* and *Dover*. Here we dropped Anchor, being becalmed, and the Tide againſt us, and remained three Hours unſuſpected, when there appeared at the Point between us and *Dover*, two Sail of ſmall Craft. The Captain called me on Deck, aſking me what I thought of them? To which I anſwered, that it was probable they were laden with Stores or Proviſion for ſome of the Fleet; if ſo, they might prove a good and eaſy Prize; but he was of opinion they were only Fiſhermen, and ſo we dropped it. On ſeeing us, they immediately caſt Anchor, and we ſaw one of them put a Couple of Hands into their Boat, and rowing to the other, took two more, and made towards us.

The Captain and I then agreed, if we could get them on board us, under Pretence of wanting their Aſſiſtance, to ſecure them, and if they were not Fiſhermen, to find out what their Cargo conſiſted on, and if worth while to make Prize of them. But we reckoned without our Hoſt, for as ſoon as they came within fifteen or twenty Fathoms, they rode round, and viewed us very narrowly, aſking from whence we were, and whither bound? I told them from *Torbay*; that we intended for *London*. They inquired what we were laden with? I anſwered Pewter and Lead; that if they would give us a Tow they ſhould be well rewarded: They refuſed, made to the Shore as faſt as they could, and immediately alarmed the Caſtle. Soon after, there was a Flag hoiſted, and ſeveral Canon Shots diſcharged at us, but lying low, we received no Injury, the Balls paſſing over us. After this, the *Ruby*, on board of which was Commodore

Digitized by Google

Bartlet, hung out her Flag of Order, and the other Men of War ſent their Boats to receive Directions; ſo that we had no Room to doubt of our being diſcovered: We hawled up our Anchor, and endeavoured to get off by means of our Oars, it being a ſtark Calm; but we put ourſelves to an idle Trouble; for as faſt as we got from the Shore, the Tide carried us towards the Fleet, and we could plainly ſee the Men of War manning their Long-boats, Pinnaces, and Yauls, and ſome of them already making towards us. When they came ſufficiently near, they fired their Swivels; upon which we ſtruck our *Engliſh*, and hoiſted *French* Colours, crying, *Vive le Roy* (Long live the King); and ſoon after ſaluted them with a Volley of Shot, which did ſome Execution, the Boatſwain of the *Ruby* being killed, and a Trumpeter, with ſome others wounded, as we were informed after. By this Time, a great many more came up and ſurrounded us, and we exchanged ſeveral Shot to little Purpoſe; for as they were ſure of us, they kept at a proper Diſtance, to prevent the Effuſion of Blood. At laſt, there was a Privateer of twelve Guns, towed by Boats, filled with armed Men from *Deal*, at whom we fired ſeveral Times, and wounded ſome of their People: Soon after, they gave us a Broadſide, which made great Slaughter, having had fifteen killed, beſide ſome wounded; ſo that not having the leaſt Proſpect of eſcaping, we ſtruck, and became Priſoners.

Though the Privateer did the Work, the *Ruby* Yawl, on board of which was a Lieutenant, took Poſſeſſion of the Prize, and we all were ſtripped, Officers not excepted. The Surgeon hearing that I ſpoke *Engliſh*, took me to his Cabin, and aſked me of what Country I was? I informed him, adding, that I went to *France* with King *James*'s Army after the Siege of *Limerick*. This, I ſuppoſe, raiſed

Digitized by Google

raiſed the Curioſity of the Lieutenant; for on hearing it, he ſent for me, and aſked ſeveral Queſtions about *Ireland*, which I anſwered to the beſt of my Knowledge. He then ordered me ſome Refreſhment, and indeed treated me very kindly in other Reſpects. The Doctor then took me to his Apartment a ſecond Time, gave me a Pair of Shoes and Stockings, for I had been ſtripped of my own, and behaved very humanely while I was aboard.

Soon after, Orders were given to man the Boats, and carry the Priſoners to *Deal*, except the *Iriſhman*, who was immediately put in the Bilboes; ſo I took my laſt Leave of Captain *Quierroret*, and my *French* Companions. I was accordingly ironed, and the next Day, in the Preſence of Captain *Bartlet*, underwent a long and ſtrict Examination; the Purport of which was committed to Writing, and ſent to *London*. This Day I was told, that one of the Veſſels which appeared to us the Morning before, was the Ship that was at *Calais* for the Exchange of Priſoners; and that they were laden, the one with Cables and Anchors, and the other with Proviſions, for the Uſe of the Fleet, which if we had known, would have proved a fine Booty, for ſo ſhort a Voyage. Next Day, I went on Deck with my Centry, and was not a little ſurpriſed at the fine Appearance of the Men of War, and the Merchant Ships, with their Streamers and Colours diſplayed. Inquiring the Reaſon, they told me, it was the Queen's Birth-day. At Noon, the Artillery of the Fleet was diſcharged, and anſwered by repeated Volleys from the Shore, and the Sailors were plentifully ſupplied with their favourite Liquor Flip, of which I had my Proportion, in Conſequence of the Captain's Direction. Soon after, ſailing Orders being come, the Fleet proceeded on their intended Voyage with a fair Wind,

Digitized by Google

until they anchored at *Spithead*, when immediately the Barge was manned to carry me on board the *Royal Ann*, lying in *Portſmouth* Harbour.

There was I delivered to the proper Officers, and again put in the Bilboes; and the Corporal, whoſe Duty it was to perform this Office, was, as I was informed, an avowed Enemy to the *Iriſh* Nation; for he brought and put on me a Pair of Shackles much too ſmall, which conſequently pierced me ſeverely; and complaining of ſuch inhuman Treatment, he ſaid they were too large as well as too good for any of my Countrymen. In a little Time my Ancle began to ſwell, and in leſs than an Hour the Fleſh was near half an Inch over the Fetter: The Corporal was told, and upbraided with his Cruelty, but to no purpoſe, for the Wretch was a Stranger to Pity as well as Shame; but a young *Iriſh* Lad, who was one of the Cabin Boys, looking at me with an Eye of Tenderneſs in that miſerable Condition, informed the Lieutenant of my Sufferings, who immediately both viſited and gave me ample Satisfaction, by ordering the Corporal to be treated in the ſame manner to bear me Company, declaring he ſhould remain there as long as I ſtaid in the Ship; and indeed he was as good as his Word. This Man being my Fellow-ſufferer, was of no ſmall Advantage to me; for the Place of our Confinement was the Captain's Kitchen; and whenever a Joint of Meat was dreſſed, he was not forgotten, the Cook preſenting him with a Plate of it; which, to do the Brute Juſtice, he ſhared with me. Thus I lived on the beſt during my Stay in the Ship, having moreover Plenty of Punch, never touching the Ship's Allowance.

The latter End of *February*, there came two of the Queen's Meſſengers, with Orders from Court, to carry me to *London*, which releaſed me from

Digitized by Google

from my Bilboes, but the Corporal ſtill detained for ſome conſiderable Time afterwards. Thus my Feet were ſet at Liberty, but they provided a Pair of Hand-cuffs in their ſtead, fixed them on me, and the next Day we ſet out in a Waggon for *London*. At Meals indeed they took off my Menacles, and treated me on the Road. I ſhall not trouble my Reader with a minute Detail of my Journey till my Arrival there, but cannot omit telling him of an Accident that happened near *Guilford*, where going down a ſteep Hill, the Waggon was overturned, indeed quite inverted, and the Paſſengers, ten in Number, buried under the Packs, and other Goods, yet they providentially received no Hurt, except myſelf, who was ſlightly bruiſed on my Arm, by the Preſſure of my Hand-cuffs. We lay at *Guilford* that Night, and next Day proceeded on our Journey to *London*.

Being arrived at the Inn where the Waggon put up in *Southwark*, I was conducted ſtrait to the *Marſhalſea* Priſon, and delivered to the Keeper, the Meſſengers wiſhing me a good Night. The Turnkeys judged by my Appearance that I had no Money, ſo without farther Ceremony ſhewed me an Apartment called the *Pump-ward*, a Room for Admiralty Priſoners, who cannot pay for Beds. Here I was thruſt in, and locked up without Fire, Candle, or indeed any Neceſſaries, and in ſhort nothing to protect from the Inclemency of the Weather, having only the bear Boards to lie on.

Thus I paſt the Night, from ſix until eight the next Morning, when a Perſon came to unlock me, without ſpeaking a Word. There was a Pump at my own Room Door, from which I ſuppoſe the Place had its Name; where, when the Door was opened, I drank heartily, and returned to my Cell, paſſing the whole Day without Refreſhment or Viſitor,

Digitized by Google

ſitor, until Evening, when the Fellow locked me up.

Next Morning, one of the Meſſengers came to ſee me, and aſſure me I ſhould receive the Admiralty Allowance (Four-pence *per Diem*) but that the Court would not ſit for ſome Days; and then I ſhould be paid weekly. I remonſtrated to him how I had fared ſince our parting, he bid me follow him to the Woman who kept the Cellars; he deſired her to let me have Bread, Cheeſe and Drink to the Amount of Four-pence *per* Day, and he would ſee her paid. Her Anſwer was, ſhe would not ſave my Life, at the Expence of a Manchet, for I was an *Iriſhman*; ſo he went away without another Word, and I retired to my Apartment, having no other Suſtenance but pure Element. I may truly ſay, I never was ſo near ſtarving as at this Juncture; however, in the End, I ſufficiently raked my Vengeance on Mrs. *Dickering* (that was her Name) as ſhall be immediately related.

The following Morning I was called by one of the Turnkeys, who informed me there was a Gentleman wanted me. I went, and he inquired my Name, as well as ſeveral Queſtions relating to my Family, and in what Part of *Ireland* they lived; all which I anſwered. He then ordered a Hot-pot, and deſcended to a more particular Inquiry, as how many Brothers I had? On my telling their Names, he ſaid he knew one of them, and on his Account would do any thing in his Power to ſerve me. I had much Reaſon to ſuppoſe him ſincere in his Profeſſion; for he preſented me with a Crown-piece, and when I mentioned my long Faſt, he ordered me ſome Bread and Cheeſe, at the ſame Time, adviſing and condoling me. At taking Leave, he ſaid he would ſoon ſee me again, and I returned him my moſt unfeigned Thanks for his great Goodneſs.

Digitized by Google

neſs. No ſooner was he gone, than I began to think how I ſhould manage my Money with Frugality, and get it changed unknown to thoſe Harpies the Turnkeys. In order to this, I conſulted with a *Scotchman*, who made as mean an Appearance as myſelf, was confined for Debt, and well knew the Ways of the Priſon. I told him I wanted ſomething to eat for little Money, and deſired to know, if he could direct me how to come at it. Upon which he recommended to me a Woman in the Neighbourhood, who agreed to let me have half a Sheep's Head, and a Porringer of Soop for five Farthings. This furniſhed me with an Opportunity of living cheap, and changing the Piece: I invited the poor Man to dine, which he looked on as an ample Reward for the Service he had done me.

Whilſt we were thus comfortably enjoying ourſelves, I was called to the Lodge, which gave me Hope that my Gentleman, or ſomebody elſe had ſent for me; but great was the Surprize, when I found it was only to compliment me with a ponderous Pair of Fetters, which were directly clapped on. I could not account for this ſudden Change: It was as I conjectured, the Gentleman whom I thought my Friend, was nothing leſs than a Spy from the Government, which I need not ſay deſtroyed him in my good Opinion. At four that Evening, he came, and ſeeing me bolted, inquired the Reaſon, of which when I ſaid I was a Stranger, he told me he would go and inquire; and leaving me, I obſerved the Tears in his Eyes.

Next Day, I was called to the Lodge, where I found the Keeper (whom I had not ſeen before) dreſſed like a Perſon of Diſtinction, and was not a little ſurpriſed at being put into a Coach with him and his Clerk. This was by Order from above, to carry me to

Digitized by Google

Doctor's Commons. Here I was set down at a Publick-house, where my Friend had gone before me; and I underwent a strict Examination: Many of the Questions proposed were answered by the Gentleman, until my going from *Limerick* to *France*: From that Time I gave an Account of myself to the Time of my being taken, *&c.* This finished, I was lead by the proper Officers to the Commons, where the Whole was read in the Presence of the Court; and being asked if I had signed that Paper, on Inspection I owned it.

Now I was dismissed, and delivered to the Keeper, and my Protector demanding of him, if I might have a Room? was answered, Yes, on paying for it. I was then shewed a Petition, which he had got drawn in my Behalf, and he told me he intended to deliver it to Prince *George* of *Denmark*, who was Lord High Admiral; that it was to be backed by some of the first Rank, and that he hoped it would soon be of Service to me; and having an Opportunity of speaking in private, he let me know he was my Brother *Patrick*, but bid me keep it a Secret until he should think proper to divulge it: He then furnished me with Money, bidding me not want for any thing, and that he would soon come to see me.

I suppose the Reader need not be informed what inward Joy I felt at so unexpected a Happiness: He took his Leave, and again spoke to the Keeper about the manner of my Accommodation, and then we returned to the *Marshalsea*. Coming there, Things began to look with another Aspect; the Clerk was sent for, and ordered to have a Room made ready. I sent for Coals and Candles, and employed a Woman to attend me. The Turnkeys began to address me with more Respect than before, and I was conducted to a decent Apartment. That Night I lay more comfortably, though not yet

Digitized by Google

yet rid of my Raggs and Chains; and the next Day my Brother, with ſome of his Friends, paid me a Viſit, and told me he had ordered proper Apparel to be provided, and gave me ſome Money, adviſing me at the ſame Time to ſound the Keeper, and by that Means know on what Terms I might expect to have the Bolts ſtruck off. In order to this, I applied firſt to the Turnkey, who notified it to Mr. *Darby* (the Keeper) and the Anſwer was, that it could not be done by any Means without an Order from the Government. This was, as I ſuppoſed, to get a greater Sum than I was willing or able to give; and it was dropped for that Time.

In two or three Days after, there was brought in a very handſome young Woman, not exceeding eighteen Years of Age, who ſpoke pretty good *French*. I made a ſlender Acquaintance with her, though I was but in a very mean Condition to make my Addreſſes to a Lady. She had been arreſted for fine Cloths, at the Suit of a Tallyman, who provided this Lodging for her, not making her weekly Payments according to Agreement. This I have mentioned, as I ſhall have frequent Occaſion to ſpeak of her hereafter, though indeed little to my Credit. I then received a Letter from my Brother, wherein he deſired to know, if I had done any thing in the Affair of my Irons; I informed him, intreating him not to give himſelf the leaſt Concern, or put himſelf to any Charges, for that I was young, able, and indeed willing to wear them, rather than he ſhould be at any Expence on that Account: Notwithſtanding he laboured much in my Service, and in ten Days made ſuch Intereſt as procured the Queen's Letter to the Commiſſioners of the ſick and wounded Office, requiring them to ſend for, examine me, and make a ſpeedy and favourable Report

Digitized by Google

Report to her Miniſters. On the Receipt of which, an Order was ſent to Mr. *Darby* to bring me to *Weſtminſter*, on a Day appointed for that Purpoſe; which being done, the Commiſſioners, in preſence of the Keeper, read her Majeſty's Letter, and then proceeded to Examination; which being ended, they told me, that on that Day Sevennight I muſt appear there again, and produce my Vouchers: I ſaid they were in the next Room, and might be heard now, if required; but they alledged, that all muſt be done according to Law; that my Friends muſt go before a Juſtice of Peace, make Affidavit of what they could ſay in my Behalf, and bring the ſame atteſted by the Magiſtrates before whom I was ſworn. I was then remanded back to Priſon, and the Keeper obſerving what had paſſed, ſeemed to make no doubt but I ſhould ſoon be at Liberty, and began to treat about my Fetters, ſaying, he could not intirely free, but would on reaſonable Terms eaſe me of one of them, when we had done with the Commiſſioners: To this I anſwered, that at preſent I was very eaſy, and ſhould talk on that Subject at another Time. On the Day fixed, I was conveyed to *Weſtminſter*, where my Brother attended, and ſome Queſtions being aſked, and the Affidavits read, the Keeper was ordered to take me back; and then promiſing, (according to the Queen's Command) to make a ſpeedy and favourable Report; but how they performed this, ſhall be ſeen hereafter.

Next Day, I had for a Guinea one of my Irons taken off, which left me rather in a worſe Condition than before; for it was only one of the Baſſils, which did not weigh above two Pounds out of thirty; ſo that I had on one Side, or Leg, twenty eight Pounds, which was very uneaſy to me. Soon after my Brother came, attended by a Porter, loaded with Cloaths, Linnen, *&c.* had me ſtripped, my

Digitized by Google

my Irons excepted, then powdered and dreſſed, which produced a great Difference in my Aſpect; inſomuch, that when I went to wait on my Brother to the Gate, the Priſoners were all in an Uproar, and crowded to ſee me, heaping Bleſſings on my Benefactor: Mrs. *Pickering* was ſitting in her Bar, and ſeemed much better reconciled to *Iriſhmen* than before; for ſhe courteouſly roſe from her Seat, dropped one of her beſt Curtſies to my Brother. I begged of him to come and take a parting Glaſs, to ſee how ſhe would behave: He complied, and I called for a Bottle of *Florence*, in which he drank to her, and ſhe pledged him civilly. At parting, he bid me call for any Thing I choſe; and ſhe ſaid very obligingly, that I ſhould be welcome to what her Cellar afforded: I would indeed have put her in mind of her refuſing to truſt me when ſtarving, but that I had a diſtant Proſpect in View, which did not deceive me.

Now being a Beau, I began to addreſs the young Woman, ſpoken of above, with more Freedom, whoſe Name was *Goodman*. I offered the Keeper, by my Brother's Direction, three Guineas to free me from the Irons, which he refuſed; I then requeſted of him to order the other Baſſil to be put on; for that I was much better with both. This he very readily granted, and I found my Account in it. Mrs. *Pickering* had in this Place two Bars, one on the Maſter's, the other on the common Side. She had alſo a third every *Friday*, it being a Court-Day, when Suits were determined by Sir *John Bennet*, who was Steward. While I remained in this Scene of Calamity, there were ſeldom leſs than three or four hundred Priſoners, ſometimes double that Number. Mrs. *Pickering* had two Aſſiſtants, the one her Siſter, the other a Niece of her Huſband; the latter much the handſomer, though the other's Vanity inclined her to think otherwiſe; and I in-

I indulged her in that Opinion, whenever I had a favourable Opportunity of talking to her; ſhe having, in her Siſter's Abſence, the chief Adminiſtration of Affairs: However, I likewiſe laid cloſe Siege to her Couſin, of which ſhe took Notice, and gave ſome broad Hints on that Score: On which I obſerved to her, that my ſpeaking to her Kinſwoman, was but to prevent any Suſpicion of the real Regard I entertained for herſelf; and that, if ſhe would conſult her Glaſs, ſhe muſt ſee immediately where the Preference lay. This went down glibb, and I practiced on the other in the ſame Manner, though with a little more Sincerity. Thus I made my Advances as Opportunity ſerved, and was well received; but Mrs. *Goodman*, with whom I could have more Freedom, gave them ſome Uneaſineſs, and ſhe privately reproached me with Inconſtancy, which put me a little to my Trumps: However, I ſoon reconciled her, and aſſured the other two, that my ſeeming Attachment to Mrs. *Goodman* was but to ſave Appearance, and prevent Suſpicion, requeſting them to behave civilly toward her. Thus I ſucceeded beyond my warmeſt Expectations, and Mrs. *Goodman* fared the better, growing daily more and more in Favour with them both: By this Stratagem we had all four a little Junquet at the Bar, without the leaſt Suſpicion; and as that Lady was preſent, theſe little Feaſts were thought to be at my Expence, and on her Account.

About this Time, my Brother, by the Intereſt of the Duke of *Grafton*, had procured an Order to be ſent by my Lord *Sunderland* to the Keeper, immediately to take off my Irons. Here my Readers may perhaps be deſirous of knowing how my Brother came to have ſuch Intereſt, which I ſhall inform them. He was Steward to the Earl of *Arlington*, whoſe Conſort was a *Dutch* Lady, Siſter to Lord *Aver-*

Digitized by Google

Overquerque, and Grandmother to his Grace the preſent Duke of *Grafton*. The Earl being dead, my Brother continued in the Counteſs's Service; and all the Steps taken in my Favour from firſt to laſt, were through her Means. This Mandate to the Keeper was a bitter Pill to ſwallow, he having ſome Time before refuſed three Guineas for that Indulgence; after which he became a moſt inveterate Enemy, always contriving to ruin my Influence in the Miniſtry, in which he too well ſucceeded. However, my Irons were taken off the *Sunday* after; being a Time of Leiſure, after Evening Service, I propoſed to Mr. and Mrs. *Pickering*, to give them at their Houſe, and a Couple of other Friends, a Bowl of Punch, for joy of what had happened; and Mrs. *Goodman* was to be of the Number: The two Couſins, who knew of this, and were really the firſt Propoſers of it, promiſed not to be out of the Way, and were as good as their Words; all of us being very merry, however not at my Expence. Mrs. *Pickering* furniſhed a cold Collation of Meat, and I ordered Oyſters, *&c.* ſo that we ſupped in an elegant Manner, and at Bed-time parted.

Here was one *King*, a Priſoner for Debt, a Barber by Trade, and a merry, artful Fellow. This Man attended me as a Servant, and I uſed him very civilly. He came one Day in a merry Mood, after putting a Letter I ſent to my Brother, in the Penny Poſt-Office, and told me that Mrs. *Sarah* (that was the Siſter's Name) would ſee whom the Letter was directed to, that he ſhowed it her, and then put it in the Box; and ſhe ſaid, ſhe was ſorry ſhe had not opened it. I promiſed him, that the next I ſent, he might gratify her Curioſity, which I believed, if managed prudently, would turn to his Account: Accordingly, I wrote two Letters, the one giving an Account of the Regard I had for Mrs.

Digitized by Google

Mrs. *Pickering*'s Sister, whom he had often seen sitting at the Bar, and my Intention of making my Addresses to her on honourable Terms, which I hoped he would not disapprove, being resolved not to do any thing without his Advice or Consent: The other was about real Business, and to be put into the Penny Post. The Fellow acted his Part both with Fidelity and Address; and after this Piece of pretended Treachery, put the real one into the Box, bringing me the other, which I immediately committed to the Flames: Thus was my Love confirmed, which gave her no small Pleasure, and the Barber grew into high Esteem with that Lady. There was at this Time a Widow, who was what they call a Prisoner at large; and she acted as House-keeper to Mrs. *Pickering*. This Woman had a fine Child of about two Years old, which I was very fond of, often carrying it about in my Arms, which the Mother took very kind: She generally kept the third Bar on the Court-days: One *Friday* she sent me Word, she wanted to speak to me, and going to her, she returned me many Thanks for my Tenderness to the Child, brought a Flask of *Florence*, and desired me to sit down by her in the Bar. This Freedom surprised me not a little, and I could not imagine what to think; when we drank, we touched Glasses, and she squeezed my Hand, which made me suppose I had added a third String to my Bow; she had often declared herself sorry for my Sufferings; and whenever we met, she expressed herself in Terms of Friendship. I treated her this Time with some Oysters, of which she was very fond, and at parting I offered to pay for the Wine, but she would not hear of it. We often took a Glass together after this, and one Day she asked me smiling, if I did not long for Liberty? I answered, that was not to be doubted: She then asked, if I should not

Digitized by Google

not think it a good Friend that would procure it for me? I ſaid, I could not have, nor deſire a better: Then ſhe ſaid, at our next Meeting, ſhe would tell me more, and perhaps ſhew me the Perſon; ſo we parted for that Time.

I often ſaw Mrs. *Sarah* and her Couſin *Jenny* as uſual, and Mrs. *Goodman* was ſeldom from one, or the other; this pleaſed me much, becauſe it gave me an Opportunity of viſiting them oftener than I durſt have done, if ſhe had not been preſent: Thus I paſt my Time agreeably, but longed to ſee Mrs. *Hughs*, for that was the Widow's Name, who was to procure me the Friend to ſet me at Liberty. One Day as I was diverting myſelf with the Infant, ſhe bid me not fail coming on the Morrow (which was Court-day) about two o'Clock, when the Family would be at Dinner, for that ſhe had earneſt Buſineſs with me; I promiſed not to fail, and next Day went according to Appointment. I ſat down in the Bar, and ſhe laid a ſmall Table with a Flaſk of *Florence*; and after a little Chat on ſome other Matters, ſhe ſaid, that on *Sunday*, when Mr. *Pickering*, and Family were gone to Church, I muſt come to the Houſe, and that ſhe would inform me of the Methods that were contrived for my Eſcape, in which I ſhould find no Difficulty. When I came there, I could hardly believe what I had heard, and made no doubt but ſhe had ſomething elſe in View, more than my Liberty; however, I ſaid I would not fail, and we ſtaid better than half an Hour together, drank our Wine, and parted. My Brother came the next Day to ſee me, and ſaid, the Commiſſioners were ſlow; that he had been often with them, and that in hopes to forward them, made Preſents of a Dozen of *Iriſh* Uſquebagh, and ſome *Tokay* Wine, but they ſtill put him off from Time to Time. I expreſſed myſelf ſorry at his having put himſelf to that Expence; that I thought, inſtead

Digitized by Google

inſtead of forwarding, it might retard them, in Expectation of more; and that the Queen's Commands muſt needs be obeyed, begging him to keep a cloſe Hand, that a few Weeks more or leſs would be no great Difference to me, and that I was very eaſy: I told him alſo what had paſſed between Mrs. *Hughs* and me, relating to my Eſcape, praying him to ſend ſome truſty Friend on *Monday*, by whom I might let him have a full Account of the Reſult of *Sunday*'s Meeting, *&c.* He deſired me to be very cautious in managing ſo tickliſh a Point, which might prove of ill Conſequence; but that he would not fail to ſend a proper Meſſenger; the Time being come, I went directly to the Rendezvous, where Mrs. *Hughs* was ready to receive me, and immediately introduced me to an elderly Gentlewoman, telling me, that ſhe and all her Family, as well as her ſelf, were Well-wiſhers to the Cauſe, and that I might ſpeak my Mind freely: We had a Bottle of mulled Wine, and ſome Cakes for Breakfaſt. That done, Mrs. *Hughs* took the Gentlewoman and me to a back Window, ſhewing me a Field at the Back of the Houſe, and aſked me, what I would give to be there: I told her, that if I had every thing in readineſs for a long Journey, I would give any thing in my Power. She then deſired me to furniſh myſelf with whatever I thought I would want, and ſaid, when every thing was ready, I ſhould meet with no Delay. She then took me to a Back-door, which ſhe unlocked; upon which I plainly ſaw that there was not the leaſt Hindrance, but a ſmall Trench, which I could eaſily leap over; then ſhe told me, that the Lady had agreed with her to receive me at her own Houſe, where I ſhould meet with a kind Reception, and an hearty Welcome from herſelf and Huſband, which the Lady confirmed by an Aſſurance of the ſame Nature. I returned

Digitized by Google

returned them both my ſincere Thanks, and thought myſelf half Seas over: The next Day my Brother ſent a Friend according to Promiſe, by whom I ſent a Letter, giving an Account of all that had paſſed at this Meeting, aſſuring him that there was not the leaſt Difficulty, and deſiring him to ſend ſome-body every other Day, by whom I would let him know all that ſhould be done, and what might be neceſſary for him to do for me. Two or three Days before this happened, Mrs. *Jenny Pickering* made me a Preſent of a new-faſhioned Pair of Steel Buckles, brilliant cut, and exceedingly well poliſhed, which coſt a Guinea; and though it was done in the moſt private Manner, yet it came to her Uncle's Knowledge, I believe meerly through Suſpicion more than by any Information; however, it made a great Noiſe, and in a few Days after, poor *Jenny* was ſent home to her Father's. Thus was I deprived of the Pleaſure and Converſation of a very agreeable Girl; my Brother, however, did not fail to ſend a Friend as deſired, but I could ſend him no farther Account, not having heard any thing from Mrs. *Hughs*, nor ſeen her until the *Friday* following, on which Day I received a Meſſage to go to her Bar at two o'Clock, which I did, and, according to Cuſtom, had a Flaſk of *Florence* at the Bar. She then told me, that the Day before, ſhe had ſeen her Friend; and ſhewed me a written Direction, which I was to keep to guide me to the Houſe I was to go to, in St. *Ann*'s *Street*, *Soho*, near the Church; at the ſame time aſſuring me, that ſome Day the next Week, if I was prepared, I might go without the leaſt Interruption: I thanked her, and told her I would be ready by the Middle of the Week, and that I hoped to have the Pleaſure of ſeeing her at her Friend's Houſe in St. *Ann*'s as ſoon as ſhe could, which ſhe promiſed I ſhould. I ſent my

Digitized by Google

Brother an Account of all this, desiring him to get a Lodging provided for me in any Place he thought convenient, remote from St. *Ann*'s, for I determined not to go there, fearing some unforeseen Accident: This my Brother approved of, and said that all should be done as I desired, and bid me, if possible, to let him know the Day, that he might be ready to take other proper Measures: He daily sent to me some one or other to be informed of the fixed Day. On *Sunday* at Church-time I saw Mrs. *Hughs* and her Friend, by which we got an Opportunity of consulting how to put our Project in Execution the next *Thursday*, which was as follows. On that Day I was to get Leave to sit up with some of the Gentlemen Prisoners until Ten o'Clock, a Thing often practised, and seldom or never refused to any Prisoner, who had Money to spend: This I knew by Experience, having often done it myself, it being allowed for the Benefit of the Cellar. About Nine o'Clock, being then pretty dark, I was to steal from the Company, and go directly to the Door, where Mrs. *Hughs* would be ready to receive me, and conduct me to the Back-door I was to go out at; from whence she shewed me a narrow Alley I was to pass through, called *Ax-and-Bottle-Yard*, which lead to the main Street. We concluded our Project, breakfasted, and then took my Leave. I sent an Account of all this to my Brother, telling him, I should be glad to see somebody from him every Day, that if any Alteration happened, I might let him know: This he punctually observed, sending a Messenger daily; but as no Change was made in our intended Project, on *Thursday* Morning I sent him a Letter by the Person he sent to me, desiring he would send that Night a trusty Friend with a Coach to stand at the End of *Ax-and-Bottle-Yard*, near the *Marshalsea*, *Southwark*, by Nine o'Clock, but not to exceed half an Hour after;

Digitized by Google

after; at which Time I hoped (by the Bleſſing of God) to be with him, and to be conducted to the Lodging he had provided for me: Having ſent this Letter, I went to pay a Viſit to Mrs. *Sarah* and Mrs. *Goodman*, who were together in the Bar; but notwithſtanding any Regard I might have had for them, I kept them ignorant of my Project, not expecting ever to ſee them more. I paſt the Remainder of the Day (though penſive) yet pretty chearful, until about ſix o'Clock, at which Time I went to my Room, and there fell to reading; in a ſhort time after, the head Turnkey came with a Bunch of Keys in his Hand, and aſked if I was within? I told him that he ſaw I was. Yes, ſays he, and I muſt keep you in; and without ſaying another Word locked my Door and went off: This was a Thunder-bolt to me, nor would he return, tho' I called to him to come back. This was ſoon ſpread through the Priſon; my Man *King* came to me with Mrs. *Goodman*, both ſurpriſed and concerned. Mrs. *Goodman* aſked me the Reaſon, but I could give her none: Several Gentlemen, my Fellow Priſoners, came to ſee me, but not one of them could give me any Account of the Cauſe of this my Diſaſter: Thus was my Hopes of Liberty fruſtrated without being able to know whether my Project was diſcovered or not, or what other Cauſe (if any could be) of this Proceeding. My Brother ſent a Gentleman the next Day, whom I had never ſeen before; he came to my Room-door, which was ſtill locked; I ſent for the Turnkey to let him in; he came and unlocked my Door, and left it ſo: This Gentleman told me, that by my Brother's Direction he came to know what prevented my coming laſt Night according to my Promiſe; that he had attended with a Coach at the End of *Ax-and-Bottle-Yard*, as I had deſired, from Nine, until half an Hour after Ten, in hopes of having the Pleaſure

Digitized by Google

of conducting me to a more pleasant Lodging that had been provided for me, and desired to let him know the Cause that had prevented it, that he might go and give my Brother an Account, who would be very uneasy until his Return. I thanked him for all the Trouble he had taken, and hoped, that his finding me locked up, would plead my Excuse for disappointing him. I desired him to give my kind Respects to my Brother, and to assure him, I could not as yet give him any Account how this unlucky Turn came about, and hoped my Brother might not be uneasy, for that it gave me no farther Concern, than the adding it to the other Crosses of my Life, which would end, God only knew when; and that as soon as I should get at the Knowledge of the Particulars of this Affair, I would let him know. The Gentleman then took his Leave, and my Door was left open until six o'Clock, yet I did not stir out, having one Captain *Cross* and Captain *Lawrence* (both Prisoners) to visit me.

Those Gentlemen were Captains of two Ships of War of seventy Guns each, which some time before had been taken by the *French*. They were tried, and sentenced to Imprisonment; *Cross* for Life, and *Lawrence* for seven Years; and being Admiralty Prisoners as I was, we were all of the same Party, and often together. The Names of the two Ships were the *Elizabeth*, commanded by *Cross*, and the *Swallow* by *Lawrence*. The next Morning my Door was opened as before, but locked two Hours sooner than the usual Time, and so continued for a Week.

About this Time, there was brought in Prisoner one Captain *Smith*, Commander of a Six-and-twenty Gun Ship, called the *Nightingale*; she was an *English* Ship, taken the Year before out of *Harwich* Harbour, within *Long-guard* Fort, by the *French* Gallies, who came from *Dunkirk* with a Design to burn

Digitized by Google

burn that Town; which was ſo well provided, as to give them ſuch a warm Reception, that they contented themſelves with the taking the ſaid Ship only, and returned to *Dunkirk*. There was with Captain *Smith*, one *Ezellby*, a Lieutenant in the Duke of *Berwick*'s Regiment, who commanded the Marines, one *Harwood*, an *Engliſhman*, and one *Nally*, a Prieſt, who was his Chaplain.

Theſe Gentlemen being brought in, were placed in an Apartment near me, and we were daily together. I could ſay a great deal on the various Rumours and Reports that were ſpread on the unhappy Captain *Smith*; but as I am only to write the Paſſages of my own Life, I ſhall but take Notice of a few of the many of his, which I had from himſelf, and which brought him to the melancholy and dangerous Situation he was then in.

CHAP. XIV.

HE told me, that he had been Captain of a Six-and-twenty Gun Veſſel in the Queen's Service, called the *Bonnetan* (or ſome ſuch named Sloop) that he had been falſly (as he ſaid) accuſed of having imbezzelled ſome Stores; that he had been tried, and broke by a Court martial, and diſmiſſed the Service, with much more on that Head, too tedious to mention; that he had ſhipped himſelf on board a *Swediſh* Veſſel intending to go to *Liſbon* to a Relation of his, named *Wright*, who was the Queen's Commiſſioner there, in hopes of getting Bread under him; that the Ship he was in (though neuter) was boarded by a *French* Privateer, who took ſome Proviſions, *&c.* out of her, made him (being an *Engliſhman*) Priſoner, and took him to *Dunkirk*, where he was kept in the common

Digitized by Google

Priſon one hundred and eight Days in a moſt deplorable Condition, having nothing to ſubſiſt on but Bread and Water, and Straw to lie on; that he wrote ſeveral times to *England* for Relief, but got none: So that finding himſelf neglected by his native Country, and being offered Employment by the *French*, he accepted of it, and entered into their Service. His firſt Exploit (to uſe his own Phraſe) as he knew the *Engliſh* Coaſts very well, and being a good Pilot, was to conduct the Galleys above-mentioned, and the *Nightingale* Man of War, with which he returned to *Dunkirk*; which Ship was ſoon fitted out, and the Command given to him as the Reward of his good Service, which coſt him his Life as ſhall be hereafter related.

The *Nightingale* being fitted out, and the Command of her given to the above unfortunate Gentleman, he ſet ſail, in Conſort with the *Squirrel*, another Six-and-twenty Gun Ship, taken from the *Engliſh* ſome time before. She was commanded by one *Louy le Mell*. Theſe two Commanders agreed to ſail together, and as they were of equal Force, were to be equal Sharers in any Booty that ſhould be made; if they met nothing worth their while in their way, or ſhould be ſeparated by any unexpected Accident, they were to meet, (Wind and Weather permitting) on a Day appointed, off *Plymouth*, and were then to attempt the taking the Guardſhip that lay in that Harbour, which was called the *Ludlow Caſtle*, a ſixty or ſeventy Gun Ship, commanded by Captain *Haddock*, (ſome Years after advanced to be Admiral) which not having her Complement of Men, was thought would prove an eaſy Conqueſt. They accordingly met on the Day appointed in ſight of each other, and made the Signals as agreed on, and then Captain *Smith* ſailed towards

Digitized by Google

towards the *Ludlow Caſtle*, under *Engliſh* Colours, until he came within Gun-ſhot of her; then he hoiſted *French* Colours, and fired a Broad-ſide, which the *Ludlow Caſtle* returned with Intereſt, having done Execution on Captain *Smith*'s Deck, and ſhattered ſome of his Rigging. Captain *Smith* continued the Fight, expecting his Conſort's coming to his Aſſiſtance, but was greatly ſurpriſed, when, inſtead of his coming up, (though the Wind was fair) he ſaw him ſteer another Courſe, and leave him in the Lurch. Nevertheleſs, the two Ships continued fighting for a conſiderable time, until Captain *Smith*, then on the Quarter-Deck, giving Orders, was ſurpriſed all on a ſudden by his Cannon being ſilent. He called to know how this came about? To which it was anſwered, that there was a Centry placed on the Powder-room, with Orders to ſuffer no more Powder to be brought up. Upon which the Captain went to the Centry, to know by whoſe Orders he came there? He told him that the Lieutenant had placed him there, and had given him Orders. This Lieutenant, it ſeems, being a *Frenchman*, told the Soldiers and Sailors, who were alſo *Frenchmen*, that Captain *Smith* had committed ſome great Crime in *England*, for which, if taken, he would certainly be hanged; that they were engaged againſt a Ship of above double their Force, againſt which they had no other Chance, but to be taken or ſunk; that he was perſuaded the Captain would chooſe the latter, rather than ſurrender; that therefore he thought it was his, and all their Intereſts, as well as Duty, to chooſe the the firſt, and by ſurrendering to ſave ſo many of the King's Subjects: This was unanimouſly agreed to by them all: The Captain then ſeeing his own Crew mutinying againſt him, ordered the Colours to be ſtruck, and then ſurrendered. Thus Captain *Smith*, together with the other Gentlemen, were

Digitized by Google

brought to *London*, and ſent to Priſon, as before-mentioned. Now having ended this long Digreſſion, which my Readers I hope will excuſe, I ſhall return to my own Hiſtory.

Two or three Days after the Commitment of Captain *Smith*, and his Friends, the Keeper, *Darby*, thought it a proper Time to ſhew his Teeth; in order to this, he ſent his Clerk of the Papers to the Duke of *Grafton*, with a long Complaint againſt me, intirely falſe, ſignifying, that ſince his Lordſhip had ſent Orders to take off my Irons, I had behaved in ſuch an extraordinary manner, that there was no bearing it; that I was daily exciting the Priſoners to mutiny, by giving them for that purpoſe ſpirituous, and other ſtrong Liquors to drink, that the Goal was daily in an Uproar; that he had Numbers of State and other Priſoners in Cuſtody, and that he could not anſwer for any of them, unleſs his Lordſhip would be pleaſed to give Orders for ſending me to ſome other Priſon, or elſe give him leave to ſecure me where I was in a proper Manner: This formal Complaint being delivered to his Lordſhip, who not doubting the Truth of it, made no Scruple of ſending by the Clerk a Chart Blanch to *Darby* to uſe me as he ſhould think fit. The Clerk no ſooner brought this welcome News, than *Darby* came to the Lodge, ſent for me, and ordered a ruſty, ſtout Pair of Irons to be put on me, which was immediately done in his Preſence, and ſo ſent me to my Room: Thus did he triumph over me, with no ſmall Pleaſure, though it gave Mrs. *Sarah*, Mrs. *Goodman*, and ſome other Friends, great Concern: Some Days before this, Mrs. *Sarah* deſired me to keep an Account of what I ſhould ſend for to the Bar, for that ſhe would ſcore nothing, but leave it to myſelf, which I promiſed to do, and really did, until I was as tired of Book-keeping.

Digitized by Google

keeping, as ſhe was long before of truſting. A few Days after I was ironed, my Brother came to ſee me, and was ſurpriſed to find me in that Situation. He aſked me the Reaſon of it, whether I had any Quarrel with *Darby*, or any other Perſon? I aſſured him I had not the leaſt Word with any body, and begged he would give his Friends or himſelf no trouble about it; that I was very eaſy, and ſhould be more content with wearing theſe Fetters, than giving him, or his Friends any further Uneaſineſs. The next Day my Brother came again, looking with a ſeeming angry Countenance; telling me that the Duke of *Grafton* had ſent for him, to inform him that his Brother was the Devil; for that a Man could not behave in ſuch a Manner as he had done; then repeated the whole Complaints, ſhewed him *Darby*'s Letter, and ordered him to go to me, and adviſe me to behave better, or that I muſt ſuffer for it.

I was amazed at all this, and aſſured him that there was not one Word of Truth in it. I deſired he would inquire into my Conduct among the Priſoners of Note, from whom he might expect the Truth: Accordingly, he waited on Captain *Croſs*, *Lawrence*, *Smith*, and moſt of the better ſort of Priſoners, to enquire about the matter, and they all aſſured him that no Man could behave better, or more inoffenſively than I did; and that the Keeper was a bad Man. This having given my Brother ſome Pleaſure, he told me he would go and acquaint the Duke with it: I never ſhall forget his Grace's Goodneſs on that Occaſion; for the next Day, as ſoon as my Brother had made his Report, the Duke ſent a Gentleman of his Acquaintance to the Priſon, to make an Inquiry into my Conduct and Behaviour, and likewiſe into the Keeper's Character: Upon which Inquiry, he found every thing according to the Report made by my Brother to his

Digitized by Google

his Grace, who, for greater Certainty, ſent another Gentleman the Day following, who got much the ſame Intelligence, all which turned to the Keeper's Shame, and to my Credit. No doubt but the Duke gave an Account of theſe Proceedings to Lord *Sunderland*; for, in a few Days after, I was ſent for by Mr. *Darby* to the Lodge, where I found him ſitting in an Arm-Chair, as great as a King in his own Conceit. He was dreſſed in an embroidered Crimſon Velvet Cap, a very rich Night-gown flowered with Gold, and Slippers of the ſame, with Gold Fringe. As ſoon as I came in, I took off my Cap, rather to ſhew I was not quite deſtitute of Manners, than for any Reſpect to his Perſon, or Finery, and put it on again; at which he ſeemed offended, and aſked me in an angry Tone, if I was afraid I ſhould catch cold that I put on my Cap ſo ſuddenly? I freely aſked him, who was there to whom I was inferior; that I muſt be Cap-in-hand to? He ſaid, to him: I replied, that though I was in his Cuſtody, I was a Gentleman, and as ſuch, when I met or ſaw him, I paid him the Compliment of moving my Hat or Cap to him, which he never was ſo civil as to return; for which Reaſon, if I was to remain ſeven Years under his Care, I would never move Hat or Cap to him again, and then deſired to know what he ſent for me for? He told me, that as I ſaid, I was a Gentleman, if I had ſhewn it by my Behaviour, I ſhould be uſed as ſuch: I ſaid, he knew in his Conſcience (if he had any) I never deſerved the falſe Complaints he made againſt me, nor the baſe Treatment he gave me; and that I had no Favour to aſk of him, and then was going away; upon which he bid me ſtay a little; then he aſked me, if I did not think the taking off my Irons a great Favour, and worth aſking: I told him, that whatever I thought it worth, were I compelled to take my Choice,

Digitized by Google

Choice; I would ſooner chooſe to have another Pair put on, rather than lye under the leaſt Obligation to him. To this he anſwered, that I was ſtubborn, and he would uſe me better than I deſerved, ordering the Turnkey to knock off my Irons. This ſurpriſed me to find ſuch Lenity after my Diſcourſe, which ſavoured no Way of Flattery: But my Aſtoniſhment was not laſting; for as the Turnkey was taking off my Irons, the Penny-poſtman came into the Lodge, and ſeeing me there, told me he had a Letter for me, and gave it to me; I ſaw it was from my Brother, which I opened and read; the Import of which was to know, whether that Villain *Darby* had ordered my Irons off; for that the Duke of *Grafton* had ſent for him to let him know, that Lord *Sunderland* told his Grace, he had given poſitive Orders to *Darby* to take them off at his Peril.

I had no ſooner read the Letter, than I gave it to *Darby*, deſiring him to read it, telling him, that it ſhewed me plainly from whence his Lenity proceeded; but he had not Patience to peruſe the Whole of it, when he flung it at me, and went away: Thus did I triumph, in my Turn, over that baſe Man. This laſt hampering did not laſt above ſeventeen Days; all my Friends were glad to ſee me ſo light about the Heels, Mrs. *Sarah* and Mrs. *Goodman* not excepted, and we had a ſmall Merriment on the joyful Occaſion.

The next Day, I ſent an Account, with my Thanks, to my Brother, of all that paſſed; a few Days after, my Brother, with ſome other Friends came to ſee me, and told me, that he had as yet nothing from the Commiſſioners, but Delays, tho' it was above four Months ſince they had received the Queen's Commands to make a ſpeedy Report, and that he did not know what to think. I deſired he would let every thing take its Courſe, begging that

Digitized by Google

that he would give himſelf no further Trouble on that Head, once more making it my Requeſt, that he would make them no more Preſents, which he promiſed to comply with: At parting, he offered me Money, which I refuſed, telling him I did not want it, ſhewing him ſome of what I had ſaved. This having a little ſurpriſed him, he aſked me how I could live, and ſave ſo much? I aſſured him, that I lived very well, and conſidering what great Expences he was at on my Account without Doors, beſides his generous Allowance within, which was a Guinea a Week ever ſince I had been firſt impriſoned; therefore I was reſolved for the future to take no more than half that Money, if I ſtaid ever ſo long. He aſked me how I could think to live on half a Guinea a Week. I told him, I could very well; and that I lived moſt of the Time I had been abroad, on leſs than half that Money: His Friends who came with him approved of my Prudence, and I believe he did ſo too. I am ſure I could not do leſs for ſo kind a Brother, by which I ſaved him above one hundred Guineas, having remained confined for above two Years after.

Every thing being thus ſettled, my Brother and his Friends took their Leave, and I went to ſpend a merry Hour with Mrs. *Sarah* and Mrs. *Goodman*; thus I paſſed away my time for about a Fortnight, without any thing happening worth Notice. Mrs. *Goodman*, who I have mentioned to have been brought in Priſoner for a Tallyman's Debt, did not come over-burthened with Cloaths, having but one Callicoe Gown, which ſhe had on, and which began to be pretty much ſoiled, excited my Pity; and as I daily uſed to be in her Company, I thought in honour I ought to give her one. I told her my Intention, and deſired to know what ſort of Gown ſhe would chuſe; ſhe prudently

Digitized by Google

dently told me a Plaid, that being the fitteſt for the Place ſhe was in. I ſent for ſome Patterns, ſhe choſe one, and I got the Quantity ſhe required, with the Items of Silk, Thread, &c. neceſſary to make it, to the Amount of about three-and-thirty Shillings. She made it herſelf, though no Mantua-maker, for ſhe was very ingenious. As the Tally-man's ſending her to that Place, was the Occaſion of her getting this Gown; ſo was the Gown the firſt Step towards her Enlargement, and her making a Fortune, I believe beyond Expectation, through various (though not at all laudable) Scenes, until ſhe came at laſt to be a Governeſs to a Princeſs's Children at the Emperor's Court at *Vienna*, which ſhall be related in their proper Places, as they occurred, ſome of which I was concerned in, though little to my Credit; yet for the ſake of Truth, I muſt acquaint my Readers with them. The Gown being finiſhed, the following *Sunday* ſhe dreſſed herſelf in it, and made a very genteel Appearance, though but a Plaid, for ſhe was really handſome, at leaſt in my Eyes; and I believe it will appear, that ſhe was not only ſo in mine, but in others; for that very afternoon on which ſhe made her firſt Appearance in it, there were two Gentlemen drinking at the *Queen*'s-*Arms* Tavern, juſt at the *Marſhalſea* Gate, in a Room with Windows which looked into the Priſon Yard, where a Number of Priſoners were walking, among whom was Mrs. *Goodman*; the Weather being hot, the Windows were left open, by which her Charms had ſo drawn the Attention of one of the Gentlemen, that he at laſt aſked the Drawer if he knew her, and what ſhe was; he informed him, ſhe was a Priſoner for a Tallyman's Debt for fine Cloaths ſhe had taken up. The Gentleman aſked him, if he could find out how much the Debt was? the Drawer told him, the Turnkey would reſolve him, and he would

Digitized by Google

would call him if he pleaſed. The Gentleman bid him do ſo: The Turnkey being come, he ſatisfied him in all he deſired: He likewiſe begged to be informed, whether he might be admitted to ſpeak to her. The Turnkey anſwered, if he would pay him for his Trouble, he would fetch her there; but that ſhe muſt not go out of his Sight, which the Gentleman promiſed ſhe ſhould not: Upon which the Turnkey went to Mrs. *Goodman*, and acquainted her, that there were two fine Gentlemen at the *Queen's-Arms*, who wanted to ſpeak with her, and deſired her to go with him to them; to which ſhe conſented, provided ſhe was adviſed thereto by her Friend. Accordingly, ſhe aſked my Advice. I told her that the beſt I could give her, was not to neglect any Opportunity ſhe thought might be to her Advantage, or might procure her Liberty. She went, and the Gentleman being informed of her Debt, Fees, and other Charges, let her go back, promiſing to come the next Day at four o'Clock, bidding her to ſend for her Creditor to be there at that Hour to receive his Money. At parting, he gave her a Guinea, to ſhew her that he was in earneſt. At her Return, ſhe came and told me all that had paſſed, ſhewing me the Guinea. The Gentlemen being gone, and the Turnkey ſatisfied for his Attendance, he inquired who they were, and was informed, that one was Colonel *Whitman*, and the other Brigadier *Burr*; the latter of whom *Cupid* had ſmitten.

Next Day the Gentlemen came according to Promiſe; Mrs. *Goodman* was ſent for, ſhe told me, at her Return, ſhe would inform me how Affairs went, and told me if ſhe could get her Diſcharge, ſhe would come to take her Leave of me. Theſe Words ſhe ſpoke with Tears in her Eyes, as ſhe went away. The Brigadier received her (as I was told) in Tranſports, paid all, was generous to the Waiters; and took

Digitized by Google

took her away without letting her return again, tho' ſhe begged to be let to take away her Things, but to no purpoſe; He told her ſhe ſhould want for nothing. Thus the Plaid Gown went, almoſt as ſoon as it made its Appearance, though I had a great Regard for Mrs. *Goodman*, I was not ſorry for her Departure, for ſeveral Reaſons; firſt, as I never intended to marry her, I was not willing nor able to keep her as a Miſtreſs; and as I had of my own accord diminiſhed my Brother's Allowance to one half; I began to think that I was ſufficiently revenged of Mrs. *Pickering*, having ſome Remorſe for keeping ſo long an Account at her Expence, as Mrs. *Sarah* deſired, of a Debt which ſhe, nor I never intended ſhould be paid, which already amounted to more then five and forty Pounds: All theſe Reaſons made her Departure eaſy to me; but notwithſtanding all this, I thought her a moſt ungrateful Woman for not taking her Leave of me. As I was ignorant of the Cauſe, I made no doubt, that if ſhe had the leaſt Senſe of Gratitude, I ſhould ſoon hear from her, but found myſelf miſtaken; for Days, Weeks, and Months paſt, without my hearing from her, or about her. This, I muſt confeſs gave me ſome Uneaſineſs, and I condemned her in my Heart, as the baſeſt of Women: However, I made the beſt of a bad Market, and comforted myſelf with ſending and receiving Meſſages to and from Mrs. *Sarah*, by my Man *King*; for as I had not yet broke with her, I could viſit her as often as I uſed to do, without being ſuſpected, Mrs. *Goodman* being gone, who had ſcreened all Thoughts of an Intrigue before; and, to help me out, I now and then took a Bottle with Mrs. *Hughs*; for though I ſuſpected her of having diſcovered her own Plot, yet I thought that ſhewing my Reſentment, could be of no Service to me; and that by keeping a fair Correſpondence

Digitized by Google

Correſpondence with her, I might receive ſome Benefit, as being determined not to leave off Book-keeping for ſome time; ſo I paſſed my Time as agreeably as I could with Captain *Smith*, and other Fellow-Priſoners.

About this Time, an Acquaintance of my Brother's came to me, who brought another Gentleman with him to ſee me, whoſe Name was *Sw--ny*, compleat indeed as to his outward Appearance, of whom I ſhall have occaſion to ſay ſomething in the Progreſs of theſe Memoirs. He uſed to come afterwards with the reſt of my Friends, who came to viſit me while I was in Irons, and when eaſed of them. I ſo particularize this Matter, only to point out to my Readers, that his miſtaking the Year ſeven for the Year eight, was of great Prejudice to me, as ſhall be ſhewn in the Sequel of my Story. The firſt thing that happened afterwards worth Notice, was that the Commiſſioners made at laſt their Report, of which my Brother informed me, and told me, that inſtead of a favourable one, according to her Majeſty's Commands, they had ſent one very much to my Diſadvantage, which, as he was informed, was ſoon to be put into the Hands of Sir *Simon Harcort*, the then Attorney-General. At parting, he exhorted me to Patience, which I thank God, I never wanted in all my Troubles. Soon after this, I received a Letter (after three Months Silence) from Mrs. *Goodman*, full of Apologies and Reaſons for not writing all this Time, of her good Fortune, and of every thing that had been done for her by her Deliverer, who ſhe ſaid was Brigadier *Burr*; that he kept her very cloſe until every thing was got ready fit to appear, and make a Figure in publick; that he then brought her to *Tunbridge Wells*, from whence ſhe wrote her Letter; that he gave her a Black in Livery to wait on her, but that ſhe looked on him rather as a Spy than a Servant; for that he watched her ſo cloſe in the Brigadier's Abſence,

Digitized by Google

Abſence, that ſhe could neither get Time, or Conveniency of Pen, Ink, or Paper to write to me, which gave her much Uneaſineſs, knowing that I would think her the moſt ungrateful of Women; but that now ſhe had more Liberty, I ſhould hear from her every Opportunity, and begged that I would anſwer hers, and that in her next, ſhe would inform me how to direct my Letters, that ſhe might receive them with Secreſy and Safety. We kept a Paper Correſpondence all her Stay at *Tunbridge*, which was about three Weeks; then I heard no more of her for eight or ten Days, till a Man, that was a Meſſenger of the Priſoners, came with Joy to tell me, that he had ſeen his Miſtreſs, meaning Mrs. *Goodman*, croſſing *Leiceſter-fields* in a Chair; that the Chairman called him by his Name, and deſired him to come up to the Chair; that he was ſurpriſed to ſee her as fine as a Queen; that ſhe aſked very kindly after me, bidding him to tell me, that ſhe would certainly come the next Day to ſee me, that ſhe gave him Half a Crown to drink both our Healths, which I believe he had performed, for he was very drunk. This was welcome News, and I waited with Impatience for the next Day: She came according to Promiſe; her Stay was about two Hours; but the Joy of our Meeting was interrupted by our being placed in the Bar with Mrs. *Sarah*; but we were as merry as the Place would permit. She took her Leave, and I ſaw no more of her for a Fortnight; in the mean time ſomething fell out that gave me ſome Diverſion, though I pretended the contrary, by appearing gloomy and thoughtful; *King* came and told me, with a ſeeming Concern, that he thought I had a Rival; for he had obſerved for ſome time paſt, that Mrs. *Sarah* had admitted the Viſits of one of the Turnkeys, and that if he was not miſtaken, ſhe ſeemed to like him, of which he thought

Digitized by Google

proper to give me timely Notice. I thanked him for his Information, though it gave me no Concern, and ſaid, that by his Aſſiſtance, I would make a proper Uſe of this Intelligence, even to his Advantage. He told me, that I might depend on any thing that was in his Power to do. Well, *King*, ſays I, you muſt in a Day or two tell Mrs. *Sarah*, that I ſeem to be quite altered, that I am grown quite melancholy, and that you cannot conceive what can be the Matter with me; and then aſk her, if ſhe and I had any Miſunderſtanding, and talk to her on the Subject as often as you think proper, and let me punctually know what ſhe ſays, and all that paſſes between you, and then I will give you farther Inſtructions on that head. He told me, nothing ſhould be wanting on his Part. He went to her accordingly, and told her the Alteration he had obſerved in me, and aſked her, if ſhe knew the Cauſe of it, and whether we had any Difference? She told him not, and that ſhe had made the ſame Remark, and would give any thing to know the Reaſon, deſiring him, if poſſible, to find it out, and let her know. He promiſed to uſe his Endeavours. He informed me of all ſhe ſaid; I bid him, when next he ſpoke to her, to tell her, that he had done all he could to ſound me, but in vain, and could get nothing from me, but by one Thing I ſaid, that he apprehended I was jealous; for I had aſked him once when we were ſpeaking of other Matters, with a ſerious Air, whether he had not lately ſeen ſomebody going often to the Bar, and in cloſe Conference with Mrs. *Sarah?* He told me he never had; then I deſired him to ſeem to take no Notice, but at the ſame Time to obſerve, if he ſaw any thing of that kind for the future, to let me know it; and if he did not, I ſhould find it out myſelf; then I charged him to keep it a profound Secret what I had ſaid to him,

Digitized by Google

him, which he promiſed to do. All this he told at their firſt Meeting, which put her in Confuſion for ſome time; and at laſt ſaid, ſhe wondered what I could mean, and deſired him to find it out. Thus I played on the Paſſions of Mrs. *Sarah* by this pretended Jealouſy, by the Aſſiſtance of my Man *King*, for about a Fortnight, which however had this good Effect, that ſhe did not ſee my pretended Rival ſo often, or, at leaſt not ſo publickly as before.

About this Time I was ſurpriſed to ſee a Man brought in Priſoner for a Robbery, whom I had inliſted at *Cleve* in 1702, and marched to *Pavia* in *Italy*, where I left him the Year following, when I parted with the *Iriſh* Officers. His Name was *Stephen Bunch*, or *Bunce*; he was tried, convicted, and made his Exit at *Tyburn*.

Soon after I received a Letter from Mrs. *Goodman*, acquainting me, that the Brigadier had taken her to *Richmond*, for a Fortnight, on a Party of Pleaſure, and that ſhe could get no Opportunity of writing ſooner; that he was informed (ſhe could not tell how) of her Viſit to me in the *Marſhalſea*; that he bantered her about it; and that ſhe would let me know more the firſt Opportunity. This gave me ſome Concern on her Account, for which there was ſome Foundation.

A Report of great Preparations at *Dunkirk*, for ſome ſudden Expedition, increaſed daily, and was variouſly talked of; however, it did me no Service: My Brother came to viſit me, and told me, I ſhould ſoon be brought to my Tryal; that he dreaded the Conſequence, but bid me keep up my Spirits, and not be diſmayed, but prepare for the worſt; telling me, though he had good Friends, the times were not favourable, but that nothing ſhould be wanting on his Part; and aſked me, if I

Digitized by Google

did not want Money? I assured him I did not. My good Friend *Darby* now thought it a proper Time to proceed in his Villany, which he did by a Contrivance, that none but the Devil himself could invent or think of, in which he too well succeeded, and was as follows,

There was a Gentleman confined for Debt, reputed to be of a good Family, an Officer on half Pay, his Name was *Austin*, he was a great Lover of strong Liquor, which *Darby* made Use of to gain his Ends against me. He one Day (knowing his Weakness) invited him to Dinner, after which he plyed him so close with Port and Punch, that it took away his Senses, and then got him to write a Letter, (which *Darby* dictated) to my Lord *Sunderland*, signifying that there was one *Drake*, an Officer of a *French* Privateer, Prisoner in the *Marshalsea*, who expected soon to be tried, and daily (to add to his Crimes) made it his Diversion in Company, to drink treasonable Healths, such as to the Pretender, by the Title of *James* the Third, King of *England*, to *Lewis* the Fourteenth, King of *France*, and all his Friends and Well-wishers, *&c.* and Confusion to Queen *Ann*, and the Parliament of *England*, &c. that as he had the Honour of being in Commission in her Majesty's Service, he was bound by Duty and Honour, as well as by Oath, to give an Account of all Treasons that should come to his Knowledge; all which he was ready to aver, maintain and prove, when and how his Lordship should require.

This Letter, Mr. *Darby* took care should be immediately delivered to Lord *Sunderland*; for in three Days after, there was an Order came, that *Austin* should be sent, at a time appointed, to *Whitehall*; which Orders, when *Darby* shewed *Austin*, and bid him get ready to go, he seemed amazed, and said, he remembered, his writing a Letter,

Digitized by Google

Letter, but that he was very drunk, and knew nothing of what it contained, nor of its being ſent: *Darby* told him, that it was ſent by his Orders; that the Letter (which without doubt) he would be examined about, would ſhew him the Contents; and that if he had any Regard to his own Safety, he muſt own and prove what he wrote, if required; for there was no jeſting with a Secretary of State, and that he would aſſiſt him to the utmoſt of his Power. *Auſtin*, in this Situation, choſe rather to take *Darby*'s Advice, than to retract: And when he came before his Lordſhip, and was aſked, if he knew that Letter (which was ſhewed to him) he frankly owned it, and confirmed every thing, whether on Oath, or not, I could never learn. They no ſooner returned, than I was ſent for to the Lodge, where there was a ſtout Pair of ruſty Irons directly put on me, which were never taken off, until near my Tryal, which was above ſeven Months.

This Letter produced (I thank God) no worſe Conſequence to my Affairs, than that of my being ironed, my Lord *Sunderland* giving little or no Credit to it, eſpecially when he heard *Auſtin*'s Character, which his Lordſhip told the Duke of *Grafton*, when he ſhewed him the Letter, as his Grace was pleaſed to tell my Brother. *Auſtin* was looked upon by all that heard of this Affair, as a moſt wicked Man, and no-body would converſe with him; the Priſoners would continually be teazing and curſing him for his Villany; ſo that he had but a bad time on it. When he was drunk (which was very often) he would lay all the Blame on *Darby*. When my Brother came to ſee me, I begged of him not to trouble himſelf about my Irons, and to ſpare his Friends for a better Purpoſe. He told me that he had already come to that Reſolution, which I was glad to hear.

Digitized by Google

I continued my Coolneſs towards Mrs. *Sarah*, and left her to the Management of *King*, with a little of my Direction. Some Days after this, one of the Turnkeys came to tell me, that there was two Gentlemen in the back Parlour, at the *Queen*'s *Arms*, who deſired to ſpeak with me; I went, and one of them came to the Window, took off his Hat, and bowed very civilly, aſking my Pardon for his Freedom in ſending, and giving me the Trouble of coming: I returned his Compliment in the beſt Manner I could: He drank to me, aſking me what Wine I choſe: I told him the ſame he was drinking. I drank a Glaſs; after which he proceeded to aſk me ſeveral Queſtions relating to my Confinement. This a little ſurpriſed me, not knowing who I was talking to: He was well dreſſed, with a rich embroidered Waiſtcoat, and had a military Appearance, ſo that I could not know what to think; however, I told him I had the Honour of being Captain-Lieutenant of a *French* Ship; that I was taken laſt *February*; that I had been confined ever ſince, and did not know how or when my Troubles would end: He liſtened very attentively, telling me, that he was really ſorry for my Hardſhips I lay under, but that there was no going, or acting againſt the Law of Nations; but notwithſtanding all this, he thought me a happy Man: I told him, I could not imagine what he thought my Happineſs conſiſted in, unleſs in my Irons, ſhewing them: No, Sir, ſays he, not in that, but in this, ſtretching out his Hand, and bringing forward a Lady, who was all the Time kept out of Sight; aſking me, if I knew her? I was not a little ſurpriſed, when I ſaw it was Mrs. *Goodman*; however, I ſoon recovered my Surprize, and told him I did, and that ſhe had the ill Fortune to be confined ſome time ago. He ſaid it was true, and that ſhe informed him I had been very civil to her: I told him,

Digitized by Google

him, that this proceeded from the Lady's Goodneſs in ſaying ſo, more than from any Merit of mine; that whatever my Inclinations might be to do good to Perſons in Diſtreſs, it was in my preſent Circumſtances out of my Power: To this he ſaid, that he had it from herſelf, which ſhe confirmed, by ſaying it was very true. The other Gentleman, who I ſuppoſe was gone out on ſome Buſineſs, returned: We then talked for about half an Hour on Campaigns, Sieges and Battles: They then took their Leave, wiſhing me out of my Troubles. I need be no Conjurer to gueſs, that this Gentleman was Brigadier *Burr*, the other (as I was informed) Colonel *Whitman*, both inſeparable Companions.

I heard no more of Mrs. *Goodman* for a Month. *King* was daily teazed by Mrs. *Sarah* (as he told me) to know if he found out what was the Matter with me; to which he anſwered, he could get nothing out of me, but he was ſure it was nothing elſe but Jealouſy: Then ſhe bid him let me know, ſhe deſired to ſpeak with me on Buſineſs of Conſequence which concerned myſelf. I bid him to give my Service, and tell her, that if ſhe had not ſent, I ſhould have waited on her that very Day, and deſired ſhe would let me know by him the proper Time to ſee her; that as I reſolved to leave off Book-keeping, ſo I had for ſome time before ſent ready Money for every thing I wanted, which *King* told me did not pleaſe her. Thus I turned the Tables on her, laying all the Blame at her own Door, alledging, that her pretending to receive my Addreſſes with as much Sincerity as I made them, and at the ſame time admitting the Addreſſes of others, ſhewed ſhe intended to make ſome one more happy than I. This was the Subſtance of our Diſcourſe, when I ſaw her. When I had thus opened the Charge againſt

Digitized by Google

her, ſhe ſeemed ſurpriſed, aſked me what I meant, and aſſured me ſhe knew nothing of what I laid to her Charge, that it was all a Pretence. I told her it was very well, and that Time would diſcover all, and deſired ſhe would let me know how we muſt manage the Accompt, ſhe requeſted of me to keep it; that the Delays and Croſſes in my Affairs put it out of my Power to pay until they were ended. She aſked me, if I had it about me; I told her I had; then pray burn it, for my Brother and Siſter knows nothing of it; for if they did, I ſhould be hanged, then deſired I would ſend as uſual for any thing I wanted at the Bar by *King*, and that I ſhould be as welcome as ever. This ſhe did, to ſhew me how much miſtaken I was in my Conjectures. I thanked her, telling her at the ſame time, not that, or any thing elſe ſhe would do, could cure me of a well-grounded Suſpicion, and that ſhe knew this in her Heart; and that as I was too fond of her, I could not bear the leaſt Impoſition by her *Sly* Treachery *Note*, that the Turnkey, my Rival's Name, was *Thomas Sly*. This ſhe did not apprehend; but as ſoon as ſhe ſaw *King*, ſhe told him all that paſt, except the Account, and her Directions for burning it. This I knew would happen, as he was her Confidant, as well as mine; I therefore told him every thing, and gave him his Cue; and when ſhe ſhould come to mention her *Sly* Treachery, to tell her, it was plain that I was jealous, and could mean nothing elſe but *Sly* the Turnkey. *King* acted his Part ſo well, that ſhe was convinced I could mean nothing elſe; and as ſhe was conſcious of her Guilt, ſhe never after took the leaſt Notice, though I often ſaw her; ſo that in this manner I put an End to my Courtſhip and Book-keeping; the Account being committed to the Flames.

About

Digitized by Google

About this Time, my Brother came to tell me, that he had made an Acquaintance with one of the Attorney-General's Clerks, who promiſed faithfully to let him know, when, how, and what Proceedings ſhould come to their Office againſt me, and that as ſoon as any thing ſhould come to his Knowledge, he would let me know: He brought me a printed Tryal of Colonel *John Lillburn*, who had been tried in *Cromwell*'s Time, out of which I might pick ſome Inſtructions towards making my Defence at my Tryal, which he thought would be ſoon after *Chriſtmas*, and deſired me to keep up my Spirits, and, above all Things, not to forget my Duty to God.

The Report of the great Armament going on at *Dunkirk* increaſed daily, and People began to think that an Invaſion was intended in *Scotland*, or elſewhere, there being a Fleet of Obſervation ordered to be got ready. In a few Days after this, Mrs. *Goodman* came to ſee me, and told me that the Brigadier was ſtill kind to her; but that he bantered her often on my Account; that he ſeemed to like me very well, and was concerned for my Misfortunes; that he began to talk of ſetting out early in the Spring for the Army; that ſhe muſt take care of herſelf in his Abſence; that he had furniſhed her with good Cloaths, and other things ſuitable; that the Lodgings ſhould be paid, and continued for her Uſe three Months after his Departure; that he was going to the Country for a Fortnight, and gave her ten Guineas, and deſired if ſhe ſhould ſee me, to give his Service; that ſhe looked upon all this as ſure Marks of his Intention to part with her, but that ſhe confeſſed it was in a very genteel manner; that ſhe was pretty eaſy however; that when all Things were cleared up, ſhe would let me know: and before ſhe left me, ſhe would pay her Way at the Bar, where Mrs. *Sarah*, ſhe and I, had taken a Bottle before, and ſo took her Leave. When Opportunity ſerved, I would ſee Mrs. *Hughs*, who ſtill

Digitized by Google

ſtill profeſt a great Friendſhip for me. I paſt away my Time with Captain *Smith*, and other Fellow-Priſoners, as agreeable as I could, often reading *Lillburn*'s Tryal, and other Books, for my Amuſement. Little worth Notice happened the Remainder of the Year 1707.

CHAP. XV.

TOwards the latter End of *Janmary* 1708, my Brother came to let me know, that he had received a Letter from Sir *Simon Harcourt*'s Clerk, ſignifying that the Report from the Commiſſioners of the ſick and wounded Officers was come to the Attorney General's (which was far from being a favourable one) with Orders to proceed againſt me, and alſo to proſecute Captain *Smith*, &c. according to Law; that we ſhould all have due, and timely Notice to prepare, and at a proper Time Council aſſigned us, to make our Defence. This Letter he ſhewed me, and told me, that he would not be idle, nor loſe Time in raiſing Friends, and getting proper Inſtructions to be given my Council as ſoon as he ſhould know them. *Smith*, *Nally*, his Chaplain, and *Harwood*, the *Engliſh* Gentleman that was on board him, loſt no time in preparing for their Tryal. *Eazellby*, who was on board of *Smith*, was, (as is above ſaid) a Lieutenant in *Berwick*'s Regiment, had the good Fortune to meet here with his Brother's Son, who was then Member of Parliament for ſome Borough in *Yorkſhire*, who ſoon made Intereſt to have him admitted to Bail, and was ſoon after ſent back to *France*. I cannot omit relating a Paſſage here, which for its Singularity, I hope my Readers will excuſe, and is as follows: One Day as Mr. *Nally*, and I were walking ſeriouſly together, he ſuddenly left me, begging

Digitized by Google

ging my Pardon, and told me he muſt go and write; he went into a little Room, and having ſtaid two Hours, he came to my Room, and ſhewed me a Letter he had wrote relating to his Confinement, and his Treatment there, his being in Irons, and his having but Four-pence *per* Day for Subſiſtence, deſiring, that as he was a Clergyman, there might be ſome Means uſed to get him better treated: He alſo drew the Model of his Irons, with a clear Deſcription of their proper Weight and Dimenſions; which Draft or Model he encloſed in a Letter which he directed and ſent by Poſt to Count *de Furrbin*, Admiral of the *Dunkirk* Squadron. On the Admiral's receiving this Letter and Model, he ſent it directly to Court, and let it be known there; that he had ſome time before taken ſome *Engliſh* Ships, in which there was two Chaplains of he ſaid Ships ſent Priſoners to *Abbeville*, in *Piccardy*, where they had the Liberty of that large Town for a Priſon; and that they had Twelve-pence a Day allowed to each, and prayed that the Miniſtry would uſe ſuch Means as they ſhould think meet, to procure a better Treatment for the Clergyman, who was Chaplain on board the *Nightingale*, commanded by Captain *Smith*, now Priſoner at *London*.

On the Receipt of Count *de Furrbin*'s Letter, the *French* Miniſtry ſent both the Letter and the Model to the Governor of *Abbeville*, with Orders to confine the two *Engliſh* Clergymen, to cloſe Priſon, and to ſend the Model to ſome able Smith, with Orders to make two Pair of Irons after the ſaid Model, and as ſoon as finiſhed, to put them on the ſaid Clergymen; they alſo deſired the Governor to inform the Clergymen, that this Change in their Condition was owing to the Uſage given to a Prieſt then Priſoner at *London*, which they might ſee by the Count *de Furrbin*'s, and that Prieſt's Letter,

Digitized by Google

Letter, which was ſhewed to them; and alſo, that they might acquaint their Friends, that, whatever Treatment the ſaid Prieſt met there, they muſt expect the ſame.

The Clergymen, upon receiving this Notice, wrote to their Friends before their Irons were put on, (for they could not have wrote after) for by Miſtake of the Blackſmith, or Miſrepreſentation of *Nally* the Prieſt, the poor Gentlemen ſuffered great Hardſhips for more than a Month, being chained together in ſuch a manner with Rings of Iron round their Necks, that they were obliged to go double. Certain it is, that as ſoon as their Friends in *England* received this diſmal Account, they applied directly to the Miniſtry for their Relief.

About this Time, Mrs. *Goodman* came to pay me a Viſit; and, among other Things told me, that the Brigadier went to the Country as he propoſed; that he left her well furniſhed with Wearing Apparel, *&c.* and that ſhe was to remain in the Brigadier's Lodgings for three Months from that Time, which were paid for. At parting with her, he civilly told her, ſhe now was her own Miſtreſs, wiſhing her all the good Fortune ſhe could deſire, which ſhe had long expected; but his genteel manner of doing it was far beyond her Hopes. Thus ended Brigadier *Burr*'s Amours with Mrs. *Goodman*, of whom I ſhall ſay no more for almoſt two Years to come, but that ſhe was a kind and conſtant Viſitor to me, until I got my Liberty, which was not as ſoon as I expected.

My Brother came and acquainted me, that I ſhould ſoon receive Notice of Tryal; that he was in hopes (in caſe of the worſt) to have good Intereſt with People of the firſt Rank, but deſired me not to truſt to that, but to endeavour to make my Peace with God; from whom alone, his and my

Digitized by Google

my Endeavours, muſt expect a Bleſſing. This was about the Middle of *March* 1708.

I ſtill kept a cool Correſpondence with Mrs. *Sarah* and Mrs. *Hughs*, more for Decency than for Love, or Intereſt; for I ſent by my Man *King* ready Money for every thing I wanted at the Bar. The thirtieth of this Month (*March*) Captain *Smith*, *Nally* the Prieſt, *Harwood*, and myſelf, received due Notice to prepare for our Tryals againſt the twentieth of the Month following, which was full three Weeks, a Time generally given in ſuch Caſes; and accordingly we were carried in Coaches (*Nally* the Prieſt excepted) to the *Old Bailey*, on the Day appointed, where the Court was then ſitting; Sir *Charles Hedges* ſat Judge in the Admiralty Cauſes. Before we ſet out, Captain *Smith*, (who had not been well uſed by *Darby*) and myſelf, agreed to petition the Judge to be moved to ſome other Place of Confinement, if we ſhould not be tryed that Day, which was thought we ſhould not. As ſoon as we came to the Court, we were arraigned, had Council aſſigned us, and the Judge (who had received a Petition from *Harwood*, praying to be heard a few Words relating to what he had ſet forth) aſked what he had to ſay? and how he could prove that he did not go on board the *Nightingale*, to make War againſt her Majeſty? he anſwered, he had no other Proof, but Captain *Smith*, who had declared to Captain *Haddock*, when brought on board the *Ludlow Caſtle*, that he only took him on board as a Paſſenger, to put him on Board the firſt Ship he could get bound for *England*. Captain *Smith* was aſked ſeveral Queſtions concerning the Matter, who verified what *Harwood* ſaid, with this additional Circumſtance in his Favour; that he had not handled any Arms whatſoever, whilſt on board his Ship; and that he was under Deck the whole Time of the Action; then *Harwood* was told that the Court would conſider of it; I then preſented a ſhort

Digitized by Google

ſhort Petition, or Complaint, ſigned by *Smith*, *Harwood*, and myſelf, ſetting forth the hard Uſage given us by *Darby*, praying that we might be ſent to ſome other Priſon: To this the Judge was pleaſed to anſwer, that we might go to *Newgate* if we would, but that he thought we ſhould be much better where we came from, there being more Room, and more Air: We thanked his Lordſhip, and choſe *Newgate*, and a Commitment was ordered to be drawn accordingly; then the Court adjourned for eight Days.

Thus we changed our Quarters, not for the better, but more to our Satisfaction: *Darby*, who did not expect this Change, took Care to recommend us to our new Landlord, and me in particular; for as ſoon as we got to *Newgate*, and delivered to Mr. *Pitts*, the then Keeper of *Newgate*, who gave him a Receipt for us, our Irons were taken off and delivered to *Darby*'s Servants; and then we were thruſt into the condemned Hole, though not tried. This was done by Order of Mr. *Pitts*, and by the Influence of his Brother in Iniquity: As ſoon as we got into this diſmal Cell, it was ſo dark, the Walls being coloured black, that we could ſee nothing but a dim Lamp that hung in the middle of the Room, more like a Globe of Blood than a Lamp. I went two or three Steps towards it, and fell flat on my Face, by hitting my Foot againſt a ſtrong Staple, that was with ſeveral others drove promiſcuouſly in the Floor, to chain People to, when unruly: Juſt before I fell, I heard a Voice, bidding me take care: This a little ſurpriſed me; I ſoon got up, and the Perſon that ſpoke, was rattling his Irons, coming to help me up: By this Time, we could ſee a little better, and could perceive there were three Perſons all in Irons in the Cell. They aſked, if we had been tried? I told them we had not; then one aſked the other, how they dare put

us

Digitized by Google

us there? that the Keeper could not anſwer it. I begged to know of them what Place it was? they told me, none but unhappy People, under Sentence of Death, were put there. This ſhocked me: I ſaid, I hoped it was not their Caſe; they anſwered it was but too true, for that the *Friday* following they were to be executed: We expreſſed our Concern for their Misfortunes, exhorting them to ſubmit to the Will of God, telling them we did not know how ſoon it might be our own Condition. I then went to a Hatch, where I could ſee through Iron Spikes into the Lodge, where the Turnkeys were: I ſpoke to them, telling them, that this was no Place for us as yet, and deſired that they would put us to the Apartment we ought to remain in, until our Tryal: At this they only laughed; but when I told them, that if I did not get Friends ſooner, I would petition the Court that Day eight Days; then they told me, that they only waited the Keeper's coming, to know where we muſt be put, and that in the mean time we might come and ſit in the Lodge if we pleaſed: This Civility of the Turnkeys we accepted of, and we went down accordingly to the Lodge, and called for a Bottle of Wine, and deſired the Favour, that the Gentlemen under Sentence might be admitted to come and take a Glaſs; the Turnkeys told us, that we might take a Glaſs with them at the Hatch, but that they could not admit them further; ſo the poor Gentlemen came down ſo far, and we drank two Bottles together. It may not be amiſs to acquaint my Reader who theſe three unhappy Men were; the firſt, and of greateſt Note, was Mr. *Grigg*, who was chief Clerk, or Secretary to the Earl of *Oxford*; the next was one *Morgrigg*, a Kettle Drum to the Queen's Life-guard, for killing one Captain *Cope* on the *Tower* Guard, with the Stroke of a Bottle; and the third was one *Bowen* for Murder, I think

of

Digitized by Google

of his Brother: The two firſt were executed, but *Bowen* got a Reprieve, and ſome time after made his Eſcape out of *Newgate* in a Woman's Riding-hood.

The Clerk of the Papers of this Place came in a courteous Manner, to aſk, what Side we would pleaſe to go to? whether to the common Side, Maſter's Side, or Preſs-yard. I aſked him which was the beſt; he told me the Preſs-yard by much, if we liked the Price. I deſired to know what it was; he ſaid, Five Guineas Entrance to be paid down, and eleven Shillings a Week for each afterwards; that the Maſter's Side was but three Shillings and Six-pence a Week, and half a Crown down for clean Sheets, and half a Crown for Coals, which every Priſoner paid at coming in: I aſked him, if we might not go to the Preſs-yard on eaſier Terms, as the Court was adjourned but for a Week? he ſaid, that it was all one for that, if it had adjourned but for one Day, they never took leſs. I conſulted Captain *Smith*, &c, and as we thought the Time ſhort, we choſe the Maſter's Side, and paid the Money demanded. One of the Turnkeys, whoſe Name was *Rouſe*, a Gentleman-like Man, came in a very civil manner, and told me, that he was ſorry to tell us, we muſt be ironed; but that he could not help it, being ordered by Eſquire *Pitt*, the Keeper, to do it; then there were three Pair of Irons brought, one Pair much larger than the others, and very ruſty: Mr. *Rouſe* told me, ſmiling, that Mr. *Darby* informed him, I was a dangerous Man, and that he muſt take Care of me: I told him, I did not in the leaſt blame him for his Care, but was ſorry, that he was obliged to *Darby* for his Duty; and that if thoſe Irons (which he ſaid he intended for me) had been a little freer from Ruſt, they would ſecure me as well; that as I loved Cleanlineſs, I was afraid I ſhould not be able to make them bright againſt the Court-day: This being

Digitized by Google

being ſpoke with a good deal of Spirit, ſurpriſed *Rouſe*, who ſaw that the Sight of thoſe heavy Chains did not make the leaſt Impreſſion on me, though they were brought to terrify me: He told me, laughing, that he would order a brighter Pair to be looked out, and bid one of the Underlins to go look for them, who ſoon returned with a Pair brighter, and much lighter, the firſt weighed thirty Pounds, for I had them weighed ſome time after.

As ſoon as we were ironed, we were ſhewed to our Lodgings, and diſmal they were indeed, beyond Conception. I ſhall deſcribe them as near as I can: The firſt Place was a dark Vault, four or five Steps lower than the Gate-way, where there was a ſtrong Oak Timber Cage, or Partition, ſtrongly plated with Iron: The Door we came in at, was of the ſame, and fixed to it, through which we might ſee the People go backwards and forwards, which was ſome Amuſement to us. There was no Day to be ſeen here, but a little Glimmering through the Cage-door: There was alſo a Fire-place in common for all Priſoners who were able and willing to pay Eighteen-pence a Day, to have the Liberty of being admitted to this diſmal Place, and could contribute to buy Coals and Candles, which latter muſt be kept burning all Day.

At locking up time, we were conducted to our Bed-chamber, up a dark Pair of Stairs, through a large Hall, without Table, Chair, or Stool, or any thing but the bare Walls: At one of the Corners there was the ending of a Pair of Stairs, which was incloſed with a ſtrong Cage, and a Door like that deſcribed before, with a ſtrong Lock and Chain. This Door was opened for us, and we were ſhewed up the Stairs, which had two and twenty Steps; at the Top of theſe, there was ano-

Digitized by Google

ther large Hall like the former; on one Side of which were little Cells, with a Couch Bedſted in each, on which there was a thin Flock Bed and a Rugg: In the Hall, there was alſo a long Table and Forms, but no Fire-place: This was the beſt and only Accommodation given us for our Money; however, this Apartment was much preferable to the lower, as we had Day-light, and more Air.

The next Morning my Brother came to ſee me; I was called down to him, for they would not admit him to me any higher than the Cage, where I found him ſtanding when I came down. He ſtaid with me half an Hour, and took his Leave: Soon after, there came a Couple of Friends to ſee Captain *Smith*, who were uſed in the ſame manner; they deſired to go up, that the Captain might not have the Trouble of coming down in his Irons; they were anſwered, that they might go up, on paying one Shilling each, or if the Captain would payEighteen-pence, he might come down to the Cellar, where he might ſtay all Day, and ſee his Friends. They paid the Eighteen-pence, and had the Captain down. I was ſoon ſent for, and ſo was *Harwood*. Theſe two Friends of *Smith* ſent for a roaſted Leg of Mutton, *&c.* We all dined together, drank four Flaſks of Wine, and were as merry as we could. After this, we conformed to the Rules of the Houſe, that was, to come down every Day, each paying Eighteen-pence, for which we received all Viſitors that came, without further Expence: Thus paſſed the Remainder of the Week.

The adjourned Day being come, we were carried in Coaches from *Newgate* to the *Old Bailey*; the Court being ſitting, Counſellor *Page* and Sergeant *Darnol*, who had been aſſigned Council for us, were prepared, and attended to make our Defence. The Judges having talked together about half an Hour, Captain *Smith* was called to the Bar,

and

Digitized by Google

and was aſked ſeveral Queſtions relating to *Harwood*, which he anſwered to his Advantage; upon which he was immediately diſcharged, and then the Court adjourned to the eighth of *June* following; then *Smith* and myſelf were carried back to *Newgate*; when we got there, the Turnkey propoſed to us, to lump (as he called it) the coming down Money; to which we agreed, and paid down a Guinea each for the Time we ſhould remain in that Priſon, which, Heaven knows, was too much for the Liberty of ſuch a diſmal Abode, where we muſt burn Candle all Day; but it was ſtill better than paying Eighteen-pence a Day each.

Two or three Days after this, Mr. *Nally* the Prieſt came to ſee us with a Keeper, and told us his Irons had been taken off ſome Days ago; that he ſoon expected his Liberty, which he judged to be owing to the Letter he had ſent to Count *Furrbin*. A few Days after this, two Clergymen of the eſtabliſhed Church, one of them a Doctor in Divinity, came to us: They inquired for Captain *Smith*, who being come to them, the Doctor inquired of him about Mr. *Nally* his Chaplain; *Smith* told him, that he had been to ſee him there a few Days before, and believed he was ſtill at the *Marſhalſea*, the other Side of the Water, where they might ſee him. They were ſurpriſed, they ſaid, to hear that, for they thought he had been in the ſame Priſon with himſelf, and loaded with Irons: Then the Doctor took out a Letter, which he received from the two poor Clergymen, ſetting forth the diſmal Situation they were in at *Abbeville*; that the Irons they wore were formed in ſuch a manner, that they were forced to go double, as if tied Neck and Heels; that they were perſuaded no ſuch Treatment was ever given to *Smith*'s Chaplain, or any other Priſoner in *England*; that nothing could be more wicked, in a Man of his Profeſſion, than to

Digitized by Google

write and invent such a bare-faced Forgery, for which these poor Gentlemen suffered so intolerably: They shewed Captain *Smith* the Letter which they had received from *France*, and then took their Leave, telling us, that they would go and see *Nally*.

In about ten Days after, *Nally* came to see us, and told us, he was intirely free from the *Marshal-sea*; that he had the whole City of *London* to range in; that the above mentioned Doctor came to see him, and assured him, that he should soon be sent back to *France*; that he was to be exchanged for one of the before-mentioned Clergymen, then Prisoners at *Abbeville*; all which the Doctor told him he had from Lord *Sunderland*, who had settled every Thing relating to that Affair, with the *French* Ambassador, by whom Dispatches were already sent to the Court of *France* for that Purpose. Soon after this, the two *English* Clergymen came home, and *Nally* came to take Leave of us, and afterwards embarked for *Dunkirk*.

Much about this Time, the Fleet that was ordered to observe the Motions of the *French* Fleet fitting out at *Dunkirk*, had cast Anchor before, and blocked up that Port for some time; but, by Stress of Weather, or some other Means, they got off from *Newport*, or *Ostend*; and, in a dark Night, slipped by the *English* Fleet unperceived, and sailed for *Scotland*, to the Number of Six-and-twenty Ships of War, with the Pretender on board, and cast Anchor in the *Firth* of *Forth*; but as soon as the *English* Admiral got an Account of it, he followed them. One of the *French* light Frigates, which was left for Observation, perceiving the *English* Fleet, crowded all the Sail she could, and gave the *French* Admiral notice. Upon the Receipt of which, the Admiral immediately gave Orders to weigh Anchor, and return to *Dunkirk*, which they had

Digitized by Google

had the good Fortune to effect: the *Salisbury*, a ſeventy Gun Ship, not ſo light as the reſt, only fell into the Hands of the *Engliſh*; It was ſaid, that the Pretender was on board of her that Morning, but that he had removed on board a light Frigate for his Safety.

Lord *Griffin*, and Lord *Middleton*'s two Sons, *viz.* Lord *Claremont* and Mr. *Middleton*, with one Captain *Fitzgerald*, and Fifteen other *Iriſh* Officers, were taken on board the *Saliſbury*, and ſent Priſoners to *London*. Lord *Griffin* and Lord *Middleton*'s Sons were ſent to the *Tower*, and the *Iriſh* Officers, were committed to *Newgate*, where they were put in Irons, and ſent to bear Captain *Smith* and myſelf Company; but, in a few Days after, were removed to the Preſs-yard, by Order of the Government, where they continued ſome time, expecting to be tried for their Lives, which would certainly have happened, had it not been, that two *Engliſh* Ships, with Cloathing, *&c.* for the *Engliſh* Army in *Spain*, (on board of which were a good Number of *French* Refugees) fell into the Hands of the *French*. All their Officers were made Priſoners, but were ſoon exchanged for the abovementioned *Iriſh* Officers, and were ſent to *Canterbury*, and had that Town for their Priſon, until the Exchange was made.

All the Time they ſtaid in the Preſs-yard, there was a Dinner every Day of ſeveral Diſhes, with a ſmall Hamper of Wine, ſent from a Tavern near *Newgate*; and they never knew to whom they were obliged for that Benefaction; but whoever it was, there was Orders ſent, that Captain *Smith* and myſelf ſhould partake of the Dinner; and we were every Day admitted to the Preſs-yard, at one of the Clock, and ſtaid till four, untill the Time of our Tryal.

Digitized by Google

This was no ſmall Comfort to us, being three Hours every Day out of our dark and diſmal Cellar, and in good Company, for they never were without two, three, or more Gentlemen from abroad to dine with them, and ſeldom miſſed a Day of having a Viſit from one Mr. *Hefernan*, famous for the Harp, which he never failed to bring with him to divert the Gentlemen; and ſometimes would leave it there for three Weeks, to avoid the Trouble of fetching it. Thus we paſſed our Time agreeably to the eighth of *June*, which put an End to our Mirth, and changed the Scene to a more gloomy one.

This Day at nine o'Clock in the Morning, Captain *Smith* and myſelf were carried in different Coaches to the *Old Bailey*, and about ten the Court being ſitting, we were ordered to the Bar, and again arraigned. I was ordered to the Bail Dock, and the Court proceeded to Captain *Smith*'s Tryal, which laſted about four Hours. He was found guilty, and was returned to the Bail Dock, and I was put to the Bar and tried. I ſhall not trouble the Reader with many of the Particulars of this Tryal, which laſted above two Hours and a half; and ſhall only ſay, that my Council pleaded ſtrongly, my being under the Articles of *Limerick*; and therefore hoped the Court would grant me the Benefit of them Articles, which they were ready to prove I was intitled to; and then called my Witneſſes, which were ſworn; the Chief of which was my Lady *Tyrone*, who knew me in *Limerick* at the Time of the Surrender, and after that in *France*, at our landing at *Breſt*. This, and all my Defence, was over-ruled, and the Jury brought in their Verdict, guilty. At this my poor Brother, who was cloſe to the Bar, ſounded away, and fell down motionleſs. This Verdict made a greater Impreſſion on him. than it did on me, and I here ſolemnly declare,

Digitized by Google

declare, that ſeeing him in that Condition for near a Quarter of an Hour, gave me more Concern, than the Dread of any Sentence that ſhould paſs upon me. As ſoon as he came to himſelf, he was carried away in a Chair. One of the learned Judges, whoſe Name was *Powel*, made a long Harangue to Captain *Smith*, and to me; which he concluded, telling us, that good Subjects ſhould chuſe rather to lie down in a Ditch, and ſtarve, than take up Arms againſt their lawful Prince: To which I took the Liberty to anſwer, that they muſt be good Subjects indeed; that, if that Doctrine had been preached and adhered to at the Revolution, I ſhould not be now hampered as I was. We were then aſked ſeverally, whether we had any thing to offer before Sentence ſhould paſs; we both replied, nothing but to pray the Court to recommend us to her Majeſty's Mercy; and then Sir *Charles Hedges* proceeded to paſs Sentence on us, as is uſual in Caſes of High Treaſon.

Sentence being paſſed, we were carried back to *Newgate* in Coaches through a great Croud, ſome pitying, and others reviling us, as is generally the Caſe. When we came to *Newgate*, we were permitted to ſit in the Lodge for a Couple of Hours with ſome Friends that followed us: Whilſt we were there, my Brother came pretty well recovered, but as pale as a Ghoſt, exhorting me to keep up my Spirits. I aſſured him, that my Spirits in no ſort failed me; and that I had reſigned myſelf intirely to the Will of God, begging him not to grieve, or give himſelf any Concern. All the Company took Notice, that I appeared both by my Countenance and Speech very chearful, and Captain *Smith* remarkably ſo.

The Company being gone, my Brother told me he would ſend me a Feather Bed, *&c.* if I might have Leave to have it. I ſpoke to the Turnkey,

Digitized by Google

who told me I might, on paying half a Crown. My Brother took his Leave, and Captain *Smith* and myſelf were conducted to the condemned Hole. Between eight and nine o'Clock there came two Porters with a Bed, Sheets, and every thing fit to lie clean on, with a large Matt to put under the Bed, a Box of Candles, and Books ſuitable for our Circumſtance, with a Letter to let me know he would come to ſee me the next Day, and an Account of what he had ſent me.

We were thus far provided, but wanted a Table and Chairs; with theſe we were ſupply'd the next Day, by one of the Turnkeys, who told me, he had hired a Table and three Chairs for the three Gentlemen that were there laſt, for half a Guinea, and that we might have them if we pleas'd; this we agreed to, for we could not want them. I mention this to ſhew that even the condemned are not exempt from Extortions in *Newgate*. I ſtuck half a Dozen Tobacco Pipes in the Wall, and put ſix Candles in them, which kept continually burning both Day and Night to enliven us: I had the Bed made, and the Room clean'd by a Servant Maid; I ſent to the Cook we dealt with before, and deſired he would ſend us our Dinners as uſual, which he did. At Bed Time we went regularly to Bed, Captain *Smith* lay with me; we paſt our Time in Reading and Praying, and now and then with our Friends, until the ſecond Council Night after our Tryals, when the Judges made their Report; whereupon her Majeſty was graciouſly pleas'd to grant a Reprieve for me for ninety nine Years, on the Petition of the ſix following great Perſonages delivered to her Majeſty in Council, *viz.* the Dutcheſs of *Marlborough*, the Duke of *Ormond*, the Duke of *Northumberland*, the Duke of *Devonſhire*, the Duke of *Grafton*, and the Lord *Sunderland*; and ſeconded by his Royal Highneſs Prince *George* of *Denmark*,

Digitized by Google

Denmark, Lord High Admiral: This good News my Brother kept from me, tho' he wrote to me, telling me that he was uſing his beſt Endeavours, and that tho' he had good Friends, nothing could be certain, (Witneſs the Behaviour of the Commiſſioners before mentioned, notwithſtanding the Queen's Letter) he exhorted me to take Care of my Soul, to make my Peace with God, and that if I was prepared to die, I ſhould be the fitter to live, &c. Two Days before I received this Letter, Mr. *Rouſe* the head Turnkey acquainted Captain *Smith*, that, he muſt make the beſt Uſe he could of his Time, for there was a Day appointed for his Execution, but that the Warrant for that Purpoſe was not yet come down: This News produced no Change in the Captain, who ſaid no more but God's Will be done, and ſo went up the Steps from the Hatch to his Devotion; when he was gone, I ask'd Mr. *Rouſe* if he had any News for me, he told me ſmiling, that the old Proverb was, *Naught was never in Danger*.

I went up and joined the Captain in Prayers, when done, he got up and came to me, and embraced me, telling me that he found a ſecret Joy becauſe I was not to ſhare his Fate; I thank'd him, and aſſured him that I knew nothing yet to the contrary; he begg'd, if I ſhould be reprieved, that I would give him my Hand and Word I would ſtay with him and bear him Company to the laſt. I told him he need not doubt it, burſting out into Tears and Sobs, that I could not utter a Word for ſome Minutes; the poor Captain endeavour'd to comfort me: The next Day a Reprieve came to me, I was call'd down to the Lodge, my Brother was there, and wiſh'd me Joy, telling me, that by the Bleſſing of God his Friends had procured a Reprieve for ninety nine Years, and hoped whilſt I lived to enjoy it I ſhould make good uſe of it.

My

Digitized by Google

My Irons were immediately taken off, and my going back to the Maſter's Side propoſed, but I told the Keeper that I had promis'd Captain *Smith* to ſtay and bear him Company, if he would pleaſe to indulge me ſo far; he told me that it was not cuſtomary, but to oblige me he would let me ſtay: My Brother went up with me to ſee the Captain, who expreſſed his Joy at my good Fortune, and ſeeing me lighten'd of my Irons. My Brother condoled his Misfortune, then ordered a Bottle of Sack and a Toaſt; the Captain took a Glaſs of it, and ſeemed compoſed and ſatisfied, and not under the Terrors of Mind Men in his Circumſtances uſually appear in. At my Brother's going, he deſired me to be as careful as poſſible of the Captain, and not to let him want any Thing that was in my Power. The poor Gentleman told my Brother before he went, that his Friends were giving themſelves unneceſſary Trouble, for he knew by ſeveral Expreſſions from ſome of the Judges at his Tryal, that his Death was determined, and that they were throwing away their Time and Money.

In a few Days after the Death Warrant came down, the Day appointed for his Execution was ten Days after, which when told him, cauſed no Alteration in his Behaviour; he bleſt and praiſed God, and went to his Devotion for about half an Hour, in which I joined him, as I always did whilſt I was admitted to ſtay with him, which was not above four or five Days after; however our Manner of Living was altered for the worſe, all Viſitors that came to ſee him or me, were obliged to ſtand in the Lodge at the Hatch, and we on the Stairs to talk to them. All Priſoners under Sentence were obliged by Order to go to Chapel every Day, tho' ſome were of a different Communion, as Captain *Smith* was.

About.

Digitized by Google

About five Days before the Execution, *Paul Lorrain* the Ordinary of *Newgate*, for Reaſons beſt known to himſelf, had me removed to my old Quarters on the Maſter's Side, which was a great Affliction to the poor Gentleman as well as to me; however, we both had a Promiſe that I ſhould be admitted to come to take my Leave of him at nine o' Clock on the Morning of his Execution. I left my Bed and every Thing I had there for his Uſe, took my leave, and went to my old Quarters. I was indulged by Mr. *Rouſe*, ſometimes to viſit ſix Gentlemen confined there ſince the Year 97, or 98: Theſe ſix were, Captain *Counter*, Major *Bernardy*, Mr. *Meldrom*, Mr. *Chambers*, Mr. *Caſſells*, and Mr. *Blackburn*, who were taken on the Secretary of States Warrant, and confined there on Suſpicion of having committed ſome overt Act in the Plot made for aſſaſſinating King *William*, for which, Sir *John Fenwick*, and Sir *William Perkins* were executed; thoſe ſix Gentlemen ended their Days there, *Counter* excepted, who was moved that Year (being in a bad State of Health) to the *King*'s *Bench* for the Benefit of the Air. It was remarkable that they were never examin'd, or brought to Tryal, tho' they often made Application to the Courts, the King and Parliament for that Purpoſe, and ſtill they were excepted out of all Acts of Indemnity that paſt in that and the ſubſequent Reigns. *Blackburn* I viſited in *April*, 1745, he was then in the Preſs-yard, well and as hearty as ever. The Day for Captain *Smith*'s Execution being come, there was a vaſt Crowd about *Newgate*; tho' I was reprieved, yet as I had no Irons on, it was not thought ſafe to bring me to take my laſt leave of him, but rather to bring him to me, which they did by nine o' Clock in the Morning: He came in with the ſame blooming Countenance, having a ſmall Box under his Arm. As I expected him, I had

Digitized by Google

had a Couple of large Candles ready light in a little back Room we us'd to ſit in; he embrac'd me tenderly, telling me he was come to take his laſt and eternal Farewel: Theſe Words ſo melted me, that I returned no Anſwer, but cryed out for ſome Time bitterly. My Paſſion having got Vent after ſhedding a Torrent of Tears, I endeavoured to expreſs my Concern for him, to all which he bid me not to grieve, that it could be of no Service to him or myſelf to lament ſo immoderately, and ſaid I ſhould rather rejoice, for he was leaving a miſerable World to enjoy a bleſſed Eternity, thro' our Lord *Jeſus Chriſt*. After which, I joined in Prayer with him, which being over he opened the Box, took out a couple of Stags Tongues, and a *French* Roul; he pared and cut one of the Tongues, deſiring me to eat. I ſaid I could not. He ſaid, that he ſaw my Heart was full, and would not inſiſt on it? I ask'd him what Wine he'd chuſe to take, he told me he would drink nothing ſtrong: I call'd for a Bottle of Mead, he Breakfaſted, and took two or three Glaſſes; when he had done, *Paul Lorrain* the Ordinary came in, ſaluted the Captain and me, and made a pretty long and moving Exhortation ſuitable to the Occaſion. When he had done, the Captain who had attentively liſtened to his Diſcourſe, returned him Thanks. Mr. *Lorrain* deſired him to make the beſt of the few Hours he had to live, recommending him to the Mercy of God, telling him that he would be ready to attend him to the Place of Execution. The Captain returned him Thanks, and told him that if it could be avoided, he would not give him that Trouble; for that above twenty Years before he had embraced the *Roman* Catholick Religion, of which he had given him Notice the firſt Time he came to viſit him; that by God's Aſſiſtance,

Digitized by Google

Aſſiſtance, he was reſolved to die a Member (though an unworthy one) of that Church: To this Mr. *Lorrain* anſwered, that he was very ſorry for it, but that neveverthelefs, if he had any Speech or Confeſſion to make, he would have it truly and carefully publiſh'd: To this the Captain made Anſwer, that his Circumſtances were at ſo low an Ebb, he had nothing left to ſatisfie a poor Man that had attended him ſince the Beginning of his Confinement; that what he had to ſay to the World, he had put in the beſt Form he could, and had given it to that Man as the only Reward in his Power, and wiſh'd it might anſwer the poor Man's Expectation, as well as his own Intention: To this Mr. *Lorrain* made Anſwer, that it was giving away his Perquiſites, which put the Captain in an Humour unbecoming a Man appointed to die, for he took the Clergyman by the Arm, and bidding him begone, asking him if it was a proper Time to talk of Perquiſites, when he came to exhort him for the good of his Soul: To this Mr. *Lorrain* replyed not a Word, and went away quietly; by this it ſeems, the Ordinary of *Newgate* has his Perquiſites more at Heart than the Souls he prays for. The Captain ſtay'd with me until about Eleven; we embraced tenderly, and we took our laſt Farewel: He was conducted back through a great Crowd to the condemn'd Hole. About three o' Clock the Sheriffs came to demand him, purſuant to his Sentence, he was drawn on a Hurdle to Execution Dock, the Place for executing Seafaring Men. The Queen was graciouſly pleas'd to remit that Part of the Sentence, of dividing him in four Quarters, *&c.* His Head was ſever'd from his Body by the Executioner, and both given to his Friends to be bury'd.

My Brother came to ſee me the ſecond Day after his Execution, deſiring me not to forget to return God

Digitized by Google

God Thanks for all his Mercies, and particularly for his great Deliverance out of this laſt Danger; telling me however, that I muſt have Patience, tho' he had procured a Reprieve he had not obtain'd my Liberty; for I was to tranſport myſelf to ſome of her Majeſty's Plantations in *America*, which he by no Means liked, ſaid he intended to apply to his Friends for a free Pardon, which would without Doubt take up a conſiderable Time. I told him I had much rather comply with the Terms of the Reprieve, and go to *America* or any Place elſe, rather than to put him to farther Trouble or Expence, which he muſt be at before he could gain his Ends; but he ſaid, he would try what could be done; once more exhorting me to Patience, ſo he went away.

I made no Difficulty to tell Mr. *Rouſe* who was always civil, what my Brother told me: He ſhaked his Head, telling me that he knew my Brother had great Intereſt at Court, and might poſſibly by that Intereſt procure a Pardon, but it would prove certainly the Work of Time, and no ſmall Expence; that the Clauſe in the Reprieve did not ſignifie, that it was merely a Matter of Form, that when at Liberty I might go where I would; that he had known many under the ſame Obligation, walk the Streets of *London* publickly unmoleſted, and I might do ſo to.

The next Time my Brother came, I told him all Mr. *Rouſe* ſaid, but he would not approve of it; but went his own Road, in which he ſucceeded, though it took a long Time.

In a few Days after Mr. *Rouſe* came and told me, that a Gentleman who had been long confined on an Eſcape Warrant, was diſcharged that Morning, who had a pretty ſnug Room; that he had been at the Expence of making a Window that look'd into the Street, and other Conveniencies, that I might put up a Bed there; it would be a great Amuſe-

ment

Digitized by Google

ment to me to ſee the People go to and fro, beſide the Benefit of more Air, and it would ſave me the daily Trouble of coming down three Pair of Stairs into a dark Vault, where I was obliged to burn Candles all Day; beſides I ſhould be out of the Noiſe of ſuch Company as came to the Maſter's Side. I thank'd him for his Civility, and ask'd him if there was a Fire Place? He ſaid there was, and that I might go with him and ſee it when I pleas'd; I went directly, I lik'd the Room, and wiſhed myſelf in it for the Time I was to ſtay: He deſired me to conſider ſpeedily, for that he was ſure it would ſoon be taken. I told him I would immediately ſend to my Brother, for I could do nothing without him: I accordingly ſent him a Letter concerning the Room, who anſwer'd he would be with me the next Morning by Ten o' Clock, deſiring I would pray Mr. *Rouſe* to be in the Way. I ſhewed my Brother's Letter to Mr. *Rouſe*, who promis'd not to ſtir out: My Brother came at the Time appointed, we went to ſee the Room, my Brother approved of it; the Keeper was ſent for, and he agreed to let me have it for two Guineas down, and half a Crown *per* Week, as long as I ſhould ſtay, and all Friends that came to ſee me, were to be admitted without farther Expence. My Brother paid down the two Guineas, and next Day ſent an Upholder to furniſh out the Room. I told him I had a Bed and deſired he might be as expeditious as poſſible in getting the reſt of the Furniture; he aſſured me, that if my Brother thought fit, every Thing ſhould be fix'd the next Day, which was accordingly done; every Thing being finiſh'd, and the Room clean'd out, the next Day I took Poſſeſſion. Mr. *Rouſe* and a Friend or two more took a hearty Bottle with me, and we ſpent the Evening very chearfully, and I thought my ſelf happy, and had the beſt Night's Reſt in my new Apartment, that I had ſince I came to *Newgate*. I lik'd my Room ſo well, that I ſtudied

Digitized by Google

died how to make it not only convenient, but elegant: Having got Chairs, Tables, looking Glaſſes, &c. I adorned my Window with Flowers in Pots, there being a good Space between the Saſh and the Bars, which perfumed the Room, and gave it an agreeable Look; here I could now receive all Friends in Decency. My Brother ſent me ſome Table Linen, half a Dozen Silver handled Knives and Forks, two Silver Spoons, Drinking Glaſſes, &c. all which he let me know came from one Mrs. *Chivers* a Couſin of ours, who was a Silver Smith's Widow, who promiſed in a few Days to come along with other Friends to dine with me, of which they would give me Notice.

A few Days after I had a Meſſenger at Ten o' Clock in the Morning, to let me know they would come at One o' Clock, and that they would bring their Dinner: I got my Room in the beſt Order I could, and can aſſure my Reader, it made no mean Figure. My Friends being come, I went to receive them at the Bottom of the Stairs, and conducted them to my Room, which did not a little ſurprize them, ſeeing my little Garden of thirty Pots of different Sizes, and Flowers ranged in an agreeable Order before the Window. In half an Hour after, a Drawer came from the Fountain Tavern, where Dinner was beſpoke, to let us know it was ready: He was ordered to bring it up; I laid the Cloth, and Dinner being ſerved up, we dined moſt elegantly. My Readers may gueſs what pleaſing Senſations I felt at this Entertainment, after the Miſeries I endured, a Monarch on his Throne never taſted ſuch Delights as I did then in *Newgate*, being freed from the Terrors of Death, eaſed of my Chains, and thus ſurrounded with my deareſt Friends. My Company ſtaid with me till locking up time, and then took their Leaves. I had frequent Viſits from ſome one or other of them afterwards, which made my Confinement no ways

Digitized by Google

ways grievous; but never had them again all together. Having had ſeveral other Adventures, too inconſiderable to mention, I ſpent the Remainder of the Year 1708.

CHAP. XVI.

THE Year following, ſoon after *Chriſtmas*, my Brother informed me, that his Friends intended to petition the Queen for my Pardon; that he had this good News from his Lady, the Counteſs of *Arlington*, who aſſured him, that ſhe would not let them ſleep upon it, and would make all the Intereſt in her Power to obtain it. He told me, that though he was ſure of Succeſs, it would admit of Delays, exhorting my Patience: I aſſured him, that I was no way uneaſy, but the great Expences he was at daily on my Account, ſince I had moved my Lodging ſo much for the better; beſides that, I had conſtant Viſitors, which made me ſpend my Time more agreeably.

One *Saturday* Evening I received a Letter from a young Lady, ſigned *Banks*, to let me know, that the next Day ſhe intended to dine with me; and as two was no Company, deſired I would invite any Friend of mine; that I muſt provide no Dinner, for ſhe would take Care of that, and would be with me before two o'Clock. This Letter I ſhewed to Mr. *Rouſe*, and begged he would do me the Favour to dine with us, which he promiſed he would. The next Day before the Hour came, I laid the Cloath; the Lady came attended by a Drawer from a Tavern, and another Boy, with two Diſhes of Meat covered, the one was a fine Knuckle of Veal, Bacon, and Greens; the other, was a Couple of crammed Fowls, with Oyſter Sauce: This might be thought a ſufficient Dinner for three; but Providence was ſtill kinder; we

Digitized by Google

had hardly ſat down, when one of the Turnkeys came and told me privately, there was a Lady in the Lodge, who he thought had brought another Dinner. I told Mrs. *Banks*, who deſired ſhe might be directly brought up; for that they muſt be good and welcome Gueſts to Priſoners who fetch any Thing.

The Lady was brought up, attended alſo by a Tavern-boy, who brought a charming Loin of Veal, Pickles, and a Plate of Aſparagus. When at Dinner, I found that the two Ladies were no Strangers to each other. They ſpoke very friendly, and ſeemed to be glad of meeting thus by Chance. We had ſcarce made an End of our Dinner, when the Turnkey came to let me know, there was a Lady, whoſe Name was *Pew*, was come to ſee me. As ſoon as the other Ladies heard the Name, they deſired ſhe might be brought up: I ſaid ſmiling, that I hoped ſhe had brought no Dinner. As ſoon as ſhe came in, and the uſual Compliments over, I cleared the Table; put the Diſhes, *&c.* out of the Way, and laid on a Flaſk of Port, with Glaſſes. Knowing Mrs. *Pew* loved Punch, I ordered the Turnkey to beſpeak a Bowl of it, which, when brought up, every one was at Liberty to drink what they liked. Thus we enjoyed ourſelves merrily and friendly for about two Hours, when on a ſudden ſome Differences aroſe among the Ladies. No two were of a Side, but every one for herſelf, until at laſt a Battle enſued, which was attended with Bloodſhed and Battery, and other Violence done to the Ladies Head-dreſſes, which in thoſe Days were three Stories high, tied with at leaſt ten Yards of Ribbons. In an Inſtant the Room was ſtrewed over with Fragments of Handkerchiefs, Laces, Lawns, Muſlins, and the ſeveral other Regimentals of theſe Heroins. No ſooner we parted them, but they returned again to the Charge, until at laſt

Digitized by Google

laſt the Heat of the Action being over, and the Ladies ſatisfied with the Revenge they had taken of each other, a Peace was concluded by the Mediation of Mr. *Rouſe*, and they made Friends, and were as loving as ever. I ſupplied them with Combs, they combed and dreſſed each others Heads as well as they could, not in the high-flying Faſhion, but like humble Quakers, with Sarſnet Hoods, that eſcaped the Fray, by the Vigilance of Mr. *Rouſe*.

No ſooner were they dreſſed, but they looked at each other, laughing heartily at the ſtrange Figure (as they called it) they made. To ſet all Things right, Mrs. *Pew* ſaid, ſhe had brought no Dinner, and therefore would have a Bowl of Arrack Punch, to which the others agreed, but declared that it ſhould be put to the Bill, and paid among them; this was like to cauſe another Diſpute, but I deſired it might be left to Mr. *Rouſe*, which was agreed to, and was by him decided, to be put to the Bill. Thus we paſſed the Evening until ten o'Clock, when they deſired a Coach might be called, and a Bill brought, which amounted to about ſeven or eight and twenty Shillings. The ladies flung down their half Guineas each, ordering the Remainder to be given to the Under-Turnkey that was in waiting. The Coach being come, Mr. *Rouſe* indulged me to let me go down with him, to ſee the Ladies to the Coach, where we took our Leaves of them, and they went together like three loving Siſters.

My Reader may be deſirous to know how, being cloſe confined, I came acquainted with theſe Ladies, which happened by their being intimate with Mrs. *Goodman*, and often coming to viſit her, when confined in the *Marſhalſea*. Theſe Ladies came afterwards to ſee me, but nothing worth Notice happened for ſeveral Months after this, but Viſits from my Brother, and other Friends, who were all,

Digitized by Google

as well as myſelf, full of Hopes that I ſhould ſoon be at Liberty; but were often diſappointed until about the Middle of *July*, at which time my Brother came with the joyful News that my Pardon was granted by her Majeſty, and paſſed the great Seal of *England*, and he would ſoon bring and ſhew it to me; and that at the next Seſſions at the *Old Bailey*, which was to be the latter End of that Month, I was to be brought there to plead it, and then to be at full Liberty. I need not expreſs what Joys and Spirits this gave me, to ſee myſelf ſo near being releaſed from a tedious Confinement of about two Years and a half, having been in Irons more than fifteen Months of the Time.

Two or three Days after this, Mr. *Rouſe*, who was always my good Friend, and glad of any Opportunity to bring me good News, came one Evening with Mr. *Smith*, Clerk of the Papers, and told me, that they were juſt come from the Crown-Office in the *Temple*, where they had ſeen my free Pardon, under the Broad Seal: We all three took a hearty Glaſs on the Occaſion: They told me, if I would be good, and not tranſgreſs, I ſhould have Leave to go the next Morning to viſit and ſurprize my Brother at *Somerſet-houſe*, but muſt not fail returning at locking up time. This I aſſured them I would punctually obſerve, giving them my ſincere Thanks for ſo great a Favour; and the next Day at nine o'Clock they both came, and aſked me if I was ready: I told them I was. One of the under Servants was ordered to call a Coach, which being come, they conducted me to it, and came in with me. This I by no means liked, to go viſit my Brother with two Keepers; but I ſaid nothing; the Coachman was ordered by Mr. *Rouſe* to drive to the *Fountain* Tavern juſt by, where we went in, took a Bottle of Old Hock for a Whet, and then they put me into the Coach, charging me to be back according

Digitized by Google

according to Promiſe. I aſſured them I would, and ordered the Coachman to drive to *Somerſet-houſe*: Being come there, I inquired for the Counteſs of *Arlington*'s Lodgings; then for Mr. *Drake*. I was ſhewed to his Apartment, where I found him, his Wife, and a little Niece of mine, about two Years old, at Breakfaſt; great was both their Surprize; my Brother changed Colour, and was frightened, for he told me after, he thought I had made my Eſcape; but when I told him how Things were, he was eaſy, and we ſat down to Breakfaſt. They were over-joyed to ſee me, as I was to ſee them, and particularly ſo, at the Sight of my little Niece; never having ſeen Niece or Nephew before. I dined with them, and ſpent the Afternoon, until eight o'Clock, when I took my Leave, and returned to my Caſtle.

After this, I had the Liberty to go in and out when I pleaſed, in order to uſe myſelf to the Air by Degrees, after my long Confinement; but was charged never to go far without acquainting Mr. *Rouſe*, or Mr. *Smith*, when, or what Part of the Town I ſhould take a Ramble to. This I faithfully obſerved, but once when I tranſgreſſed and ſtaid out all Night, and returned by ſix the next Morning, I was told, in a merry Mood, by *Rouſe* and *Smith*, that, conſidering the many fair Acquaintances I had, they wondered I had been ſo long honeſt.

In a few Days my Brother came, brought and ſhewed me the Pardon, which, inſtead of being ſealed with the Arms of *England*, as I imagined all Things under the great or broad Seal to be, it was the Queen's Face, or Head, ſtamped on yellow Wax. My Brother ſtaid with me about an Hour, and took his Leave. I had Liberty to be in and out until the Seſſions, the laſt Day of which I was conducted to the *Old Bailey*, and put to

Digitized by Google

the Bar; whereupon the Court, in the uſual Form, aſked me, what I had to ſay, why Execution of my former Sentence ſhould not be performed, for the many Treaſons, Murders, *&c.* for which I had been arraigned, tried, and found guilty by my Country? To which I anſwered, that I pleaded the Queen's Pardon; then the Pardon was ordered to be read: I was then deſired to kneel down, and pray for the Queen, which having done, I got up, and one of the Judges then made a Speech ſuitable to the Occaſion, and ſaid, among other Things, that notwithſtanding the Treaſons, *&c.* for which I was found guilty, the Queen had been graciouſly pleaſed to grant her Royal Pardon, by which I was become a new Subject. I was again ordered to kneel down, and pray for the Queen, and thank the Court. While I was on my Knees, the Court pronounced theſe Words, *Riſe up you new-born Babe*, &c. I got up, thanked the Court, making a low Obeiſance, and went away with my Brother, and other Friends, who came to ſee the Ceremony, and returned to *Newgate*, and paid 3 *l.* 6 *s.* 8 *d.* Fees; then drank a Bottle with Eſquire *Pitts*, the Keeper, and the ſubaltern Officers of *Newgate*, and went off in Triumph. This happened on the laſt of *July*, 1708.

CHAP. XVII.

I Now began to think of returning to the Place of Action, where all *Europe* was concerned, and where I might earn a Livelihood, as I had done before: This I communicated to my Brother, telling him, that the firſt Opportunity I would go for *Flanders*: He deſired me not to be in haſte, but wait for a favourable one. I told him I would, and that I hoped it would not be long before it would

Digitized by Google

would offer. I went daily with him to return Thanks to the honourable Perſons who had ſo generouſly and ſucceſsfully ſolicited my Pardon.

One Day, in our Walk from *Lincoln*'s-*Inn-Fields*, he deſired me to go and take ſome Refreſhment at the *Queen*'s *Arms* Tavern in *Wild-ſtreet*, kept by one *King*, a noted Undertaker of Funerals, moſtly for Roman Catholicks. We were ſhewed to a large Parlour, where we had not long remained, before three other Gentlemen came in on the like Occaſion: One of them, named *Francis Mansfield*, was talking to his Friends of the War in *Flanders*: I underſtood by his Diſcourſe, he was a Cadet in the firſt Regiment of her Majeſty's Foot Guards; and that he had a Furlow for three Months, two of which were yet unexpired, and which he intended to make no further Uſe of, as his Friends had procured a Lieutenancy of Dragoons for him in the Queen's Army in *Spain*, to which he muſt go, and not return to *Flanders*. I wiſhed myſelf poſſeſſed of the Furlow, and began to ſtudy how I might come at it. I ſoon hit on a Method of getting it. As ſoon as the three Gentlemen had finiſhed their Wine, and talked of going, ours being alſo out, I pulled out my Watch (for my Brother had given me one) and begged my Brother's Pardon for parting ſo abruptly, for I had like to forget an Appointment I had made to meet a Gentleman in *Lincoln*'s-*Inn-Fields*, which was now within ten Minutes of the Time.

We parted at the Tavern Door, he going one Way, and I the other. As ſoon as he turned his Back, I put myſelf in a convenient Place to watch the Gentlemen's coming out, which they ſoon did; I followed them up *Wild-ſtreet*, and they croſſed *Drury-Lane* into *Long-Acre*, where at the going into *Red Lyon Court*, they parted, Mr. *Mansfield* going through that Court in his Way to *Bow-ſtreet*,

Digitized by Google

Covent-Garden. I followed him until he came to the *Roebuck* Tavern Door, where I accoſted him, begging his Pardon, and praying he would give me Leave to take a Glaſs of Rheniſh with him, having ſomething to ſay to him; to which he civilly and readily conſented, aſking me, if he had not juſt now ſeen me at the *Queen's Arms* in *Wild-ſtreet?* I told him he had, and that it was from that I took this Freedom, which I hoped he would excuſe. I called for a Bottle of Rheniſh and ſome Sugar: After drinking a Glaſs or two, I proceeded to my Buſineſs, and told him, I underſtood he had a Furlow, which I thought could be of no farther Uſe to him; if ſo, and he would be ſo good as to let me have it, it would be of ſingular Service to me, for I had ſome Buſineſs to *Flanders*; that in getting a Paſs, I might probably meet with Delays and Expence, both which I would gladly avoid, which his granting my Requeſt would enable me to do, by putting it in my Power to go immediately off, and I ſhould for ever acknowledge ſo ſingular a Favour: He did not heſitate a Moment, but took it out of his Letter Caſe, and gave it me, telling me, it was at my Service, and wiſhing it might anſwer my Ends. I thanked him very kindly, telling him he had done his Part. We finiſhed our Bottle, and after that a Bottle of Prieſt Port, which we drank off in the loyal Healths then moſt in vogue. He offered to pay the Reckoning, which I would by no Means ſuffer; but all my Intreaties could not prevent his making it a Club, which I at laſt agreed to, and ſo we parted.

I was well pleaſed with this Meeting, and dined with my Brother, who obſerved, that my Spirits were more elevated than uſual; I durſt not tell him the Cauſe: That Afternoon we went to buy ſome Neceſſaries I wanted: I told him, I would have every thing in readineſs, that I might meet with

Digitized by Google

with no Delay, when an Opportunity ſhould offer for my Departure. I was now grown penſive again, being puzzled how I could make a ſafe Uſe of the Furlow, fearing leſt I might meet with Difficulties, and perhaps be found out. My Brother's Wife took Notice, that I was grown very dull ſince Dinner. I told her, that I was not well; that I had drank Rheniſh, and ſome Port Wine, which did not ſeem to agree well together, but that it would go off before Morning. I took my Leave that Night, and went to Bed. Here I was at full Liberty to think, and after many fluctuating Thoughts, I came to a Reſolution to go the next Morning at Nine to the War Office at *Whitehall*.

I went next Morning accordingly, and inquired for Eſquire *Walpole*, the then Secretary of War, afterwards Sir *Robert Walpole*, *&c.* I was told by one of the Clerks, he was not yet come, but if I had any thing to do, that they ſat there for the Diſpatch of Buſineſs. I told them my Buſineſs was with Eſquire *Walpole:* Then I was told, I muſt wait until he came. He ſoon did; and the Clerk to whom I ſpoke told me, there he was. I went up to him with a Soldier's Aſſurance; told him my Name was *Mansfield*, and had the Honour to ſerve as a Cadet in her Majeſty's firſt Regiment of Guards: that I came over on ſome earneſt Buſineſs, and had a Furlow for three Months, of which there was yet two unexpired; but as there was a great Rumour that *Tournay* would ſoon be beſieged, which might probably bring on a Battle, that my Fortune depended on being preſent at the Time of Action; and though the Buſineſs I came about was not finiſhed, yet I had Thoughts of returning to *Flanders*. I ſhewed him my Furlow, telling him, that the Magiſtrates of Ports, and the Maſters of Ships might be unacquainted with a Colonel's Hand Writing, which might give me ſome

Digitized by Google

ſome Delays, that might be of great Prejudice to me. I therefore prayed he would give me a Paſs, which would effectually prevent all Delays. He took the Furlow and read it, and ſaid, he would immediately order a Paſs to be filled. Having waited about an Hour, I was called in to him; he then gave me a Paſs, with a Letter to recommend me, not to any particular Perſon, but directed in general to the Mayors, and other Magiſtrates, *&c.* of any of her Majeſty's Sea Ports leading to *Holland* or *Flanders*, requiring them to forward me as much as in them lay; which Paſs and Letter he put into my Hands, wiſhing me a ſafe and ſpeedy Paſſage, and alſo wiſhed that her Majeſty had a hundred thouſand ſuch Men in *Flanders*. I thanked him, making a low Bow, and went off.

In paſſing by *Charing-Croſs*, I called at the Trunk-maker's, and bought a Trunk, which I ſent to my Lodging. I afterwards went to Breakfaſt with my Brother; and told him my Intention of going off the next Day, praying him not to take it amiſs, for that I could not be eaſy while I ſtaid: This ſudden Motion ſurpriſing him, he aſked me, how I could think of going ſo ſoon; that there muſt be ſome little Neceſſaries got ready before I could think of going, which would take up time; but that as I was in ſuch haſte, he would after Breakfaſt go with me, and get what I ſhould have occaſion for. I told him, that might ſoon be done; that I had purchaſed a Trunk, which was ſent to my Lodging, to put my Things in; that I ſhould want but very little, being reſolved not to incumber myſelf too much in my Voyage; that I wanted nothing to compleat an Equipage ſufficient for a Traveller, but a Pair of Boots, Whip and Spurs, which could be got ready made.

Breakfaſt being over, we went out, and I furniſhed myſelf with the above Particulars, together with

Digitized by Google

with one Pair of Shoes, and four Pair of Stockings, two of them Silk. Theſe Things being ſent to my Lodging, my Brother took me to one Mr. *Arthur*, a Banker in the City, an intimate Acquaintance of his, whom he told, that I intended going abroad, and hoped he would be ſo kind to recommend me to ſome Correſpondent beyond the Seas, who might adviſe me to the beſt and ſafeſt Way on my Travels, and do me Service. Mr. *Arthur* aſked me what Rout I intended to take: I told him to *Flanders* by the Way of *Dover*; that I intended to ſee ſome Gentlemen that had been my Fellow Priſoners, who had been taken on board the *Saliſbury*, and were now at *Canterbury*, expecting to be exchanged, and to return to *France*; that I hoped by the Bleſſing of God to be there next Night; he told me, if ſo, he would trouble me with a Letter to Captain *Fitzgerald*, who was one of theſe Priſoners: I told him I knew him very well, and would deliver his Letter with Pleaſure. He thanked me, and ſaid, he ſuppoſed I would go by the way of *Oſtend*; and if ſo, he would give me a Letter to Mr. *Thomas Ray*, a Banker there, who he thought would do me any Service in his Power: I thanked him, as did my Brother, who gave him ten Pounds, for which Sum he took a Bill on ſaid *Ray*, and made me a Preſent of it, telling me, it was ſafer and better to take Paper than the Money; and that Mr. *Ray* would pay the Money, or give me a Bill on a Correſpondent, if any he had, in thoſe Parts I intended travelling to.

This being ſettled, he gave me the two Letters, the one for Captain *Fitzgerald*, the other for Mr. *Ray*, and we took our Leave: My Brother then went with me to the *Star* Inn, on *Fiſh-ſtreet Hill*, near the Monument, where the *Canterbury* Stage Coach ſets out, in which I took a Place, and got Notice to be ready by four o'Clock in the Morning,

Digitized by Google

ing, or forfeit my Earneſt, which was half the Fare. My Brother deſired me to come to lie there, which I did. In our Return to my Brother's, we called at my Lodging, to know if the Things that were bought, were come; we found them all there. I then packed up every thing, and my Brother and I went to Dinner at his Appartments at *Somerſet-houſe*. After Dinner, he ſent my Trunk by a Porter to the *Star* Inn, with Direction to ſee it put in the Gentleman's Room, who had taken a Place in the *Canterbury* Stage; then we went to the Earl of *Fingall*'s in *Greek-ſtreet*, *Soho*, a Nobleman who did me the Honour of often viſiting me in my Trouble, was at my Tryal, on taking Leave of him, he made me a handſome Preſent. As ſoon as we left my Lord *Fingall*, my Brother went home, telling me he did not doubt but that I had ſome private Viſit to make, but deſired me to be at *Somerſet-houſe* about nine o'Clock: I aſſured him, I had no Viſit to make which I would conceal from him, and owned to him, I intended taking my Leave of Mrs. *Goodman*, which I could not with Decency avoid: This he granted, and we parted, promiſing him, that I would not fail being with him at Nine. I went directly to Mrs. *Goodman*'s; ſhe ſeemed ſtartled when I told her, I was come to take my Leave of her, and that I was to ſet out in the *Canterbury* Stage at four o'Clock next Morning; that my Things were already gone to the *Star Inn* on *Fiſh-ſtreet Hill*, where I was to lie; that I had hardly an Hour to ſpare, having ſome odd Things to do; that I promiſed to be with my Brother by nine o'Clock, and believed he would ſee me to the Inn, and that it would give me great Pleaſure if ſhe would favour me with her Company to Breakfaſt at the *Green Man* on *Black Heath*, where the Stage would ſtop, and the Paſſengers breakfaſt, but that ſhe muſt be there by nine o'Clock; this ſhe faithfully

Digitized by Google

faithfully promiſed. I ſent immediately for one in the Neighbourhood, who let out Coaches, and agreed with him for a Chariot and four for the whole Day for twenty Shillings, gave earneſt, and took my Leave for that Night, and went to my Brother's, where I found the two Siſters, my Couſins, who my Brother had invited to Supper, that I might take my Leave of them before I went; there was alſo one Gentleman of my Brother's Acquaintance. We all ſupped together, and were as chearful as might be on the like Occaſion. We ſtaid together until paſt eleven o'Clock, when my Brother ſent for a Coach. At taking leave, my Brother's Wife made me a Preſent of half a Dozen fine *Portugal* Handkerchiefs, and the Goldſmith's Widow, the eldeſt of my two Couſins, made me a Preſent of a handſome Silver Snuff-box. The Coach being come, I took my Leave of the Ladies; my Brother and the Gentleman came in the Coach, and ſaw me ſafe to the Inn, where we took our Leave of each other in Tears, which on my Side were ſhed with Reaſon as well as Nature, as I was leaving the beſt of Brothers, which fully appears by the above Narrative. The other Gentleman ſeemed to ſympathize in this Scene.

Next Morning, when I came to the Coach, there were but two Ladies Paſſengers, which was very lucky, the Weather being exceſſive hot. I perceived that one of them was a Woman of Fortune, having two Servants in Livery on Horſeback, and the other her Waiting-maid. Being come to the *Green Man*, I handed the Lady to the Parlour, and beſpoke Coffee, Tea and Chocolate. I told the Lady, that I expected a Relation to Breakfaſt: She told me ſhe was glad of it; that ſhe loved Company. The Chariot ſoon came with Mrs. *Goodman*, who brought another Lady with her, who was no way inferior to her. I told the Lady my Couſin

Digitized by Google

ſin was come, and that if ſhe would give me Leave, I would bring her in: She begged I would: I introduced them both to the Lady, my Fellow-traveller, who received them in a polite manner. I gave the Coachman a Shilling to drink, deſiring him to let us have as much Time as he could ſpare, which he promiſed. We ſtaid about an Hour and an half: I went and paid the Reckoning; then my Fellow-traveller and I took our Leave of my Couſin and her Companion, and we went off for *Rocheſter*, where we dined. Here the Lady's Chariot and Six, with other Attendance, met her. Dinner being over, and a Bill brought, I offered to pay, but the Lady would not hear of it, telling me that I had been before-hand with her at Breakfaſt, and inſiſted on the Rules of travelling in a Stage: To which I ſubmitted, and took my Leave, and went alone in the Coach to *Canterbury*.

This Lady was very agreeable, not exceeding thirty, of a free, merry Diſpoſition, and ſeemed highly pleaſed with my Couſin and her Companion, and gave me ſome Hints on the Road to *Rocheſter*, and at Dinner, as if ſhe had gueſſed at our Kindred, but I would not underſtand her. Being arrived at *Canterbury*, I ſent to Captain *Fitzgerald*, and ſome other of the Gentlemen Priſoners, to let them know that I was juſt come in the Stage to the *King's Head*, where I ſhould be glad to ſpend an Hour with him, and as many of the other Gentlemen as he ſhould think proper to bring; that I was a little tired, not having travelled ſo far near three Years before, and was to ſet out early in the Morning for *Dover*, otherwiſe I would have waited on him, and the reſt of his Fellow Priſoners. The Captain ſoon came with ſix more; I delivered him Mr. *Arthur's* Letter: We ſupped together: Four more came in, and we ſpent the Evening very agreeably, until one o'Clock, when they took Leave, and left me

to

Digitized by Google

to go to Bed. About an Hour afterwards, I was rouſed out of a ſound Sleep by a great Rattling at my Chamber-door. I bounced out of Bed, drew my Sword, being ſurprized, for I thought I had been diſcovered by the Secretary of War, who had ſent in purſuit after me. I boldly aſked, who was there, and what they wanted: They told me there was a Miſtake, for I had a Trunk of the Lady's with whom I had dined at *Rocheſter*, and that they brought mine. I ſwore I had my Trunk; that I made no Miſtake, bidding them to be gone: They told me, that my Trunk was marked with *P.* and *D.* that if I pleaſed to look on that which I had, it had no Letter. I examined the Trunk, and found it ſo. I opened the Door, gave it them, and received my own, and was glad it was no worſe. I ordered the two Servants that brought it a Bottle of Wine, and deſired them to preſent my humble Reſpects to their Lady, and tell her my Concern for this Miſtake.

The next Morning I rid Poſt for *Dover*; ſet down at the Poſthouſe, and went to the Mayor's juſt as he was coming from Church. I ſhewed him my Paſs, and gave him Eſquire *Walpole*'s Letter, both which he read, courteouſly inviting me to dine with him, which I accepted of: After Dinner, he told me, there was in Town the Lord *Oliphant*, a *Scotch* Nobleman, who had hired a ſmall Ship for *Oſtend*; that he had ſome Horſes for the Earl of *Orkney*, in whoſe Regiment he had a Company; that he only waited for a fair Wind; that after Evening Service he would introduce me to him; and that he did not doubt but he would be glad of my Company, and give me my Paſſage. This was welcome News, and I waited on the Mayor to Church, which, being over, he took me with him to the Lord's Lodgings, and preſented me to his Lordſhip, who received me with open Arms,

Digitized by Google

Arms, and thanked Mr. Mayor for bringing him so good a Companion, as he was pleased to express himself. The Mayor, with one of the Aldermen, and myself, were invited to take a Bottle with my Lord, after which, these two Gentlemen left us, and his Lordship told me, we must amuse ourselves among the Ladies of the T---n, to which he had a natural Propensity. I agreed more out of Complacency than any Desire; for I could have no Relish for Enjoyments of that Nature, after such a Series of Misfortunes, and when the Weight of providing for myself lay so heavy on my Spirits. However, I spent the Evening with him, supped at his House, and lay there that Night. Next Morning after Breakfast, we took a Walk to the Quay to see the Ship and Horses. The Captain of the Ship assured his Lordship, the Wind would be favourable next Day, and desired every body might be ready, and all things put on board, for he would certainly sail next Day at High-Water, which would be about two o'Clock.

On this Notice, my Lord ordered Dinner to be ready at one: We dined, and went on board a little after two; the Wind was fair, and we got clear out of the Harbour before three: We had not sailed above two Hours, when we espied a Sail between us and *Ostend*. This made us lie too, for a Couple of Hours; and though we had a brisk Gale, it was ten o'Clock before we made the Port of *Ostend*, so could not get in that Night; however, my Lord and I went ashore to a Publick-house pretty close to the Out-works of the Town; where we both lay down on a Bed without undressing, until the opening of the Gates; then we went into Town, and breakfasted together at a Coffee-house; Breakfast being over, I told my Lord that I had some Business to do in Town, and hoped his Lordship would give me Leave to transact it, which he granted

Digitized by Google

granted conditionally, that I ſhould be with him at the ſame Coffee-houſe at one o'Clock to dine with him, which I promiſed, though I did not perform; the Reaſon of which will appear hereafter.

As ſoon as I had parted from his Lordſhip, I went to Mr. *Ray*'s Houſe, and found him gone to *Antwerp* and *Bruſſels*, and not expected for three Weeks. This ſtartled me, as I had a Bill on him, but his Clerk (whoſe Name was *Egan*) told me, that what ever Buſineſs I had with him, might be done as well as if he had been at home. I told him I had a Bill of ten Pounds from Mr. *Arthur* in *London* to receive, and a Letter for Mr. *Ray*: He told me, he would pay the Bill, and ſend the Letter to his Maſter; I gave him the Bill and Letter; he paid the Money. I invited him to a Glaſs of *Rheniſh* and Sugar, he went with me, and over our Bottle, I told him I was ſure he might read the Letter; that it contained nothing but Mr. *Arthur*'s requeſting the Favour of Mr. *Ray* to adviſe me, and forward me in my Travels as far as lay in his Power, which I believed he might do as well as Mr. *Ray*. He opened the Letter, aſked me what Rout I intended to take? I told him, that of *Tournay*, having ſome little Affairs to ſettle there; but, as that Town was beſieged, and I ſo near *Dunkirk*, would take a trip there, where I had left my little Affairs in Confuſion, when I went a Privateering: I then told him of my long Confinement, Trial, Sentence and Pardon, *&c.* that he might better know how to act: he aſked me, if I had a Paſs, I told him none that would ſerve for my Purpoſe; but I thought he might put me in ſome Way to get to *Newport*, which was but three Leagues off. He told me, it was a *French* Garriſon; and though there was an open Trade between the *Auſtrian Netherlands*, *Holland*, and *French Flanders*,

Digitized by Google

ders, yet all that went in the way of trading, muſt have Paſſports for that purpoſe; that no Stranger went out at the Gate without ſtrict Examination, as to their Buſineſs and Paſſes; and there was no thinking of going that Way without a Paſs. I aſked him, if the Inhabitants did not walk out; he told me they did, and were never queſtioned; that he himſelf, and ſome of his Friends, walked often on the *Newport* Road, to a Publick-houſe about a Muſket-ſhot from the Gate to take a Bottle without any Inquiry, though there was a Guard of ſixteen Men, commanded by a Sergeant, whoſe Buſineſs was to examine all Paſſengers, and ſee their Paſſes.

It immediately occurred to me, that this might turn to my Advantage, at leaſt I was reſolved to try; and it being a fine Day, I aſked Mr. *Egan*, if there was not a Stage that went to *Newport?* He told me there was every Afternoon about five o'Clock. I aſked him, if he could not get two or three Friends to go after Dinner to take a Bottle at that Houſe? he ſaid, he would, if it could be of any Service to me: I told him I would try, and begged he would walk towards the *Newport* Gate with his Friends at half an Hour after three; that at all Events, I ſhould be ready at that time to join them, deſiring that he would take no notice of me, and that I would not obſerve them, till we had paſſed the Gate a good way, if I ſhould be ſo lucky to paſs unexamined: This being agreed on, he promiſed not to fail me, and ſo we parted. I ſent on board for my Trunk, ordered it to be brought to the Stage-coach Inn, where there was a good Ordinary, at which I dined. My Trunk being come, I dreſſed myſelf in my beſt, and as clean as if going to a Ball, having on a fine Pair of ſcarlet Stockings, white Gloves, *&c.* then I put up all in my Trunk, gave it to the Coachman, beſpoke

Digitized by Google

beſpoke my Place, and gave the Coachman a Shilling to drink, bidding him to put my Trunk where it would receive no Wet, and to keep me a Place in the Coach next the Door, for the Benefit of the Air, which he did: The Time being near come, in which I was to join my Friend, I went and placed myſelf in a convenient Spot, from whence I might ſee them come; I ſoon ſaw them walk towards the Gate, where I mixed with them, and paſſed unqueſtioned; coming in Sight of the Publick-houſe, I took off my Hat to Mr. *Egan* and Company, and we walked together to the Houſe, and ſat down at the Door, and called for a Bottle of Wine: the Sergeant of the Guard walking backwards and forwards before the Houſe, civilly took off his Hat the firſt time, which we returned; but in a little Time finding he did not come to aſk Queſtions, as I expected, I aſked him to come and take a Glaſs of Wine with us; to which he having agreed, we ſoon fell to talk of the Wars, of Sieges, and Battles we had been both concerned in, though not on the ſame Side, which I kept him ignorant of: At laſt I told him I had quitted the military Life, and was now turn'd Merchant; that I lived in *Bruges*, and was going to *Dunkirk* on a trading Voyage, and ſhould return that Way in a Month, and deſired he would tell me his Name, and the Name of the Regiment, to enable me to inquire for him at my Return; that I ſhould be proud to ſpend an Evening with him, for I liked his Converſation, and would talk more about the War, with a great deal more of ſuch-like Chat, to gain his good Opinion, which thoroughly anſwered my End.

By this Time I ſaw the Stage coming; I had told the Coachman that I would walk out with ſome Friends, and wait his coming; the Coach ſtopped; I took Leave of my Company; aſked

Digitized by Google

the Coachman for my Trunk; told the Sergeant, that I obſerved it was Part of his Duty there, to examine Travellers, and ſee their Paſſes; ſaid I would ſhew him mine, ordering the Coachman to get my Trunk where my Paſs was: I took out the Key, as if to unlock it, but the Sergeant making no doubt of what I told him, would not give me the Trouble, and with his Hat under his Arm civilly handed me into the Coach. In three Hours after I came ſafe to *Newport*, and having no Paſs to produce as the other Paſſengers had, I was carried before the Governor, who examined me very narrowly. I told him my whole Story, how and when I ſet out from *Dunkirk* in a Privateer, my being taken, my Confinement, Tryal, *&c.* up to the Time of my being brought before him; all which he ſeemed amazed at; then did me the Honour to invite me to Supper with him, and kept me with him until eleven o'Clock, and ſent one of the Town Adjutants to conduct me to a good Inn, deſiring me to come to breakfaſt with him about nine o'Clock, and then he would give me a Paſs for the *French* Army, which I told him I intended for. At the Inn, I took a Bottle with the Adjutant, and we parted; I went to Bed, and had an exceeding good Night's Reſt: Next Morning the Hour of nine drawing near, I deſired to know what was to pay? and was ſurpriſed to find there was nothing: I went to the Governor's, who received me with his uſual Civility, wiſhing me a good Morning, *&c.* I returned his Compliment in the beſt manner I was capable of, and had the Honour to breakfaſt with him; after which he gave me a Paſs, with a Lieutenant of Horſe's Rout, on Foot, by which I was intitled to fifty Sols *per* Day, but no Forage, having no Horſe: Having received the Rout and Paſs, he wiſhed me a good and ſafe Journey to the Army. I returned him my ſincere and hearty Thanks,

and

Digitized by Google

and took my Leave. I lay that Night at *Ferns*, where I was kindly received and entertained by the Governor; from thence I went to *Dunkirk*, where I ſtaid, by the Governor's Orders, three Days to reſt: I had the Honour of his Table all the Time. This gave me an Opportunity to ſettle my Affairs, and take ſome Cloaths, &c. which I had left: I went to ſee my Friend who kept the Tavern where the Diſpute happened between the *French* Officer and me, who aſſured me it was never known, or hardly inquired after, how he loſt his Life; and that he himſelf was the only Perſon that gueſs'd at it, by what he had ſeen the Night before; however, though I had great Confidence in him, I told him I knew nothing of the matter: He told me alſo, that my Captain *Quierroret*, after his Return from *England*, got the Command of a Privateer of thirty Guns, and made two valuable Prizes that very Summer, and was greatly concerned for me; that the laſt Summer, he went on a Cruize, attacked a *Dutch* Ship of twenty-four Guns, which made a brave Defence; in which Action the Captain loſt his Life, with ſeveral of his Men; but the Lieutenant, with the reſt of the Crew, took the Ship, brought her to *Dunkirk*, which proved a good Prize. Here I ſaw Mr. *Nally*, *Smith*'s Chaplain: We were both overjoyed at meeting each other, after our long Confinement.

From *Dunkirk*, I went to St. *Omer*'s, where I met ſeveral Officers of my Acquaintance belonging to the *Iriſh* Brigade, ſome of whom acquainted the Governor with all my Misfortunes in *England*: He behaved extreamly kind to me: There was an Aſſembly at his Houſe, and he deſired one of the Officers who came with me to ſhew me the Garden; in the mean while he made a Collection of between ſixty and ſeventy Livres, which he gave

Digitized by Google

me, for which I returned him and the Company Thanks, and took my Leave.

The next Morning I ſet out on my Rout by the way of *Ayrr*, *Bethune*, St. *Vennan* and *Lance*, for *Douay*, where my Rout ended. I was kindly treated by the Governors and Magiſtrates all the Way: I delivered my Rout to the Governor of this Place, told him my Story, but he took no farther Notice.

The next Day I ſet out for the Army commanded by Mareſchal *de Villars*, and went to ſee the Officers taken on board the *Saliſbury*, who had been Fellow-priſoners; they were all glad to ſee me: I dined with Captain *Fitzgerald:* He told me, that I ought to go to wait on the King (meaning the Pretender) that he would go with me and get me introduced, and that it might be of ſome Advantage. This I agreed to, and that very Afternoon went to the Pretender's Quarters: Captain *Fitzgerald* brought me to General *Sheldon*, who introduced me to the Pretender. I told him all that happened me in *England*, up to my coming in to the Army. He told me I had ſuffered a great deal, rejoiced to ſee me out of ſo many Difficulties and Misfortunes; all which took up about half an Hour, and I took my Leave, without ſeeing any more of his Kindneſs.

Next Day I went to *Vallencienne*, to ſee one Captain *Stanley*, a Couſin of mine, who received me very kindly. I told him all that had happened me, from my going on board a Privateer, to my coming now to ſee him. He liſtened with Attention, and congratulated me on my eſcaping ſo many Dangers, and getting through ſo many Difficulties, and ſaid he was ſurpriſed that the Chevalier had not made me a Preſent: I dined with him; after Dinner, he aſked me, what I intended to do? I told him, I intended ſtaying in the Army, until the

Digitized by Google

the Fate of *Tournay* was determined; that let the Event be what it would, I muſt go thither, having ſome little Affairs to ſettle there, and then I would return to *England*. He told me, that the Fate of *Tournay* might take up ſome Time, as it was a very ſtrong Town, eſpecially the Citadel; that Proviſions were very dear in the Army, and that he would adviſe me to ſpend the Remainder of the Campaign in the *Gens d'Arms*, to ſave Expences; and that if I did not like to continue, I might quit when the Army would break up to go to Winter Quarters.

Though I had ſome Money, I was willing to ſave it, if poſſible, and therefore agreed to his Propoſal: He then told me, that he would take me with him immediately, and recommend me to a particular Friend of his, who was one of the Knights of *Malta*, who commanded the *Engliſh* Troop in that Corps: This Gentleman was called *L'Chevalier de Jeanſon*, and was Nephew to a Cardinal of that Name: We went to the Camp, found the Chevalier in his Tent; he received us civilly; and, after ſome Diſcourſe, Captain *Stanley* told him I was a Relation of his; that I came voluntarily to offer myſelf to be admitted to have the Honour of ſerving the Remainder of the Campaign under his Command: He ſeemed to receive me with Pleaſure, ſent for a Quarter-maſter, and ordered me Horſe, Arms, Cloaths, *&c.* The Quarter-maſter took me to his Tent, fitted me with the Regimentals, which were ſcarlet, ſilver laced on the Sleeves and Pockets, with a Carabine and Sword-belt laced: When dreſſed, the Quarter-maſter and I returned to the Chevalier. My Couſin in about half an Hour took his Leave, telling me, that the next Day he would ſend a Servant for my Cloaths, and take Care of them until the Campaign was over.

Digitized by Google

Thus was I fixed in the *Gens d'Arms*; I had an exceeding good Horſe, which coſt ſix hundred Livres: I had occaſion to try his Goodneſs in a ſhort Time; for in a Fortnight the memorable Battle of *Mall-Placket* was fought, of which I ſhall give my Readers ſome ſhort Hints.

On the eighth Day of *September*, N. S. Mareſchal *Villars* received an Account, that the Governor of *Tournay* had cauſed the Chamade, or Parly to be beat; that Night the *French* Army marched, in order to poſt themſelves in, and near the Woods, where this Battle was fought.

The 9th, about ten o'Clock, the Confederate Army appeared in Sight, and both Armies began to cannonade, and continued to do ſo until Night, which made a great Slaughter of Men and Horſes on both Sides.

The tenth in the Morning, the Firing from the Cannon was renewed with great Fury on both Sides, until about two o'Clock, when there was a kind of Ceſſation for the reſt of the Evening; and the Officers and Soldiers of both Armies ſpoke and ſhook Hands with each other; and it was rumoured, that there were Overtures of Peace on the Anvil. Our Horſe were ordered to ſend ſome Men out of every Troop to forage; but on the firing three Cannon, which was to be the Signal, they were to leave what Forage might be gathered, and return to their reſpective Standards. About an Hour before Sun-ſet, the Signal was given, and all the Foragers returned, and large Detachments were made to march down to the Woods to carry the Faſcines that the Foot were cutting down, where they ſhould be ordered: The Foot unimployed in this Work, lay all Night on their Arms; the Horſe, were every Man at his Horſe's Head, ready to mount on the firſt Alarm. Thus we continued all

Digitized by Google

all Night; the Confederate Army was alſo in Line of Battle all Night.

On *Wedneſday* the eleventh early in the Morning, our Army received a Day's Bread, which we ſtood in great need of, not having had any for two Days before: There happened that Morning a Fogg of the greateſt Denſity I ever remember to have ſeen. This gave the Confederate Army an Opportunity to march down pretty cloſe to the Wood, undiſcovered, which greatly ſaved the Effuſion of Blood. Three Quarters after ſix, the Fogg being a little diſſipated, the Attack on the Woods began with great Fury, Reſolution and Bravery; but the *French* Foot being ſtrongly intrenched, made a prodigious Slaughter, and repulſed the Enemy three Times: Theſe Attacks and Repulſes laſted until near twelve o'Clock, when the Duke of *Argyle*, at the Head of the *Engliſh*, made the laſt brave and ſucceſsful Attack, driving the *French* from their ſtrong Entrenchments, and quite out of the Wood, like ſo many affrighted Sheep: The Succeſs of this laſt Attack was greatly owing to a large Number of Canon, and ſmall Mortars continually firing and throwing their Shells into the Woods, which tore down whole Trees, and Limbs of Trees. During the whole Attack, the Batteries were ſo well diſpoſed by General *Cadogan*'s Orders, that they performed this great Service, without in the leaſt annoying the Troops in their Attack. The Intrenchments being forced, and the *French* drove out of the Woods, they drew up in good Order, at a ſmall Diſtance.

The Duke of *Marlborough* being content with what he gained, did not think fit to purſue any farther. It was reported, that Maraſchal *Villars* called a Council of War; where in ſettling his Scheme, the Mareſchal was wounded by a Muſket-ſhot in the Knee; and Monſieur *Albergotier*,

Digitized by Google

gotier, an *Italian* Lieutenant General, at the ſame time ſhot through the Body by a Muſket-ball from the ſame Platoon: They both recovered, and *Albergotier* commanded in *Douay* the next Year, when beſieged by the Duke of *Marlborough*, where he made a brave Defence.

At this Misfortune, the Mareſchal ſent Orders to Mareſchal *Boufflers* to make a Retreat; in order to this, there was ſixty-three Squadrons of the *French* Horſe; the Houſhold Troops, and the *Gens d' Arms* being Part of that Number, to the Amount of one and twenty Squadrons; all which were ordered to march down and engage a large Body of the Enemy's Horſe, who had already got within our Entrenchments that were made between the two Woods, and were ſtill marching in, and drawing up; the Squadron that I belonged to, was commanded by the Chevalier *de Jeanſon*, my Captain above ſpoke of, who as we were marching down, ordered that ſix Men on the right, and ſix on the left of his Squadron (who were named for that Purpoſe) ſhould, on a Signal given by him, detach themſelves, and fall on the Flanks of the Sqadron we ſhould engage, and pour in their Carrabyne Shot among them, whilſt he would with the Remainder of the Squadron, Sword in hand, endeavour to break through the Enemy.

This had the deſired Effect; we had to do with *Germans*; and by this Stratagem we broke through them, and through a ſecond by the like Method; but the Captain received a Wound in his left Hand at the firſt Charge, and his Horſe received two deſperate Cuts in the Neck. We marched on to engage a third Squadron, which broke in a ſeeming Confuſion, or rather opened to right and left, on purpoſe to draw us under the Fire of Colonel *Pendergaſt*'s Regiment, who lay unſeen by us at the Reverſe

Digitized by Google

Reverſe of the Entrenchment, and poured their Shot amongſt us, and ſome other *French* Squadrons, that had penetrated ſo far, which made a great Slaughter. Here I was ſhot through the Calf of the left Leg, though I did not know it, which with two Cuts I received before, made three Wounds. Our Squadron being thus broke, and I ſeparated from them, I was riding about the Field in queſt of them, and was ſurrounded by five *Germans*, who were reſolved to finiſh me, which they certainly would have done, had I not been very well mounted, and pretty ſtrong: I made the beſt I could of a bad Market: I exchanged ſome Cuts, and fired both my Piſtols, but what Execution they did, if any, I cannot tell; in this Encounter, I received three Wounds.

Here I was relieved by an Act of Providence; for thoſe five Gentlemen with whom I had been engaged, ſeeing ten or twelve *French* Straglers in different Liveries with white Paper Cockades in their Hats, coming towards us, made off: And at the ſame time they ſaw ſome Squadrons of the Enemy coming and drawing up between us, which ſo increaſed their Fears, (the Sight of whom proved my Deliverance) that they went off another Way; ſo that I could ſee nothing round me but the Enemy, and having loſt much Blood, I reſolved to ſurrender myſelf Priſoner. In order to this, I took my Carrabine, cocked it, having my Sword hanging at my Wriſt, and took the Reins of my Bridle in my Mouth, and thus marched up to a freſh Squadron, juſt marched within the Entrenchment: I rode up to the commanding Officer, and begged Quarters: He had a Piſtol cocked in his Hand; told me in the *German* Language, which I underſtood, calling me a *French Hounds-foot*; that he would give me Quarters with a Brace of Balls,

lodging

Digitized by Google

lodging the Muzzle of his Piſtol on my right Shoulder, and firing at the ſame time; I was reſolved not to be behind hand with him, and to ſell my Life as dear as I could: As ſoon as I heard the Word, I fired my Carrabyne; ſo that his Shot and mine went off inſtantaneouſly. I ſhot the upper Part of his Head, and he tumbled forward: I ſaw his Brains come down; his Ball only grazed on my Shoulder, and tore the Fleſh a little; but the Powder blew off, and burnt the Breadth of an Oyſter-ſhell off my Coat; and the Wadding, which was Toe, lodged between my Waiſtcoat and Shirt, ſetting them both on Fire. Moſt of the Front Rank of the Squadron, if not all, fired a Volley at the ſame Time; ſo that I had eleven Shot fairly marked on my Cuiraſs, or Breaſt-plate, and two through the Skirts of my Coat. Though the relating of this Cataſtrophe takes ſome time, yet it was all done in an Inſtant: I immediately turned about, clapped Spurs to my Horſe, and gallopped towards another Squadron of the ſame Regiment that was marching in: As I went along, I cocked my Carrabine again, though there was nothing in it, and went up to the commanding Officer of this Squadron, in the ſame Poſture as before, and demanded Quarters, who, in a Gentleman-like civil Manner, aſſured me I ſhould have good Quarters, and I immediately dropped my Carrabine which was hung to the Swivel of my Belt. There was a Dragoon, called by his Name, to whom I was given in Charge: There came up to me a young Officer of the Squadron; he was a Cornet, and ſpoke to me in the *French* Language, telling me, that I was very much wounded: I told him, it was the Fortune of War: He aſked me, if I would drink a Glaſs of Wine: I told him, it would be a valuable Preſent in my preſent Condition. He took out a flat Flaſk from his Boſom, deſiring me to take a hearty

Digitized by Google

hearty Pull; but when I took it, I could not lift it to my Head, my Wounds growing ſtiff, and being diſabled of both Arms; however, he held it up to me himſelf, and I took three or four go-downs, and he kindly made me a Preſent of the reſt, charging the Dragoon at his Peril, to keep it for me, and not to touch a Drop of it, which he punctually obſerved.

It may be aſked, how they could ſpare ſo much Time; I anſwer, that about this Time the *French* were making their Retreat, as the Duke of *Marlborough* did not intend to purſue them; and theſe Squadrons were ordered to halt. The Dragoon who had me in Charge, was ordered by the Officer, to whom I had ſurrendered, to take great Care of me, and to be careful of my Horſe and Arms. I had about ſixteen Pounds in Money, which I gave him, and which, by my Direction, he took out of my Pocket, being incapable of doing it myſelf. The Dragoon took me to the reſerved Body, and with the Help of others, took me off my Horſe. It was then I firſt knew that I was ſhot through the left Leg, for I could not ſtand on it. The Dragoon went and fetched a Bundle of Peaſe Straw, of which there was plenty in the Field, and made me a comfortable Bed, whereon he laid me. Soon after, he perceived that my Horſe was wounded, the Ball having gone through the Saddle, and lodged in his Back-bone, of which Wound he died the next Day; the Loſs was to the Officer that gave me Quarters, yet it gave me ſome Concern: The Dragoon drew my Boot off my wounded Leg, which brought away a Lump of congealed Blood, like a Piece of Liver.

Here I lay until ten o'Clock at Night, bleeding from ſeven Wounds, before I could get a Surgeon to bind them; at this time there came one, who juſt ſtopped the Blood, by binding with clean Rags

Digitized by Google

Rags the moſt dangerous, for he had not time to dreſs them all, having Numbers of their own to dreſs. At Night I aſked my Guard the Name of the Regiment, that thoſe good Officers, my Benefactors, belonged to: He told me, to General *Beulow*, in the Elector of *Hanover*'s Service; that the Gentleman I ſurrendered to, was Captain *Commedand*; that he who gave me the Flaſk of Wine was his Cornet.

Early the next Morning, my Horſe, Cloaths, and Accoutrements were ſent for, but the Horſe died a few Hours after. About ten, I ſaw a great Number of Officers richly dreſt coming towards us; I aſked my Guard who they were, he told me it was the Duke of *Marlborough*, and Prince *Eugene*, coming from the Field of Battle. I begged of him to help me up, for I was reſolved to ſpeak to the Duke; this he readily did, and with his Help and ſome Difficulty, I made ſhift to advance five or ſix Yards towards his Grace, who on ſeeing me in that Condition, was ſo good to ſtop and aſk what was the Matter, I told him as loud as I could ſpeak, that I had the Honour to ſerve in the *Gens d'Arms*, that I was a priſoner of War, very much wounded, and in Danger of loſing my Life for want of a Surgeon to dreſs my Wounds, and begged he would pleaſe to take my Parole of Honour, which was a Favour generally granted to the Gentlemen of our Corps; and to order ſome Method to carry me to the *French* Army, where I ſhould be taken Care of. He immediately called for *Cardonall*, who was his Secretary, and then at hand, and aſked him how came all thoſe poor Gentlemen (meaning the Priſoners) were not ſent away, he having ſent Orders for that Purpoſe, and deſired Carriages to be got ready for thoſe that were not able to walk, that all might be ſent home to be taken Care of, for that

Digitized by Google

that there were not Surgeons enough to dreſs their own wounded. That very Afternoon, all the Priſoners to the Number of ninety nine, were ſent away, and lay at a Town called *Bavay* that Night, which Town was crammed with wounded People.

The next Day we came to *Queſnoy*, where I was informed that the Pretender lodged, at the Commiſſary's Houſe. Being acquainted with one *Mc'Carty*, who was Maſter of his Wine Cellars, I got myſelf conducted thither, in Hopes to get ſome comfortable Refreſhment, which I ſtood much in need of. In this I ſucceeded as well as I could wiſh. Mr. *Mc'Carty* came to me, brought me into the Hall, went and brought me a Silver Cup of excellent Wine, and ſome *French* Bread; I drank ſome of the Wine, but could not touch the Bread, though I was very hungry. He went and got me a Porringer of good Soup, with Bread well ſoaked in it, which I ſucked in as well as I could, and it was great Comfort to me. At this Time General *Sheldon* came in, and being informed who I was, immediately called for one of the Pretender's Surgeons, and ordered him to examine and dreſs my Wounds. The Surgeon went immediately about it, and found it a pretty hard Taſk, for being very hairy, the Blood that run from my Wounds, ſpread all over my Body, and ſtuck as cloſe as if my Shirt and Skin had been glued together; and notwithſtanding all the Pains and Methods taken, with warm Water, *&c.* I ſuffered almoſt as much as if they had been fleaing me; all which, by the Bleſſing of the Almighty, I got over, though one of the Wounds in my Head was thought by the Surgeons mortal, my Skull being cut open, ſo that the *Dura mater* of the Brain was to be ſeen in dreſſing me. There came a good Number of Gentlemen on Horſeback to the Door, belonging to the

Digitized by Google

the Pretender, and it was ſaid he was going to the Camp; he ſoon came down, which was lucky for me, for as he was going by he ſaw me, and General *Sheldon* told him, I was the Gentleman that came from *England*, and had waited on him about a Fortnight ago: he ſtopt a little, and looked towards me and went off; in two or three Minutes, one Captain *Booth*, who belonged to the Duke of *Berwick*'s Regiment, and was one of the Pretender's Aid de Camps, came to me, and gave me twenty *French* Louis d' Ors, amounting then to four hundred Livers; a ſtrong and timely Supply. The Commiſſary was a Batchelor, and kept Houſe with an only Siſter. This Lady being of a Charitable and Humane Diſpoſition, on ſeeing me in that Condition, ordered a Bed to be made for me, in a little Room near the Hall; and when they had done dreſſing my Wounds, and I was juſt going to bed, one of my Quarter-Maſters came and told me, that he came from the Chevalier *de Jeanſon*, my Captain, who lay at a Lodging hard by alſo wounded; that he heard with Pleaſure I was alive; that he had given me over for loſt, but hearing I was come, he had ordered a Lodging to be taken for me, at a Prieſt's Houſe not far off, that his Orders were to have me carried there. The good Lady hearing this, made ſome Difficulty to let me go, telling the Quarter-Maſter that it might prove of ill Conſequence to remove me, deſiring him to acquaint Monſieur le Chevalier, that ſhe would take particular Care of me; and to aſſure him I ſhould want for nothing. The Quarter-Maſter thanked her very kindly, telling her, that the Chevalier would acknowledge her Favour and Civility, but as there was a Lodging taken, he would by no Means give her the Trouble, begged her Pardon, ſaying, he

Digitized by Google

he must be carried thither; so the Lady ordered an Arm-chair, in which I was carried to the Priest's House, where I had a very good Room and Bed, for which my Captain paid a Liver a Day. I was attended by the Surgeon of our Corps, reputed to be as good as any in *France*. He had a Pension of five thousand Livers a Year from the King, and two Livers a Year from every private Man in the Corps, which made two thousand five hundred Livers more *per Annum*, besides his Allowance from the Officers and others belonging to the Army. This Gentleman dress my Wounds twice a Day whilst it was necessary, and then one of his Mates came once a Day, himself visiting me every other Day. I had good Soups, and every thing else fitting for one in my Condition every Day from my Captain's, and never had the least Fever all the Time; and was taken such Care of, that in three Weeks time, to the Surprize of all my Acquaintance, I went to *Valenciennes*, to see Captain *Stanley*, my Cousin above-mentioned, but went first to see my Captain, to return him thanks for all his Favours; he received me very kindly, we in a Manner fought the Battle over again, talking of some Officers and Squadrons who behaved well, even beyond Expectation, particularly his own. I told him, of his detaching the six Men from the Right and Left of his Squadron, and firing in on the Enemy's Flanks, and charging them at the same time in the Front, with such Bravery and Resolution, that his Example inspired his Gens d'Arms to do all that was possible for Men to do; we both agreed, that the third Squadron we went through opened on purpose to draw us under the Fire of the Foot, by which we suffered, as is beforemention'd.

Digitized by Google

Having thus paſſed above half an hour, I took my Leave, and walked to *Valenciennes*, which was ſeven Leagues; my Couſin was very much ſurprized to ſee me, and blamed me for coming ſuch a Journey in the Condition I was in, and ſo did our Surgeon the next time he ſaw me; however, I thank God it had no bad Effect. I ſtayed with my Couſin that and the next Night, and in the Morning I took my Leave, and returned to *Queſnoy*. Captain *Stanley* was not only a near Relation, but a kind Friend; the *Sunday* after the Battle, he ſent to our Camp to enquire for me, and the Meſſenger was told I was dangerouſly wounded, and taken Priſoner, that I was ſtript of all, and that I was now lodged at a Prieſt's Houſe in *Queſnoy*. The Meſſenger went back with this News, who in three Days after, came to ſee me, brought me ſix Shirts, ſix Cravats, and three Pair of Stockings of his own, and offered me ſome Money; but I told him that I was very rich, ſhewing him what Captain *Booth* brought me. After my return from *Valenciennes*, I grew every Day ſtronger and ſtronger and was almoſt quite well of my Wounds, but could not yet wear a Hat.

However, in a few Days with my Captain's Leave, I quitted my Lodging, and went to the Camp, where I continued until the Town of *Mons* (which after the Battle was beſieged by the Duke of *Marlborough*) had ſurrendred, which was towards the latter End of *October*. As ſoon as this Siege was over, both Armies broke up for Winter Quarters; but being bent on going to *England*, I went to my Captain, (who was now well of his Wounds) and demanded my Diſmiſſion; he ſaid he was very ſorry to find me ſo willing to quit him, that he had a very great Regard for me, and that he was ready to do any thing in his Power

Digitized by Google

Power that I ſhould think to my Advantage. I thanked him, telling him that nothing but the Earneſt Sollicitation of the beſt of Brothers, who was deſirous to have me with him, could induce me to quit ſo generous and kind a Friend, as he proved to me ever ſince I had the Honour of being under his Command; that I ſhould ever have at heart a grateful Acknowledgment of the great Care which he ordered to be taken of me, whilſt under Cure of my Wounds. He was pleaſed to tell me, that my Merit deſerved all that he did, or could do; but as to my Diſmiſſion, I muſt very well know, it was out of his Power to grant; that as I was a Priſoner of War, and came back on my Parole, they muſt be anſwerable for me, and therefore muſt not think of it until a Chartel was ſettled, and an Exchange made; and if I ſhould then be in the ſame Mind, I might have my Diſmiſſion. This I could ſay nothing againſt, ſo I marched with the Corps to Winter Quarters.

Our Troop was ordered to a Town called *Drew*, within twelve Leagues of *Paris*; at our Arrival there, we found every thing exceſſive dear, eſpecially Bread, which Article alone our Pay could not purchaſe; we were quartered five of us at an Inn, and at Supper we had each a Loaf of Bread, which was ſcarce enough for that Meal, though they coſt eight Sols or Pence a Loaf. This was repreſented at Court, and we were ordered down to lower *Normandy*, five Leagues beyond *Rouen*. Here we had two large Pariſhes to quarter our Troop in, which when compleat, conſiſted but of ſeventy private Gentlemen, ſo that we had Room enough, and pretty good Quarters, very good Houſhold Bread being ſold there at two Sols *per* Pound. Our two Pariſhes were called, the one *Eſpainge*, the

Digitized by Google

other *Boneville L'Allovette*, both within a League of a Town called *Pontaudemer*, where there was a very good Market. But before I proceed any farther in my Story, I cannot omit making a ſhort Digreſſion, to relate the diſmal Scenes we met during the greateſt Part of our Rout, eſpecially in *Picardy* and upper *Normandy*, where the Roads were lined all along with the poor Inhabitants, begging from the Army, which I thought as ſhocking a Sight as ever I ſaw; and as our Eſtap Allowance was to each Man, three Pounds of Bread, two Pounds and a half of Butchers Meat, and four Quarts of Wine or Cyder *per* Day, we ſaved as much as poſſible to diſtribute among them in our March, and had in return the Prayers and Bleſſings of the poor half ſtarved Creatures.

The End of the FIRST VOLUME.

Digitized by Google



THE MEMOIRS OF Capt. *Peter Drake.*

VOL. II.

CHAP. I.

WHEN we came to our Quarters, and received our Billets, our Brigade's Lot was *Boneville*, where I was billetted on a Batchelor, who dealt in Cows and Oxen for *Paris* Market, and called himself a Beef-Merchant, and was dignified by that Title on the Billet; in the Opinion of all I was well quartered. When I came to the House, I called, but no one answered, though the Door was wide open, which a little

Digitized by Google

ſurprized me; I alighted, tied my Horſe at the Door, and went in. I could ſee no one, there was a good Fire, the Table laid, and Bread, Butter and Cheeſe, and a broil'd Herring upon it, with Part of the Cloth thrown over it. I made bold to fall too and made a hearty Meal, but could find no Drink. I opened a little Cloſet, or Cupboard near the Chimney, and found a neat little Baſket with about thirty Livers, in Two-pence halfpenny and five-farthing Pieces; this I left as I found it, but could get nothing to drink but Water. I went and got ſome Hay, unbridled and collared my Horſe, and put the Hay before him, and then I ſat down in a wooden Arm-Chair by the Fire, for more than two Hours, without ſeeing a living Creature.

At laſt, there came in a little dapper Fellow, in his own ſhort black Hair, with ticking Spater-daſhes, having a Quarter-ſtaff in his Hand; he ſtarted a little back, and took off his Hat. I took him to be a Stranger; I told him I had a Billet on this Houſe, and had been there two Hours, and had not ſeen any Body. He told me I ſhould not be long ſo, and deſired to ſee my Billet, which I gave him to read; that being done he came to me, ſtretched out his Hand, and bid me welcome. I aſked him if he was my Landlord? he told me he was inſtead of better; then I got up, ſaluted him, and made him with a few Ceremonies, ſit in the Arm-chair, juſtly judging it was his uſual Seat. I aſked him where all his Family were, telling him as I had ſeen no one, and finding Victuals on the Table, I made a hearty Meal, but got no drink; he told me he would ſoon remedy that. He went to the Door, put his Finger in his Mouth, and gave a loud Whiſtle, on which there ſoon appeared a very clumſy, young Country Wench, he called her in to the next Room and gave her proper Directions.

She

Digitized by Google

She immediately took a large Earthen black Bottle, which contained about ſix Quarts; ſhe went away and ſtaid about an Hour, which made me think he had ſent her to ſome publick Houſe in the Village, which was near a Mile, for I could ſee no Houſe nearer. In her Abſence he told me that he was a Batchelor, and that, that Girl and himſelf were all the Family; that his Buſineſs kept him from home the beſt Part of the Year; that he came home but every other *Saturday*; that he was very glad that I happened to come on the Day of his coming home; that by God's Bleſſing he would ſet out at break of Day on *Monday* next, and not return until that Day Fortnight, aſſuring me, that I had not the worſt Quarters; telling me, the good Soldier made the good Landlord, and the good Landlord the good Soldier; this is a Phraſe generally made uſe of to put the Gentlemen of the Army in mind of behaving well; which Caution was uſeleſs to me, for by long Experience I knew that nothing could be loſt by a Civil Behaviour.

By this Time the Girl came back with the Bottle full of good Cyder; my Landlord, and I fell to and got pretty merry; my Horſe was alſo taken Care of. After Supper I heard my Landlord order the Servant to put clean Sheets on his own Bed for me, for he would lie in the other Room himſelf; I told him that ſhould not be, that I would always conform to the King's Credence, which gave him the firſt Choice. The Houſe was ſmall, had but two Rooms and a Kitchen, which ſerved alſo for the Parlour; the Floor was Clay, my Landlord's Room was next the Kitchen, the other next to that, but one muſt go out of the Street Door to go to it; there was no Stairs but a Ladder to go up to the Loft, where the Maid lay. My Landlord told me that at preſent there was no Room but his,

Digitized by Google

that he could offer me to lie in, becauſe of the great Rains that had lately fallen; that there was a great deal of Water under and about the Bedſtead, but that he would make ſhift with it himſelf. This I would by no Means ſuffer, aſſuring him that I could bear Fire and Water at leaſt as well as he, or I was not fit to be a Gens d'Arm. I deſired him to ſhew the Room, which ſeeemed pretty good, with a handſome Bed, but placed in the loweſt Corner, ſo that all the Water that came centered there. However I had it ſheeted for me, not without ſome *French* Compliments paſſing between us about the Matter; we returned to the Kitchen, and finiſhed our Bottle by the Fire-ſide, there being no other Fire Place in the Houſe. About twelve my Landlord conducted me to my Bed-chamber, he placed a Board, by way of a Bridge on a large Stone, by which I mounted to the Bed, which was above two Feet high, and had a Foot of Water under it. There I ſlept as ſound as if I had been in the beſt Room in the King's Pallace.

The next Morning, my Landlord came to aſk me how I reſted, I told him very well; we breakfaſted together, and then he took me with him to the Village, in order to go to Maſs, but firſt to a publick Houſe to take a Dram, where a Number of the Pariſhioners were on the like Errand. There my Landlord ordered a Butcher to ſupply me with what Meat I ſhould call for in his Abſence, and alſo a Baker to ſupply me with Bread, which Orders were punctually obſerved.

After Prayers we went home, there was a very good Dinner provided for us, and our black Bottle repleniſhed. We ſat a while to take a Glaſs, and then at my Requeſt went to take a Walk; my Landlord was the Guide, knowing the Country beſt. Having walked about a Mile, and paſſed over a Stile, we got on a Path which led us to a large Houſe like a Barn, my Landlord unlocked

Digitized by Google

locked it; I was mightily ſurprized, when I ſaw twelve very large Veſſels, containing about four Hogſheads each, full of Cyder; he drew out a Silver Cup or Boat (the *French* generally carrying ſuch in their Pockets) and pierced every one of them for me to taſte, but I could find no Difference, being all very good; he deſired me to pitch on my Choice for my own Drinking, that he would leave me the Key, deſiring not to ſpare it, and to make my Friends who would come to ſee me welcome, but begged I would not touch any of the reſt.

In our Return home, I aſked if there was any Families of Diſtinction in the Neighbourhood, he told me there were three very good Families within leſs than a League of his Houſe, the chief of which was the Marchioneſs *de St. Julien*, a Widow Lady, not above half a League off; that her eldeſt Son (now Marquis *de St. Julien*) was a Captain in the King's Regiment, and his Brother was a Garde de Marine, both fine Gentlemen, and two Siſters, who were all at home, and that he was ſure they would be glad to ſee me, or any of our Gentlemen; that they were very hoſpitable People, that the other two Families were Monſieur *de la Morſenglier*, and Monſieur *de Freville*. That Night ſoon after Supper, my Landlord took his Leave of me, and went off early next Morning. Then I went after Breakfaſt to pay my Reſpects to the Marchioneſs and Family, and was well received; the Marquis and his Brother came out to the Court to meet me. It would be tedious as well as needleſs, to trouble my Readers with all the Ceremonies and Compliments that paſſed at this Meeting, which is very common among the *French*. I ſhall only ſay, that I was introduced by the Marquis to the Marchioneſs and her Daughters, who all received me very politely. In taking my Leave af-

Digitized by Google

ter Dinner, I had a preſſing and general Invitation, to make that Houſe my own, during the Winter; I thanked them, acknowledging the Honour and Favour they did me.

The next Day by nine of the Clock, the Marquis and his Brother came to return my Viſit, or rather to renew the Invitation, and took me home to dine with them, and I paſſed the Afternoon very agreeably. The Marchioneſs was a well bred Woman, fair, and had been very handſome, for ſhe ſtill retained the Remains of Beauty; ſhe was beſides very affable. The Daughters were no Beauties, but extremely good humoured.

In the Evening, I returned to my Quarters, and began to make Love to the Maid, for though but Clumſey, and Ignorant, ſhe had a very good Face; but all my Addreſſes were in vain, ſhe would not even receive ſome Preſents I offered her, but ſtood Proof againſt my Ruffing and Smoothing.

This Week I went to viſit the other two Families, and was kindly received, and my Viſits returned by the Gentlemen. Thus did I paſs the Winter, often viſiting theſe three Families, but chiefly the Marchioneſs, and ſometimes thoſe who I was moſt familiar with of our own Gentlemen, who came often to ſee me, and ſometimes to dine with me, otherways my Butcher and Baker muſt have had but a bad Cuſtomer of me, as I ſeldom dined at home, my great Cyder Veſſel muſt have remained untouched; and though I was very hoſpitable, I can aſſure my Readers, that it was not ſunk quite ſix Inches during the whole Winter, for I had my Landlord to gauge it, juſt before we marched for *Flanders*. The *Saturday* that I expected my Landlord's coming, I took care to be at home to receive him, and to have the black Bottle full; we were very glad to ſee each other, and were very merry that Night.

The

Digitized by Google

The next Day after Breakfaſt, we went to Maſs, and returned to Dinner; I obſerved a Coolneſs in him; I was not at a Loſs to gueſs the Reaſon; however, as we were taking a Glaſs after Dinner, I aſked him what was the Matter, that he did not ſeem to be as chearful as uſual; he told me that the poor Girl had complained that I teazed her, and that ſhe threatened to go home to her Mother, that he'd be at a Loſs for a Servant to attend me, as he had no time to ſpare to look for one; that he would take it kind, if I would not demean myſelf by medling with ſuch a ſilly Wench; I aſſured him that I was only joking with her, that I intended her no Harm, and to ſhew him how willing I was to oblige him, I would go and ſpend the whole Fortnight of his Abſence at the Marchioneſs *de St. Julien*'s; and deſired before he went, that he would leave Directions with ſome of his Friends, to provide againſt his Return ſome old Woman that could dreſs my Victuals, and make my Bed, that ſuch a one would give me no Temptation, and the other might go to her Mother. At this he laught, and ſeemed to return to his former Humour; we were ſociable and merry that Night; and early the next Morning he went off, and I after Breakfaſt went to the Marchioneſs's, where I ſtaid until my Landlord's Return home, and was as friendly and merry as ever.

Next Morning according to Cuſtom, we went to Maſs, and returned home to Dinner, and ſoon after there came in an old ſhrivel-fac'd Woman; I immediately gueſs'd that my Landlord had taken me at my Word, and that this old Woman was to be my Houſe-keeper. I was not miſtaken, but this gave me no Concern, though I believe it was not ſo with *Margoe*, (for that was the Maid's Name,) who that very Evening went to her Mother's, crying bitterly as ſhe went. The old Wo-

Digitized by Google

man pleaſed me well, tho' I had much better Stomach to the Victuals ſhe dreſſed, than to her, then my Landlord and I were both eaſy. I hope my Readers won't take it amiſs, if I give here a ſhort Account of our Method of ſubſiſting during the Winter, for we received no Pay, the King's Treaſury being quite exhauſted. Every private Gentleman was to allow ſix Sols *per* Day, out of his Pay, for which Sum he was to give a Note the laſt Day of every Month, and take a Receipt from the Landlord for the ſaid Note; beſides this, every Landlord had two or more Aſſiſtants or Helpers, whoſe Names were alſo on the Billets, who according to their reſpective Abilities, were to make up, and pay to the Chief Landlord, the laſt Day of every Month, ſix Sols more a Day, and take his Receipt for the ſame. This was no Loſs to thoſe People, for when they were to pay their Taxes, the above Receipts were taken by the Receivers as ready Money. My Landlord being chiefly from home, and finding that his Helpers did not come to pay the Money at the proper Time, and he having no Time to ſpare, or did not think it worth his while to go among them to collect it, he told me if I would take that Trouble, he would leave me Receipts, and make me a Preſent of it, if I could get it; I thanked him, and told him I would uſe my Endeavour to ſerve him, and he ſhould enjoy the Benefit of my Labour.

As ſoon as he was gone, I turned Collector, and againſt his coming home, I had gathered what was due for the two laſt Months, and offered it to him, which he refuſed. I was not ſorry for this, though I preſſed him to no purpoſe. Thus I received ſix Sols a Day, for one hundred and fifty Days, being always the Time allowed for Winter-Quarters; beſides this, my good Landlord gave me

Digitized by Google

me a Receipt the laſt Day of every Month, without taking my Note, by which I had free Quarters all the time.

There was a large Stable built in the moſt convenient Place, where all our Horſes were kept at the King's Expence, as is uſual, and taken Care of by our Servants; every four of us kept a Servant, to whom we allowed two Sols a Day each, by which he had eight Sols a Day, and his Dyet; ſo that his Pay was better than his Maſter's; for though our Pay was fifteen Sols a Day, all Deductions made, we did not, on Pay-day, receive above nine. Here we had no other but Stable Duty, where a private Gentleman attended Morning and Evening, to ſee the Servants do their Duty, and the Horſes taken good Care of. This I mention to ſhew how ſtrict the Gentlemen of the Army are, in obſerving the Rules of Priſoners of War not ſerving, when on Parole, until a Chartel is ſettled, I being a Priſoner on Parole, was not admitted in my Turn, to do this Stable Duty, though it would come to my Turn, not above once in three Weeks.

Thus did I ſpend the Winter, often viſiting the Marchioneſs, and ſometimes the other two Families; my Landlord going and coming according to Cuſtom, and my old Houſe-keeper doing her beſt to pleaſe me, without the leaſt Danger of any Attempt from me on her Virtue.

Early in the Year 1710, the *French* Armies had orders to be ready to take the Field; that in *Flanders* (where our Corps was to ſerve) commanded by Marſhal *Villars*, was to rendezvous at *Perrone*, within eight Leagues of *Arras*. On the beginning of *March* our Rout came, and we were to begin our March in ten Days. My Landlord who came home two Days after our Rout came, and told me,

Digitized by Google

he was ſorry we were to go ſo ſoon, but that he had not forgot me, for he had provided a Ham and a Piece of Bacon to ſend with me, and ſomething elſe, in Recompence for my Frugality during the Winter; for ſays he, you have put me to little Expence, having ſpent moſt of the time abroad. I made an Offer to give him the monthly Notes, but he refuſed them. I often wiſhed he had taken them, which if he had he would have got the Value of them, and I would have loſt nothing, as I quitted the *French* Army before the Arrears were paid, as ſhall be ſhewn hereafter. We ſpent the Evening pleaſantly, and he really ſeemed concerned at my Departure; the next Morning we went to Maſs as uſual and returned home to Dinner; after Dinner he called for the Ham and Bacon and gave them to me.

As I was ſo near my Departure, he ſent for *Margoe*, for ſhe appeared that Evening, and the old Woman was diſcharged, and went home. After Supper, he ordered *Margoe* to go into his Room, and fetch a Bundle which was uppermoſt in his Cheſt, which Bundle contained ſix good Shirts full trim'd, though not very fine, (for the *French* in thoſe Days were not very curious in their Linen) he made me a Preſent of them, and a Couple of Black Silk Cravats, then in Faſhion among the Gentlemen of the Army.

That Afternoon we were as merry as might be, but before Night I deſired to take a Walk to his Warehouſe, to view the Cyder, and gauge the Veſſel in Broach, which proved not to have been diminiſhed quite ſix Inches, as before mentioned; at which he was ſurprized, and laughing ſaid, he believed I was ſtingy. On our returning home, he begged whilſt I ſtaid, I would let *Margoe* be eaſy, which I promiſed, and was as good as my Word. The next Morning, to ſhew me the Re-

gard

Digitized by Google

gard he had for me, he ſtaid with me three or four Hours beyond his uſual Time, and then we took our laſt Farewel of each other, for I never ſaw him ſince.

My Landlord being gone, I went to take my Leave of all my Friends, but ſpent the moſt Time with the Marchioneſs, where the Marquis her Son was preparing with all Expedition for *Flanders*, where the King's Regiment was to ſerve. All this good Family ſeemed very fond of me, and expreſſed their Concern at my Departure, and hoped that the next Winter our Corps would be again quartered in *Normandy*, and if not, they hoped I would get Leave to come and paſs the Winter with them, and aſſured me I could be no where more welcome.

The Morning of our Departure being come, I went to breakfaſt, and took my laſt Leave of that noble Family; the Marchioneſs laid her abſolute Commands on me, to keep a Paper Correſpondence with her, and give her from time to time a true Account of the Tranſactions in *Flanders*, on which ſhe would rely, more than on the Gazette, which was generally very partial, that ſhe expected the like Account from her Son, and that ſhe would compare our Notes; to this I anſwered, that ſhe could not expect ſo clear an Account from me as from the Marquis, who converſed with the great Officers, and conſequently muſt get better Intelligence than I could; but as ſhe did me the Honour to permit me to wtite to her, I would take all the Care I could, in obeying her Commands; ſhe was pleaſed to ſay, that ſhe did not doubt it, charging me to write often, aſſuring me that ſhe would punctually anſwer my Letters. I made a low Bow, promiſed her all ſhe aſked, took my Leave, mounted and joined the Brigade already on their march. Thus I left this good Family, Country, and

Digitized by Google

and the beſt of Landlords, never to ſee them more.

CHAP. II.

WE marched that Night to *Pontau-de-Mer*, the next Day to *Rouen*, where we reſted a Day, and continued our March by Eſtap to *Abbeville*, where our Rout ended, and began to live on our Pay. Here we ſtaid fourteen Days, where our whole Corps conſiſting of eight Squadrons joined, and then marched to *Perrone*, near which Town was the Rendezvous of the Army. Here we got an Account that the Confederate Army was in Motion, and intended to lay Siege to *Doway*, a very ſtrong Town, having a Garriſon of eight thouſand choſen Men, commanded by Monſieur *D'Allbergotier*, an old experienced General, reputed to be one of the beſt in *France*, and the ſame who received a Muſket Shot through the Body, at the ſame time, that Marſhal *de Villars* was wounded in the Knee, the laſt Year at the Battle of *Malplacket*.

On the News of the Duke of *Marlborough*'s being in Motion with the Confederate Army, Marſhal *Villars*, ordered the *French* Army to march to the Plains of *Arras*, to cover and prevent any Surprize on that Town; there we lay until *Doway* was beſieged in Form, having a ſmall River in our Front named the *Scarp*, where ſome of the Officers and Soldiers of each Army uſed to walk down, to their reſpective Sides of the River, and converſe friendly together. However this did not laſt long, for Marſhal *Villars* ordered ſome Bridges of Boats to be thrown on the River, and afterwards paſſed it with his whole Army. Powder and Ball being diſtributed, it was given

Digitized by Google

given out, that he intended the next Day to attempt at all Events the raiſing the Siege.

As the Cartel for Exchange of Priſoners was not yet ſettled, I, with a few other Priſoners of our Corps, was ordered to go to *Arras*, and there wait the Event of this Action. The next Morning, the *French* Army marched in good Order to the Plains of *Doway*, and drew up in Line of Battle, within Cannon-ſhot of the Confederate Army, which was alſo in Line of Battle, ready to give them a warm Reception.

The Duke of *Marlborough* had taken ſuch proper Meaſures, by making Redoubts and raiſing Batteries, well mounted with Cannon at proper Diſtances, that the Marſhal did not think it practicable to engage him with Safety, or probability of Succeſs; he therefore contented himſelf with cannonading the Enemy the reſt of the Day, which they repaid with Intereſt, and the *French* returned towards *Arras*. Then the Siege went on briſkly, and *Albergotter* made a moſt glorious Defence, diſputing the Ground Inch by Inch, attacking and retaking Poſts that the Enemy had taken and lodg'd themſelves in.

Thus the Siege continued about two Months, with great Slaughter, on both Sides; and it was reported that the Confederates loſt in this Siege, not leſs than eight thouſand men. The Town capitulated, and the *French* Garriſon marched out with all the Marks of Honour.

No ſooner the News came of the Surrender of *Doway*, than my Captain ſent for me, and wiſhed me Joy, telling me, that I was now at Liberty to do my Duty, the Chartel being ſettled and the Exchange made. I thanked him for imparting this good News to me, but believed I muſt ſoon leave the Service; that I acquainted him, at the latter End of the laſt Campaign, the Neceſſity I was un-

Digitized by Google

der of going to *England*, but could not then have my Diſmiſſion, being a Priſoner of War: Now that Impediment being removed, I hoped he would grant my Requeſt, my going being abſolutely neceſſary, and much for my Intereſt, which I was ſure he would conſider.

He ordered me to ſpeak to the Quarter-maſter, who kept the Brigades Accompts, and to ſettle with him, and in three or four Days to come to him, that he would conſider of it, but aſſured me, I ſhould not be detain'd to my Prejudice.

By this Time I had wrote ſeveral Letters to the Marchioneſs, and as often receiv'd her obliging Anſwers, thanking me for the Accounts I ſent her of the Tranſactions of the Campaign.

This good Lady to ſave me the Expence of Poſtage, always incloſed her Letters to me in the Marquis her Son's Packets, who kindly ſent them by one of his Servants to my Tent, and did me the Honour himſelf once to call to ſee me: I went to the Quarter-maſter, ſettled my Accounts, on the Ballance of which, he told me, that the King was Debtor to me one hundred and five Livres, which would be punctually paid, as ſoon as the Money, which was daily expected, ſhould come. He gave me a Copy of the Account to ſhew to my Captain, when I would wait on him; this Account I kept by me for ſome Years, which with five Livres was all that I received for about ten Months that I had the Honour to ſerve in that Corps, and fifty Livres Smart Money, that I received the Year after the Battle, a Gratification ordered by the King, as an Encouragement for times to come, and a Reward for all thoſe that received but the leaſt Wound, as well as the moſt dangerous, in Manner following, *viz.* to every private Soldier ten Livres, to every Dragoon fifteen, to every Trooper twenty, to the Corps of Carbineers twenty five Livres, to the

Digitized by Google

the Corps of the *Gens d'Arms* fifty Livres, and to all the Houſhold Troops, eighty Livres each, and in Proportion to all Officers of the whole Army, who received the leaſt Hurt. This amounted to a pretty round Sum, there not being leſs than eleven thouſand wounded, and nine thouſand killed in this bloody Battle.

The four Days being paſt, I waited on my Captain, who aſk'd me, if I was ſtill in the ſame Mind to quit; I told him, that it was not without Reluctancy, but that there was an abſolute Neceſſity for it. I ſhewed my Account, he told me as ſoon as the Money came I ſhould be paid, and have my Diſmiſſion, ſince I was reſolved to go; I told him, that the coming of the Money might take more time, than my Buſineſs would permit me to ſtay; that now *Doway* was taken, the Confederate Army would probably be ſoon in Motion, and that without Doubt, Marſhal *Villars* would march to obſerve them, which would ſtill produce new Delays; he agreed, that it might be ſo, and ſent for the Brigade Clark, to draw my Diſmiſſion, and an honourable Certificate of my good Behaviour, both which he ſigned, and went with me to the *Chevalier de Roy*, Count *de Ruſſy*, who then commanded our Corps, who alſo ſign'd the Papers, and gave them to me, and both wiſh'd me good Succeſs. I went and took leave of the other Officers, and of all the Gentlemen my Comrades and Familiars; and went that Afternoon to *Arras*, and took place in the Stage, to go the next Day to *Doway*; the Communication between the two Towns being again made free. Thus I quitted the *French* Service, never to ſerve them more.

The next Day being come to *Doway*, I found all in a Hurry, ſome clearing the Streets of the Rubbiſh, occaſioned by the Bombs, *&c.* There I met my Landlord who kept the Sign of the Bear at

Digitized by Google

Tournay, for whoſe Daughter I had fought the Duel with the *German* Officer, in 1706, before-mentioned; with him I paſs'd that Evening, and we were glad to ſee each other; he told me his Daughter (my Sweet-heart) was married to a Lieutenant of the Regiment of *Nice*, who was a particular Acquaintance of mine, and one of thoſe concern'd in that mad Frolick, of Seven againſt Seven, alſo taken Notice of before in the Year 1706; he told me that ſhe was with her Mother at *Tournay*.

The next Day the Confederate Army march'd; the Duke of *Marlborough* fixed his Head Quarters at *Villerbrulin*, where I follow'd in order to get a Paſs for *England*. There the Scene changed, and many indeed were the Changes and Turns in my Affairs, before the End of that Year.

The Duke of *Marlborough* ordered *Betune*, a ſmall but ſtrong Town, about two Leagues off, to be inveſted; and, if I do not miſtake, *St. Venant* at the ſame Time, or ſoon after; for I am ſure they were both taken that Summer, as well as *Air*, a very ſtrong Town, that held out until the latter End of *October*, or the Beginning of *November*, for which I ſhall aſſign a Reaſon hereafter.

Here I ſtaid two Days, till Things were a little ſettled, and then went to the Duke's Quarters, in Hopes to get a Paſs for *England*. The firſt that I ſpoke to, was Colonel *Pocock*, who ſeeing me, and judging me to be a Stranger, came to me and aſk'd my Buſineſs; I told him I came from the *French* Army, that I intended for *England*, and came to get a Paſs for that Purpoſe. He aſk'd me if I was a Deſerter; I told him not, and ſhewed him my Diſmiſſion and Certificate; he read them, for he ſpoke *French*. He aſk'd me, among ſeveral other Queſtions, what Countryman I was? I anſwer'd him I was an *Iriſhman*; he told me if I would ſerve in the *Engliſh* Army, he would

Digitized by Google

would give me good Encouragement, for that he had juſt got a Regiment, which lay in Garriſon in *Ghent*, that he intended to go thither in a few Days, and if I would go with him, he would be very kind to me, and that I need not trouble myſelf with getting a Paſs; he offer'd me a Crown to drink his Health, which I refus'd, fearing it might be look'd on as Lifting Money, though he aſſured me to the contrary, and ſaid, if I was not willing to ſerve, he would ſpeak to the Duke of *Marlborough*, to order me a Paſs, he being one of his Aids de Camp; I thank'd him, telling him, I had a Brother in *London*, that had ſent to me deſiring me to come to him, which I could not well avoid. He deſired me to do as I pleaſed, and ſo we parted for that Time only, as will appear hereafter.

I took up my Quarters at a great Sutler's near the Duke's, in order to be at Hand, that I might the better attend to get a Paſs. I went every Day, ſometimes twice a Day, but was always put off, with ſome Excuſe or other, which was owing, as I found out afterwards to the Management of Colonel *Pocock*. In this Manner was I detained about a Fortnight and never the nearer, ſpending my Money, and nothing coming in. At this Sutler's there was a good Ordinary, where I daily dined, with ſeveral Officers of the Guards, and ſome of the Clerks belonging to Mr. *Cardonell*, the Duke's Secretary; among whom was one *Sheldon*, of whom I ſhall have Occaſion to ſay ſomething hereafter.

One Day I took Notice that there was at Table a Gentleman, whom they call'd Captain *St. Clare*; after Dinner I ſaw a good many Soldiers of different Regiments, giving him their Names in Writing, and promiſing him to go with him; this rais'd my Curioſity to know the Meaning; I was told he

Digitized by Google

was Captain of the Volunteers; that all thoſe People engaged themſelves voluntarily to go down to the Trenches, to place Gabions; a Service that none was commanded on, but ſuch as went of their own Accord were received, and were paid a Crown for every Gabion they placed. Hearing this, and being idle, and my Money growing ſhort, I thought it a favourable Opportunity to repleniſh my Pockets; ſo without the leaſt Heſitation, I entered Volunteer with Captain *St. Clair*. That very Night I went with him to the Trenches before *Bethune*, where the Siege went on briſkly, and I had the good Fortune to place eleven Gabions without receiving the leaſt Hurt, though a good many were wounded, and ſeveral loſt their Lives. For this one Night's Service I received eleven Crowns, and returned by three the next Morning to *Brady*'s, for that was the Sutler's Name, where I took up my Quarters. Here I ſtaid ſome Days longer, every Day going to the Duke's about my Paſs, and ſtill meeting with Diſappointments.

As the major Part of my Readers may not underſtand the meaning of Gabions, or how the placing them ſhould be purchaſed at ſo dear a Rate as a Crown each, I ſhall here define them as follows; a Gabion, is a kind of a rough, round Baſket, about the ſize of a Barrel made with Boughs or ſmall Branches of Trees woven together, when the Number ordered are finiſhed, they are ſent down, to a proper place in the Trenches, the Volunteers alſo are fixt, when it is dark, an Engineer, with an Aſſiſtant or two, goes over the Intrenchment, with as much Match, and Line, as is neceſſary to mark out as many Paces, as the Work is intended to be carried on that Night, which, may be four or five hundred Paces, as ſoon as the Line is laid, to its proper Length, the

Digitized by Google

the Engineer returns, then the Workmen, of which there are always a Number equal to the Number of Paces marked out in the intended Work, begin by making a Gap in the Trench at the End of the Line ſo laid; at the entrance of this Gap a Man, appointed for that Purpoſe, ſits down with a Drum before him to ſerve as a Table, having by his Side, a couple of Bags of Crown Pieces, this being done, the Captain of the Volunteers, takes up the firſt Gabion and lays it on the Line at the Entrance of the Gap, where there was then no great danger; then all the Volunteers take their Gabions, and lay them on the Line, and return back and receive a Crown; thoſe willing to go again, might go as often as their inclination led them, and as often as they returned, they receiv'd a Crown; the Workmen, with their Pickaxes and Shovels filling the Gabions at the ſame Time with Earth, as faſt as they were laid. The noiſe of this Work apprized the *French*, who immediately made a terrible Fire on that Quarter, which did ſome Execution, however, I had the good Fortune, (as is ſaid before) to place eleven Gabions and receive as many Crowns.

It always was the Cuſtom at the Ordinary, after Dinner was over, to bring the Box and Dice to the Table, That thoſe who were willing to play at Hazard, might divert themſelves that Way; I was pretty fond of the Game, and though I had ſome Money, I had Prudence, and Temper enough not to play, as I had nothing coming in, but the laſt Night's good Succeſs with the Gabions, encouraged me to try my Luck, as far as a couple of Guineas went, thinking that if I had the Misfortune to loſe them, I ſhould be ſtill better by thirteen Shillings for my Night's Work, and a good Nights Work it was, for I ſat down to play, and had the good Luck to win between ſeven and eight Pounds; the next Day I played, and won about the

Digitized by Google

like Sum, a good deal of it from Mr. *Sheldon*, *Cardonall*'s Clerk, above-mentioned, beſides five Guineas on Honour, which he promiſed to pay next Day, but was not as good as his Word, by this good Fortune, I thought myſelf rich enough, and was reſolved not to play any more, giving for Reaſon, when intreated by the Company to ſit down, that I was reſolved, not to throw a Die, until Mr. *Sheldon* paid me.

Colonel *Pocock* daily importun'd me to take on, and at laſt to induce me, offered me a Halbert; ſo that meeting with ſo many Delays, and reflecting, that it would be ſhameful to return to *England* juſt in the height of the Campaign, to be a Burden to my Brother, I reſolved to accept of his Offer, on Conditions, that I might go and ſpend the *Winter* at *London*, which he granted, and I entered into preſent pay, at ſeven Shillings *per* Week; he told me that I muſt prepare to go immediately for *Ghent*, where his Regiment lay; I told him, I was ready, whenever he pleaſed to lay his Commands; I alſo told him of the five Guineas that Mr. *Sheldon* ow'd me, how and where the Debt was contracted; he ſwore that he would make him pay me, and directly ſent for him (for this was at the Duke's Quarters) as ſoon as *Sheldon* appeared, the Colonel bid him pay me directly, or that I ſhould go to Mr. *Cardonall*, and acquaint him with it; there needed no more, he pull'd out his Purſe and paid me, telling me that he intended to pay me at Dinner.

The Colonel then told me I might go off the next Morning for *Ghent*, and that he would be there in five Days; I deſired, he would give me leave to make *Tourney* my Way, though it was about three Leagues out of the Road, as I had ſome earneſt Buſineſs thither, and that I would be in *Ghent* (God willing) in five Days at fartheſt; this he granted,

Digitized by Google

granted, and I went off the next Day. Being come to *Tournay*, I went directly to my old Quarters, the Sign of the *Bear*, where I met my old Sweet-heart, who married the Lieutenant of the Regiment of *Nice*, above-mentioned, ſhe had a Daughter between two and three Years old, a very fine Girl, all this Family ſeemed overjoyed to ſee me, as I really was of ſeeing them, there I ſtaid two Days, did my Buſineſs, and went off for *Ghent*, my Sweet-heart and her two Siſters, gave me a Conduit to a publick Houſe, about half a League from Town, where we formerly uſed to walk to; I took my leave there, and arrived at *Ghent* at the Time promiſed, and went to the Colonel's Quarters, to which I had received a Direction to go at parting.

At the Duke's Quarters, I was informed that he arrived in Town the Night before; the next Morning I waited on him, and was informed by the orderly Serjeant that attended, that he was juſt ready to go up to St. *Peter*'s Barracks, where the Regiment was already under Arms to receive him, for that he had not yet ſeen it, ſince he got it; he ſoon came down Stairs, expreſt his Gladneſs to ſee me, telling me I was very punctual; I told him it was my Duty; he ordered me to follow him up to the Barracks; as ſoon as the Colonel was come, and every thing ready, he was proclaimed by beat of Drum, at the Head of the Regiment their Colonel, as is uſual; then he proceeded to view the Regiment by Companies, and aſked, if they had any Grievance to complain of, but none appearing, he ordered ſome Money to be diſtributed to each Company, to drink his Health, for which the whole Regiment, returned their Thanks, by three loud Huzzas.

Sir *Robert Mountgomery*, who was Lieutenant-Colonel, wanting a Serjeant, Colonel *Pocock* was pleaſed

Digitized by Google

pleaſed to recommend me to him, giving me a large Character, upon which I was received kindly, and immediately poſted Serjeant at the Head of his Company; this done, the Serjeant-Major firſt, then all the Brethren in their Turns, came to ſalute and wiſh me Joy, when this was over, the Colonel, with the great Officers went off, and the Regiment was diſmiſt to their Barracks, my Comrade, ſhewed me mine, where he alſo lay; I had not been long there when the Serjeant-Major came to pay his Reſpects to me, and, in the Name of all the Serjeants, told me, that when a new Brother was made, it was the Cuſtom to ſpend a Week's Pay, I told him, that I thought it a laudable Cuſtom, and that I ſhould by no Means pretend to break through it, deſiring him to appoint a Day, and I would appoint a Houſe, where I would be glad to ſee all my Fellow Serjeants, and get acquainted with them; this anſwer was moſt kindly received: The next Day the Colonel returned to the Army, having but little Time to be abſent, being one of the Duke's Aids de Camp.

The Serjeant-Major came to me then, and told me the Day was fixed for the meeting of the Brethren, I told him the Houſe, and Hour I ſhould meet them at; as I was well furniſhed with Money, I was reſolved not to confine myſelf or them to a bare Week's Pay, but to give them a Belly full, knowing it was the ſhorteſt Way to gain their Favour and Friendſhip; in order to this, I deſired a large Piece of powdered Beef to be boiled, and kept cold; the Time being come, I was ready at the Place appointed to receive my Gueſts; when they came, they were ſurprized to ſee the Table laid in ample Manner, with a Piece of Beef in the Middle, Butter and Cheeſe, with a Loaf of white Bread at each End, alſo ſix Canns of Beer, and a Bottle of Brandy; we all ſate down, and went

Digitized by Google

went to Work, and were very merry; it was the cuſtom to put a Quartern of Brandy in every Cann of Beer, and I did not forget to have that Meaſure on the Table, to prevent Miſtakes; we had no Glaſſes, for it was the Faſhion to drink by word of Mouth, ſo that thoſe who were fond of Liquor, and longeſt winded, were firſt drunk and began to be troubleſome, nevertheleſs they all went off by Degrees, well ſatisfied and very thankful.

As the Serjeant-Major and I were going towards the Barracks, I deſired him to invite, in my Name, the Serjeants that were on Duty, and could not attend the Entertainment; and to deſire them to meet the next Day at Four o'Clock in the Afternoon at the ſame Houſe, where I ſhould be ready to receive them, and I begg'd theFavour of his Company alſo; all which he having performed, we all met, and I treated them ſo well, that they went off as full and as well pleaſed, as their Brethren the Day before; thus did I inſinuate myſelf into the Eſteem and Friendſhip of the whole Corps of Serjeants, which continued as long as I ſtaid in the Regiment, and my whole Coſt did not amount to a Guinea.

Though Duty was hard, I had a Week's Reſpite before I was ordered on Guard; then the Serjeant-Major warned me for Guard the next Day; accordingly, I met on the Parade at the Hour appointed, drew my Lot, which happened to be orderly on the Governor, a Poſt much dreaded by all the Brethern of the Halbert; judging it to be (as it really was) a Poſt of great Fatigue from the ſeveral Errands they were ſent on in that large Town, on which account ſome of them offered me kindly to change with me, which I refuſed, and went according to my Lot.

Sir *Robert Mount*, or *Mongomery*, then my Lieutenant-Colonel and Captain, commanded, and acted as Governor, he being the Officer of the higheſt

Digitized by Google

higheſt Rank in the Town; here kind Providence ſhewed me farther Favour on this Duty ſo much dreaded.

At this Time there was a great Convoy of Ammunition, and other warlike Stores expected from *Holland*, for the Duke of *Marlborough*'s Army, then lying before *Ayre*, which was cloſely beſieged; about this Convoy, Sir *Robert* received ſome Orders, which he was to communicate to the Magiſtrates, who were aſſembled, at the Stadt Houſe for that Purpoſe; I heard Sir *Robert* order his Gentleman to ſend in the orderly Serjeant; I appeared, he aſked me if I was orderly Serjeant; I told him I was, he ſaid that he was glad of it, for he believed I could ſpeak *French* (which he ſpoke very well himſelf) I told him I could; he ſent me with a Meſſage to the Magiſtrates, and I brought an Anſwer, and thus I was kept above three Hours carrying Meſſages, backward and forward, between the Governor and Magiſtrates, until I was quite tired; however I had the good Fortune, to pleaſe Sir *Robert*, and one of the Burgher Maſters, who came to him about Buſineſs, was pleaſed to beſtow ſome Praiſes on me; the next Day I was relieved, at which I was very glad, and went home to Bed, and got about three Hours Sleep, when I was again ſent for by Sir *Robert*, as the Serjeant that relieved me could ſpeak nothing but broad *Scotch*, therefore I was obliged to go on ſome Errands he could not do; this was was a Hardſhip but it turned out well at laſt. Sir *Robert* told me plainly, that he could not do without me, and that I muſt do no other Duty, but be orderly on him, (at leaſt until the Convoy ſhould come from *Holland*, and go to the Army, and for my Encouragement, I might eat with *Lewis* (who was his Gentleman) and that I ſhould have a Bed in the Houſe, and in a few Days if I found it too hard, he would order another

Digitized by Google

other Serjeant to aſſiſt me; this was too fair an Offer to be rejected, if it had been in my Power ſo to do, therefore I embraced it with all my Heart.

My ſpeaking good *French*, and pretty good *Flemiſh*, got me more Employment than I deſired, being continually harraſſed with one Errand or other, though ſome proved to my Advantage; at laſt the Convoy began to come by degrees, eight or ten Veſſels arriving every Day, until the whole came; as faſt as they came their Loading was put on Board other Boats provided for the Purpoſe, which were fitter than thoſe that came from *Holland*, to tranſport thoſe Stores up the Rivers to the Army: As faſt as the Boats were loaded, they moved to a Village called *Drungen*, within leſs than a League of *Ghent*, out of which there was a Detachment of our Regiment ſent to guard them. I had ſo much Buſineſs about this Affair, that the Governor ſeeing that it was too hard on me, ordered another Serjeant (according to promiſe) to aſſiſt me, and all that he had to do was to attend at Sir *Robert*'s Houſe, and to know where to find me, if I ſhould be wanted by him; this was punctually obſerved, which gave me more Leiſure to take Diverſion and ſpend my Money, which was coming in pretty faſt, as ſhall be ſeen hereafter.

There were Detachments from *Bruges*, and other Towns, coming daily to ſtrengthen the Eſcort, deſigned to guard the Convoy, and as faſt as they arrived at *Ghent*, were ordered to *Drungen* where there was a great and rich Convent of *Bernardine* Monks. An Order was ſent by the Magiſtrates of *Ghent*, to the Burgher Maſter of this Village, to ſupply a proper Quantity of Wood and Straw for the Uſe of the Eſcort, two of theſe Monks came to the Governor, to pray, that ſomebody who could ſpeak *French* or *Flemiſh* might be ſent to ſee the Diſtribution made; whereupon the Governor aſked me,

Digitized by Google

me, who I thought was propereſt to ſend, making no doubt but there might be ſomething got by it, I told him, that if he would ſpare me ſo long, I would willingly go, and return as ſoon as the Diſtribution was made, to which he conſented; I went with the good Fathers to the Convent, where the Wood and Straw was delivered; which I ſuppoſe the Village paid them for.

All this being done, without the leaſt Diſturbance, they took me in and made very much of me, and at parting, made me a Preſent of two Silver Ducatoons, about eleven Shillings and Eight-pence *Engliſh*; this Diſtribution laſted in this Manner, four or five Days, ſome Days I got more but never leſs than the above Sum.

The Convoy meeting with Delays, and ſtaying there longer than was expected, in order to relieve this Village, I was employed (the Governor giving leave) by the Magiſtrates of *Ghent*, who gave me Orders to go to the Villages about, and warn them to ſend Wood and Straw, to *Drungen* for the Uſe of the Eſcort; this Order enabled me to burn three or four Villages without Fire; I mean by this burning, that the Magiſtrates of thoſe Villages gave me a Piece of Money to excuſe them, telling me that Wood and Straw was ſcarce with them, and ſhewing me other Villages in the Neighbourhood, which had theſe Commodities in more Plenty; by this Means I lined my Pocket pretty well, beſides ſending three Waggons load of Wood, and two of Straw to the Eſcort that Night, then I returned to *Ghent*, and gave an Account to the Governor, and the Magiſtrates of the Supply I had ſent to *Drungen*.

In a few Days after, every Thing being ready for the Convoy to move forward, they began by break of Day in the Morning to put themſelves in Motion, to the Number of forty five Boats guarded

Digitized by Google

ed by about four or five huudred Men, and got that Night to *Dins*, about four Leagues from *Ghent*; where they were met by about eight hundred Foot, and three hundred Dragoons, which made in the whole, thirteen hundred Foot, with three hundred Dragoons, all commanded by General *Ginkle*, in the States of *Holland*'s Service; who, notwithſtanding, his having timely Intelligence of a ſtrong Detachment of *French* from the Garriſon of *Ypres*, being out with intent to intercept him, yet he ſettled the neceſſary Diſpoſition for the March, and ordered all to be in Motion by two of the Clock in the Morning; which was accordingly done. The Boats to the Number of Forty five, were drawn by Horſes, provided for that Purpoſe, and were divided into ſeveral Diviſions, a Detachment with each Diviſion, who had Orders on the firſt Alarm, to quit the Boats, and with all Expedition to join the main Body.

In this Order did we march, until we came near a Village, called *Vivie St. Elloy*, commonly called by the *Engliſh*, *Fivie*; which lay on the other Side of the River *Liſs*, on which our Boats were; I commanded a Detachment of ſixteen Men, with the laſt Diviſion of Boats; the firſt Diviſion being come near the Village, there was a ſudden Halt, the *French* appearing in Sight, and putting themſelves in order for Action; the Horſes were immediately taken from the Boats, and were coming full drive to ſave themſelves; returning towards *Dins*, the Word paſt, for all the Detachments to join the main Body, with all Expedition, which being done, the whole drew up in one Line, three deep, and the three hundred Horſe or Dragoons, drew up in our Rear, between us and the River; where there was a little Mount, on which General *Ginkle*, with ſome other Officers, ſtood obſerving the Enemy, who were alſo preparing for the En-

Digitized by Google

Engagement; they were drawn up in two Lines, each four deep, (for they had no Horſe here) there was a little Moraſs in the Front of the Center of both Parties, both the Enemy's Lines out wing'd ours conſiderably, reaching from River to River, and were computed to be five thouſand Men, a great diſparity between their Number, and ſixteen hundred on our Side. Having now given my Reader a juſt Account of the Poſition and Number of each Party, I ſhall proceed to give an impartial Relation of this Action, of which little or no Notice, has been taken by any of the Authors who have publiſhed the Hiſtories of thoſe Times, not judging it worth reciting, though in Fact not inconſiderable in itſelf, or the Conſequences attending it, as may hereafter appear.

The Moraſs, above mentioned, being in the Front of the Center, three Deſerters came over it in leſs than a Quarter of an Hour, at whom ſeveral Shot were fired, though it was preſumed with Intention not to hurt them, for it was judged afterwards, that they were ſent on purpoſe, to try if the Moraſs was paſſable, for the firſt came on the Right, the ſecond on the Left, the third croſs the Middle, who were all ſent by our People over the River for their Safety, when according to the Military Rules, they ſhould have been hanged as Spies; however, in a few Minutes after the laſt came over, the Enemy's Drums beat, and they marched down in Order of Battle, from Right to Left to attack us.

The Action did not laſt long, for being come within Piſtol Shot of us, our Right began to fire, which continued to the Left, like a running Fire, on a rejoicing Day; and as ſoon as we diſcharged our Arms we turned about and fled towards the River, the *French* marching down in Order, and

Digitized by Google

and pouring their Shot among us, making a great Slaughter.

General *Gingcle*, with his Dragoons, having no other Remedy, reſolved to force his Way through the Enemy, which he bravely effected; though not without ſome Loſs; but ſaved himſelf and the greater Part of his People, and got ſafe, I think to *Bruges*. At this Time as I was flying with the reſt, towards the River, I received a Muſket Ball in the ſmall of my Back, juſt on the back Bone, which penetrated my Coat, the Cloth of my Waſtecoat, and lodged between that and the Lining, and went no further, it gave me a terrible Slap, and the next Day it was ſwelled to the Bigneſs of an Egg, which had, I thank God no bad Conſequence. I no ſooner got to the River ſide, than I eſpied, a large Plank on the Bank, I called five or ſix Soldiers, and with their Aſſiſtance, laid it from the Bank to one of the Boats, and we all got ſafe over it, though the Balls were flying pretty thick. As ſoon as we got to the Boat, we drew the Plank, and laid it from the Boat to the other Bank, and got ſafe to the other Shore, and we all got behind the Bank to cover ourſelves from the Balls, which were ſtill flying; I now and then popt up my Head to ſee what was doing.

Soon after, the Firing ceaſed, and I plainly ſaw the Enemy ſurround and ſtrip our People. In this Action there were about five hundred killed or drowned, I mean of the Foot, for I never could hear what loſs the Dragoons ſuſtained; there were ſeven hundred and fifty Priſoners carried to *Ypres*; I never heard that above thirty of the thirteen hundred Foot got off. It would be Preſumption in me, in the low Station of a Sergeant to cenſure, or arraign the Conduct of Men in high Station, on this critical Occaſion; but hope without Offence to any at this Day, I may, acquaint my Reader

Digitized by Google

with what might have been done, as well as what has been done.

The General having, as it is ſaid, got timely Intelligence, at Dinner, of the *French* being out to intercept him; might, if his Orders would have permitted, have ſtaid there, and diſpatched an Expreſs to the Duke of *Marlborough*, of the dangerous Situation he was in, and have deſired a Reinforcement; perhaps that Step might have incurred the Duke's Diſpleaſure, and therefore it was thought better to march on; when he came in Sight of the Enemy, and found them ſuperior in Number, and, conſequently his own in greater Danger; whether it would have been more adviſeable, to take Meaſures (though may be not ſtrictly within the military Rules,) to make the beſt he could, to ſave moſt of the Men, and make the Enemy purchaſe their Booty, at a much dearer Rate, than they paid for it; which might have been done thus. When the *French* appeared, all the Boats might have been laid acroſs the River, from Bank to Bank, which I believe two Boats would have effected, but ſuppoſe, it required three; the forty five Boats would have made fifteen Bridges, over which the Foot might paſs to the other Side, in a Quarter of an Hour, and then might have drawn all the Boats to that Shore, and the Troops, might have lined the Bank, which would prove an excellent Breaſt-work, from which they might gall the Enemy, having a great Advantage, when they would come to attack; beſides, the *French*, inſtead of driving our Troops to be drowned as they were, they muſt have themſelves taken the Water and ſwam, if they intended to gain the Boats, which our Shot would certainly make them pay dear for; the Dragoons might have followed the draft Horſes, and been all ſaved: that this was practicable, is plain, from the

Digitized by Google

the putting over the three Deſerters, and I with my Companions, getting over as eaſy as we did. If the Commander, had not a diſcretionary Power, to act as he ſhould think proper, as Circumſtance ſhould fall out, then I belive it would be granted, that he did all he could; for I never heard, that he was in the leaſt blamed for his Conduct: but, be that as it will, it cannot be denied, but that there was a Blunder, or Neglect ſome where, in leaving the ſtrong Town of *Ypres*, with a Garriſon of about eight thouſand Men, between our Army and *Gent*, by which the *French* got the Opportunity to take and deſtroy this Convoy, which might have been prevented by ſending a Detachment of three or four thouſand Men from our Army to meet the Convoy, where it was deſtroyed; this not being done, I ſhall humbly ſubmit it to my Reader, eſpecially, to the Gentlemen of the Army, into whoſe Hands thoſe Memoirs may come, whether there was not a Fault or Neglect, or by whom committed.

To return to my Story, I was with my Companions behind the Bank, and ſeeing that all was loſt, and having no farther Buſineſs to ſtay, we parted, every one to ſhift for himſelf: I made the beſt of my Way to *Oudenard*, which was about three Leagues, I was led to the Governor to whom I was giving an account of the Action, which was ſoon confirmed by a terrible Clap and Shock, that made the Houſe ſhake, as if there had been an Earthquake; this was the firſt Diviſion of the Convoy, that was blown up, for they made three Diviſions of the Boats, (as I was afterwards informed) putting fifteen in each, one full of Powder, with fourteen others about it: as ſoon as I had given the Governor all the Account I could, I deſired, that he

Digitized by Google

would pleaſe to order me Poſt Horſes, that I might go to *Ghent* with all convenient Speed, to give the Governor timely Notice, to prepare againſt any ſudden Surprize, as he was very weak, having but one ſingle Battalion there; of which a ſtrong Detachment were now made Priſoners in this unhappy Action: he ordered me Horſes, and I immediately poſted away, borrowing a Frock at the Poſthouſe, and leaving my Sergeant's Coat, the better to diſguiſe myſelf, if I ſhould meet any *French* Parties.

I had not got above half a League from *Oudenard*, when I ſaw a great Blaſt as if it had been Lightening, and ſoon heard another terrible clap, which was the ſecond Diviſion of Boats blown up. This was about nine of the Clock; I rode on without the leaſt Delay, to the Gate of *Ghent*, I called to the Centry, told him my Name, bid him call the Sergeant of the Guard, he came, and ſent a Soldier to acquaint the Governor, who ſent Orders to open the Gate; and after an Hour's waiting I had Entrance, and went directly to the Governor, who expreſt his Joy to ſee me, for he had heard of the Action, and thought I had been loſt, as I was not among the Priſoners, of which he had gotten an Account, about four Hours after the Action: this was about two of the Clock in the Morning, while I was thus relating the whole Affair to him, the third, and laſt Diviſion of Boats was blown up, tho' near ſix Leagues, from *Ghent*, it made a terrible Noiſe, and ſhaked the Windows. Thus ended this Affair as far as I was concerned in it. It may be aſked, why the *French* did not carry away this Powder, and other warlike Stores, rather than deſtroy them. I ſhall only anſwer, that they had neither Time nor Convenience.

A

Digitized by Google

A few Days after there came a Detachment of eight or ten thouſand Men, ſent by the Duke of *Marlborough*, to the Village, near which this Action happened; to clear the River, repair the Banks, and make it navigable, for another Convoy then preparing in *Holland*, to be ſent to the Army with all Expedition. I will be bold to ſay, that leſs than half the Number ſent a Week ſooner, would have ſaved the Trouble, and ſecured the Convoy; the loſs of which prolonged the Siege of *Ayre*, at leaſt ſix Weeks longer than it could have held out; in which Time, our Army might have been employed in making ſome other Conqueſts.

Soon after the River was cleared, and the ſecond Convoy joined the Army, the *French* marched another ſtrong Detachment from *Ypres*, and found Means to burn our Magazines of Forage at *Brugeſs*. This ſudden, and ſucceſsful Attempt of the Enemy, allarmed the whole Country; Sir *Robert Montgomery*, our Governor held a Council of War, conſiſting of the chief Officers, in which it was reſolved, that he ſhould ſend out immediately, his Partizan, who knew the Country extraordinary well, to get Intelligence of the Motions of the Enemy; he was accordingly ſent, had a Paſs from Sir *Robert*, with an Order, as ſoon as he ſhould get any Account he could depend upon, to apply to the Burgher-maſter, *&c.* of the Village or next Town, to the Place where he ſhould get ſuch Intelligence, to procure Horſes and a Guide for him, to come with all haſte, and bring back an Account.

The Partizan no ſooner got Intelligence of the Enemy, but he applied to the next Burgher-maſter, and ſhewed him his Orders, the honeſt Burgher-maſter promiſed him all he deſired; and after having detained him ſome Hours, inſtead of giv-

Digitized by Google

ing him Horſes or Guide, had him pinioned; and ſent under a Guard, of four Peaſants to *Ghent*, who led him in that Manner to the *Griffier*, or Recorder; who directly committed him to Goal, guarded by the ſaid Peaſants, and then returned to the Recorder's Houſe. I happened to be paſſing by at that Time and took Notice of thoſe, armed Men, ſitting on the Stone-ſteps. I no ſooner came to Sir *Roberts*, than one of the Town's Men came and told me, that the Governor's Partizan, was in Priſon; I immediately acquainted Sir *Robert* with it; who ordered me to go directly to the Recorder, in his Name, and know the meaning; I told him that I would obey his Commands; but with humble Submiſſion, I thought it was paying him too great a Compliment, that impriſoning his Partizan, under the Sanction of his Paſs, without giving him the leaſt Notice, was uſing him with Contempt, and looked like favouring the *French* Intereſt; but if he ſhould think proper to hear what I had to propoſe, he might think it a better Way; it was this, the Boors, who had brought his Partizan to Town, and guarded him to Priſon, were ſtill at the Recorder's Door, if then he would give me leave to get from the Captain of the main Guard, a File of Muſketeers, I would go directly and ſeize them, and leave them at the Main Guard, until farther Orders; that then the Recorder muſt apply to him; this he approved off, and ſent me to the Captain of the Main Guard to order me a Sergeant and eight Men; I went with them to the Recorder's, and found the Boors refreſhing themſelves; I ordered the Sergeant to ſecure them; one of them ran into the Houſe, and up Stairs, I followed him, took him by the Collar; at this Inſtant one of the Recorder's Daughters happening to be coming down Stairs, got a Fall in the Struggle, but received very little Hurt, though

though it made a great Noiſe, as ſhall be ſeen: However, I brought my Man down to his Companions, and lodged all the four at the Main Guard, and went to acquaint Sir *Robert* with it. This being reported, and the Recorder hearing of it, and the Magiſtrates being aſſembled at the State Houſe, ſeveral Meſſages paſſed between them and the Governor; until a Chartel made; the Priſoners on both Sides ſet at Liberty; the Partizan firſt, and then the Boors; but this did not end here, for the Magiſtrates made a long and formal Complaint, againſt Sir *Robert*, to the Duke of *Marlborough*, wherein the Recorder's Daughter was not forgot, not without great Aggravations. This Sir *Robert* was acquainted with, by one Monſieur *Oudenhoff* or *Oldcaſtle*, he was the higheſt Magiſtrate, above the Burgomaſters, and a great Friend of Sir *Robert*'s, who adviſed him to write to the Duke in his own Defence, which he did: The Magiſtrates having ſent a Deputation in form, with their Complaint, were told by his Grace, that as it was a Diſpute between them, and the commanding Officer about impriſoning People on each Side, he would not meddle with it, but would leave it to be decided by the Council of State at *Bruſſels*. This pleaſed the Recorder and his Party much, making no doubt of gaining their Ends: Accordingly, there was a formal Proceſs drawn up againſt Sir *Robert*, who had an Account of all the Proceedings from his Friend *Oudenhoff*, who adviſed him to make his Defence; in order to which, he ought to ſend ſome-body to *Bruſſels* to retain a Procurer, and a Vocat, *i. e.* an Attorney, and Council, to be ready to prepare the neceſſary Inſtruments againſt the Charge that ſhould appear againſt him, of which he was ſoon to receive a Copy; and at the ſame time, was pleaſed to ſay, that in his Opinion, he could not pitch upon a better Man than

Digitized by Google

me, as I was acquainted with the whole Affair, and did not want Capacity.

In two Days, Sir *Robert* received a Copy of the Charge, and I was ſent to *Bruſſels* with my Inſtructions to manage this Affair; ſo that I was both Solicitor and Witneſs. I told Sir *Robert*, that it was neceſſary the Partizan ſhould go with me to be a Witneſs; to which he agreed, and we both went, and came to *Bruſſels* that Night. The next Morning I went and retained the Lawyers, gave them a Copy of the Charge, with an Account of what myſelf and the Partizan could ſay of the Matter, deſiring them to draw up a Defence, of which they muſt let me have Copies with all Expedition, to ſend to *Ghent*, which was ſoon done, and ſent the next Day by Poſt to Sir *Robert*, which were moſtly approved of. In four Days after they were ſent back with a few Amendments, with Orders to have them all drawn up on ſtamped Paper, ready to be laid before the Council of State, which was ſoon to meet.

In a few Days after, I received a Letter from Sir *Robert*, letting me know that General *Cadogan* was come to *Ghent*; that in two Days he would be at *Bruſſels* to attend the Council of State about Buſineſs relating to the Army; that he promiſed to ſerve him, and ordered me to be careful, when he came to Town, and immediately to attend him, and ſhew him the Proceedings, and follow whatſoever Inſtructions he ſhould give me. This I punctually obſerved, and had the Honour to be a full Hour with the General, who approved of all that was done.

Soon after this, the Council of State met, and proceeded to Buſineſs, and in five or ſix Days, our Cauſe came on; the Charge againſt Sir *Robert* and his Defence being read, the Witneſs on both ſides were called in, and the Charge again read, in which it was ſet forth, as if Sir *Robert* had perſonally committed

Digitized by Google

committed this violent Outrage (as it was called) in the Recorder's Houſe, and the ill Treatment of his Daughter. I ſhall not trouble the Reader with an Account of all that was ſworn: On our Side, the Partizan declared on his Oath, that he was ſent out by the Governor of *Ghent*, with his Paſs to get Intelligence of the Motions of the Enemy, who had burnt the Magazine of Forage at *Bruges*, and that he was brought, tied and impriſoned, *&c.* as ſet forth above. I declared on my Oath, as to the Violence ſaid to be committed at the Recorder's Houſe, and the pretended ill Treatment of his Daughter by Sir *Robert*; that ſo far from doing it, Sir *Robert* knew nothing of the matter; if it was an Offence, I was the Offender; that the Governor hearing that the Peaſants who had impriſoned his Partizan, were at the Recorder's Door, ordered me to go with a Sergeant and eight Men to ſecure them, and lodge them at the main Guard, the better to know by what Authority they had committed this Raſhneſs; which (if it was not ſo) at leaſt looked like favouring the Enemy's Deſigns; I went to put my Orders in Execution; found the Peaſants; ordered them to be ſecured; one of whom ran into the Houſe, and went up Stairs; I followed, and took him; he ſtruggled, and the Lady coming down Stairs, fell in the Scuffle, but was ſure ſhe could receive no great Hurt, being ſeen walking abroad two Days after. It was plain there was no ill Treatment intended to the Lady, nor Violence to the Houſe: The Peaſant ran up Stairs I ſay, and I followed; and had he gone to the Foot of the Altar, I had done the ſame, being my Duty to do ſo. This I ſpoke with ſo much Spirit, that ſome laughed, and others ſhaked their Heads, as not approving it: The Witneſſes were ordered to withdraw; and the Matter being debated for a while, Sir *Robert* was honourably acquitted, and a ſevere Reprimand ordered

Digitized by Google

ordered for the Recorder. This I was told by General *Cadogan*, on whom I waited, as ſoon as the Court broke up for Dinner.

The next Day I went to *Ghent*, to give Sir *Robert* an Account, but he had heard all before by his Friend *Oudenhoff*. Though I got no Profit by this Cauſe, I got ſome Reputation, and rivetted me faſt in the Eſteem of Sir *Robert*, who received me very kindly, and returned me Thanks for my Trouble and good Management.

I was not returned to *Ghent* long, before I began to think on Ways and Means for raiſing a Supply; I thought, that as the Regiment was but newly come from *Scotland*, and unacquainted with the Cuſtoms of *Flanders*, there might be ſome Perquiſites got not yet inquired into: To find out this, I made it my Buſineſs to find the Undertaker who ſupplied the Garriſon with Coals and Candles; I went to his Houſe, aſked him if it was not time to ſettle about Candles, *&c.* for the Guard-rooms? he told me, that it was full time (giving me the Title of *Hier Major*) telling me, that he often wondered he had not ſeen me before; by this I knew there had been nothing done in the Matter; but as I had no Orders, I could do no more at that Time, but deſire him to appoint any Day the Week following, and that I ſhould wait on him; he told me any Day but *Wedneſday*, from nine in the Morning until ſeven in the Evening, I ſhould be ſure to find him at home: He brought a Bottle of white Wine; we took two or three Glaſſes each, and I took my Leave well ſatisfied.

The better to make this plain to the Reader, I muſt inform him, that in *Ghent* there were fifty-two Poſts, or Guard-rooms, ſupplied with Coals and Candles in the Winter, but in Summer, only half the Number of Candles, and a few Turf to each Guard, for the Soldiers to light their Pipes.

The

Digitized by Google

The Magiſtrates contract with an Undertaker to furniſh this Supply for ſeveral Years at a certain Price agreed on, who receives his Money once in three or four Years: As there was but a ſingle Battallion in Town, we had Guards but on eight Poſts; ſo that there were four and forty Poſts vacant, to be accounted for.

As ſoon as I parted with the Undertaker, I went to Sir *Robert*, told him, I believed, there might be ſome Perquiſites belonging to the Garriſon, not thought on; that if he would give me leave, I would look into it, and perhaps raiſe ſome Pocket Money for him: He told me, he knew that I had Prudence enough not to do any thing to cauſe a Complaint: I aſſured him he need not fear: I told him, that it was generally the Town Major, or one of his Aid Majors, ſent by him, that managed this in Winter; and that I muſt make uſe of ſome Title above that of a Sergeant to gain more Reſpect: He bid me do as I pleaſed: I went to the Undertaker the Week following, according to Promiſe, and ſettled with him, and found that I had ſix hundred Guilders (about fifty Pounds Sterling) to receive, which he paid me, and I gave him a Receipt, not for ſo much Money, but for Candles and Turf for all the above Poſts for above four Months; and he came with me to Sir *Robert*'s, who ſigned it; I then went with him to the Tavern, gave him the Receipt, and a Bottle, and parted.

I made a fair Diviſion of the Money, putting three hundred Guilders in a Bag I bought for myſelf, leaving three hundred in the Bag I received from the Undertaker, and carried it to Sir *Robert*; it was all in *Premiſſia* Shillings, which made a great Bulk: On this Occaſion, he behaved very generouſly, making a fair Diviſion of the three hundred Guilders, giving me one half, telling me, that as I found it out, I deſerved my Share; ſo that I had four

Digitized by Google

four hundred and fifty out of ſix hundred Guilders. When I ſaw this, I was really ſorry, that I had taken any before; but I ſoon put my Brains to work, and made him amends.

I knew it was cuſtomary, in the Time of the *French*, for the Commanding Officers to be ſupplied with Firing and Candles at their Houſes, and Bougies, otherwiſe Wax-lights, for their own Apartments. In a few Days, I went to the Undertaker's about the Matter, who very readily owned, that it was the Governor's Due to have it, and that he was willing to ſettle about it. I went to Sir *Robert*, acquainted him with what I had done, who gave me full Power to act as I pleaſed: I told him, as he was at the ſole Expence of buying Coals for his Kitchen; that I would ſpeak to the Undertaker to ſend in Coals and Candles for the Remainder of the Campaign, which was now drawing to a Concluſion, and ſettle with him for the time paſt. This he agreed to; I went to the Undertaker, ſettled with him, to ſupply the Governor with Coals and Candles for the Remainder of the Summer, and received three hundred Guilders for the Time paſt, for which he had a Receipt ſigned as above: Of this laſt Sum, I neither received, expected, or deſired any Part.

Another Perquiſite that Sir *Robert* gave away to avoid Trouble, was ſigning the Paſſes of all Travellers that paſſed thro' the Town, not knowing it to be ſo valuable as it really was: This he granted to Captain *Cunningham*, who was Paymaſter to the Regiment, and under Colour of taking the Trouble off his Hands, requeſted him to let him do it, which Sir *Robert* granted, of which *Cunningham* got the Profit, but I got the Trouble; for the Travellers being always brought to the Governor's Houſe to have their Paſſes ſigned, for which each paid a Shilling, *viz.* ſeven Pence Sterling. I was often ſent with them to the Pay-maſter's, who ſigned them, and received

Digitized by Google

received the Money: This was a Fee always allowed to the Governor's Secretary.

I took an Opportunity, one Day, to tell Sir *Robert* how troubleſome this was, to be ſending a Meſſenger every Time a Traveller came to *Cunningham*'s, when he might order his Gentleman, or whoever he pleaſed to ſign the Paſſes, and keep the Money at home, which I was convinced would go near to keep his Table, in Wine at leaſt: for that it could not amount to leſs than half a Piſtol a Day, one Day with the other; and ſaid, I would be glad to farm it at that Price: He pauſed a while, and then aſked me, if I would take the Trouble on myſelf; (this being juſt what I aimed at) I told him I would, and would keep a faithful Account, and give him the Money daily, or weekly, juſt as he pleaſed; he choſe the latter, and told me, he would allow me Two-pence out of every Shilling for my Trouble. By this I was in the Receipt of above three Shillings a Day for the reſt of the Summer, but loſt by it the Friendſhip of Captain *Cunningham*, who from that Time conceived an Averſion to me, but could not hurt me.

I now ſhall conclude my Proceedings in *Ghent*, and this Campaign, with ſomething of a Love Intrigue, though not of my own; but as I was concerned in it, and is a Part of my Life, I cannot omit acquainting my Reader with the Part I acted in it, and is as follows.

CHAP. III.

THERE was one Mr. *Kunick* (or *King*) a Gentleman of Fortune, and Bailiff of *Alloſt*, a pretty Town, half Way between *Ghent* and *Bruſſels*, a Widower, having a Daughter who boarded at a Convent in *Ghent*, Sir *Robert Montgomery*, the

Digitized by Google

the Governor, at an Aſſembly, got into her Company, and (if Fame ſays true) they fell in Love with each other, and carried on an Amour until it reached her Father's Ears, who on the Receipt of this unwelcome News, rid Poſt for *Ghent*, took his Daughter home, and had her cloſely watched; but Love, like other ſtrong Paſſions, ſoon found means to exert its Power in this enamoured Pair; for they ſoon contrived to keep a Paper Correſpondence by the Help of an Inn-keeper, who kept the *Golden Lyon* at *Alloſt*, who was let into the Secret, and made uſe of to carry on the Intrigue.

Sir *Robert* was, or pretended to be, on honourable Terms, and had ſome Propoſals made to the Father, who rejected them, and declared he never would hear a Word, nor receive another Meſſage on that Subject.

I had often heard, that he courted a beautiful young Lady, but never inquired who ſhe was, nor where ſhe lived; and though great a Favourite as I was with him, he never mentioned a Tittle of it to me, until the News came of the Surrender of *Ayre*, with which the Campaign ended.

One Night as he was at Supper, he ſent for me, told me, that I muſt immediately go off for *Alloſt* on particular Buſineſs; that his Groom had Orders to wait for me with Horſe and Furniture at the Gate of the *Capuchin*, in *Capuchin Street*; and that the *Bruſſels Poſt* was to be opened for me, and deſired that I would go with all convenient Speed to the *Golden Lyon* at *Alloſt*, and call for the Man of the Houſe, who upon telling him that I came from the Governor of *Ghent*, would, without further Particulars, deliver me the Inſtructions I was to follow; deſiring at the ſame time I would take great Care in the Management of it, for that it was a tender Point. I told him, he might be ſure of my Endeavours, and ſo took my Leave.

As

Digitized by Google

As ſoon as I came to the Inn, I aſked for the Landlord, to whom, when come, I delivered my Meſſage; he told me he would wait on me preſently; he returned, and gave me a Letter directed to me, I knew by the Direction it was Sir *Robert's* Hand-writing; after which, he brought a Bottle of Pontack Wine; we took a Glaſs or two each, and he left me, telling me that he would be with me as ſoon as poſſible. He was no ſooner gone, than I opened my Letter, wherein I was ordered to follow the Landlord's Inſtructions, and go with him to a Houſe, where I ſhould be introduced to a young Lady whom he had apprized by Letter of my coming from him, to wait on her to know her Reſolution, in what I had to communicate to her, of which ſhe already had ſome Hints; and deſired ſhe would declare her Mind as freely to me as ſhe would to himſelf; for that ſhe might well judge by his ſending me on this Affair, I was a ſincere Friend, in whom both might confide.

My Hoſt had been gone near two Hours, but came at laſt, and deſired me to walk with him; it was then a little after twelve o'Clock; we came to the Houſe; I was ſhewed to a very handſome Parlour, where every Thing was in as good Order to receive me, as if Sir *Robert* himſelf was to come: In leſs than a Quarter of an Hour, the Lady entered, attended by her Woman; ſhe received me very politely, with a chearful, ſmiling Countenance: ſhe ſeemed to be about nineteen Years old, really handſome, inclining to Fat: I believe ſhe had juſt aroſe from Bed, as ſhe was in an Undreſs: She did me the Honour to make me ſit near her, that we might not talk loud, for fear of being heard by her Father: She diſmiſſed her Woman, who was no ſooner gone, than ſhe aſked me, in a ſeeming Hurry, how the Governor did, and what time I parted

Digitized by Google

I parted with him? and told me, that she had just received a Letter from him, in which he had acquainted her with my coming, and desired me to speak freely; for she had Directions to depend on what I should tell her, as if she had it from the Governor's own Mouth; and that she would freely let me know her Resolution, in whatsoever I had to propose, on his Part. I told her that the Governor commanded me to acquaint her; that he had several times caused Proposals to be made to her Father for their mutual Happiness, but found him inflexible; that as the Campaign was almost at an End, he must soon go for *England*, and was resolved (if she would consent) to take her with him, if she approved of it, to let me know, and at my Return, he would take proper Measures to have her carried with Safety and Expedition, cross the Country, to *Zass Van Ghent*, a small, but very strong Town, three or four Miles from *Ghent*, where he would order a Yatch from *Holland* to be ready to receive her and himself, and desired that she would please to have every thing ready to go off, at a Minute's Warning; but not to make any great Preparation, lest it might cause Suspicion; for she had no Occasion to incumber herself with Luggage, as she should be supplied with every thing fitting for her Birth and Rank, as soon as she came to *London*; and desired that she would not make herself uneasy, in Expectation of being called for, until a Fortnight was expired, and then to be on the Watch, and have nothing to do, when called for, but go off: All this she came in and agreed to, assuring me, that she would punctually observe every thing, telling me, that she would write to the Governor, and in her Letter, desire him to give me the Conduct of this Affair; for that she thought he could not put it into better Hands.

I thanked

Digitized by Google

I thanked her for the great Honour ſhe did me, but begged of her to conſider, and weigh well the Conſequence of ſuch a Requeſt, before ſhe made it, as it might bear a Conſtruction that might not be favourable to her, and prejudicial to me: At this ſhe bluſhed, and pauſed awhile, and thanked me for putting her in mind of it; that indeed it might bear ſuch a Conſtruction; but that ſhe really meant no harm; that ſhe would always remember my kind Advice, and be ever a Friend to me, to the utmoſt of her Power. Thus we paſt the Night, which was pretty long (though it did not ſeem ſo) but not without Refreſhment; for her Woman, who waited in the next Room, brought in about two o'Clock, a Flaſk of Pontack, another of Champaign, with Cakes, Maple Biſcuits, and other Sweetmeats; but the Day breaking, I took my Leave of Mademoiſelle *Kunick*, leaving her ſeemingly well content, as I was really ſo; and I made no doubt, but I ſhould ſoon have a Lady *Montgomery* to be my very good Friend.

I returned to the *Golden Lyon*, went to Bed, took about three Hour's Reſt, and returned to *Ghent*, and gave Sir *Robert* an Account of all that paſt, with which he ſeemed well pleaſed, but a little ſurpriſed, that the Lady came ſo readily to agree to the Elopement: I told him, ſhe did not heſitate a Moment.

Soon after this, General *Sabine*, who was the real Governor of *Ghent*, ſent his Town Major, whoſe Name I think was *Whitney*, to make the neceſſary Preparations for the Reception of the Garriſon, which was ſoon expected; Sir *Robert* aſked me, if Colonel *Pocock* had not promiſed me Leave to ſpend the Winter in *England?* I told him he had: He informed me, that he was going to write to *Penington* at *Rotterdam*, to ſend a Yatch to *Zaſs Van Ghent*, to carry him and ſome Company

Digitized by Google

to *Holland*, that I might go with him, which would ſave me ſome Expence: I thanked him, and told him, I ſhould be ready to wait on him; here I made no doubt but I ſhould ſoon have another Journey to *Alloſt* to carry off Madamoiſelle *Kunick*, but heard no more of her.

General *Sabine*, the Governor being come, with Part of the Troops, who were to winter in *Ghent*, Sir *Robert Montgomery* loſt the Title of Governor, and I the two Titles of Major and Secretary, and was reduced to that of Sergeant only, which put me in mind of *Sanco*'s Government.

The next Day, Colonel *Pocock* arrived there on his Way to *England*, and ſtaid but one Night; I waited on him, and he gave me leave according to Promiſe to go for *England*.

Two or three Days after, Sir *Robert* and Colonel *Caine* ſet out for *Zaſs*, taking me with them, where the Yatch was ready to receive them, but I neither ſaw nor heard any thing of the Lady, nor could I learn whether Sir *Robert* ever intended to put his Deſigns in Execution, or whether he was not afraid he might come to trouble for it, or what other Reaſons might induce him to drop it.

Next Day we ſailed for *Rotterdam*, where we arrived ſafe the Day following, though not without Danger, for we had prodigious ſtormy Weather: We ſtaid there about ten Days, the Wind being due Weſt: At laſt it coming fair for *England*, we went to *Helvoetſluys*, and took the Packet for *Harwich*, where, by the Bleſſing of God, we landed ſafe in ſixteen Hours, and got from thence to *London* in two Days; my Expences were all bore by Sir *Robert*.

I no ſooner arrived at *London*, but the Scene changed: I went directly to ſee my Brother and Siſter, who received me with Joy, and ſtaid with them until twelve o'Clock at Night, then took my Leave,

Digitized by Google

Leave, and went to the *Hummums*, *Covent Garden*, to take my Reſt for that Night: The next Morning I went to Mrs. *Goodman*, who I found in the ſame Lodgings as when I parted with her, about a Year and half before.

I muſt now beg Leave of my Readers to introduce her once more, as ſhe was concerned in ſome of the Scenes I went through that Winter. I breakfaſted, dined and ſupped with her, and found her as affable and charming as ever, and ſhe was really overjoyed and ſurprized to ſee me; for ſhe ſaid ſhe was told I was killed in the Action, where the Convoy was loſt; and that ſhe was agreeably deceived by my Preſence, for ſhe never expected to ſee me more; and that ſhe would have gone into Mourning, had not Mrs. *Roberts* (who was her Landlady) diſſuaded her from it, until ſhe got a Confirmation of my Death.

I had not been above ten Days in *London*, when one Night being at Mrs. *Goodman*'s Lodgings, between twelve and one o'Clock, a Coach ſtop'd at the Door; the Coachman knock'd as if ſome Perſon of Diſtinction wanted Entrance; the Door was opened, Lights called for, and a great Noiſe on the Stairs. As ſoon as every thing was fixed and quiet; Mrs. *Roberts* came up to Mrs. *Goodman*'s Apartment, who pretended to be aſleep, as I alſo did. She ſtirred her ſoftly, ſaying in a low Voice, Madam, Madam; Mrs. *Goodman* aſk'd her what was the Matter; ſhe told her my Lord *Mohon* was come, who muſt ſpeak with her, and that ſhe muſt come down. At this I pretended to awake, and ſwore a Military Oath, ſhe ſhould not ſtir; the Woman prudently went off, but ſoon came up again, brought my Lord's Watch with his Seal, and gave it to Mrs. *Goodman*, for a Confirmation that it was my Lord; and that if ſhe did not come down, her Houſe would be tore to Pieces. I bid

Digitized by Google

her look to that, ſwearing ſhe ſhould not ſtir; Mrs. *Goodman* ſhewed me the Seal with my Lords Coat of Arms. I deſired Mrs. *Roberts* to preſent my moſt humble Reſpects to his Lordſhip, and tell him that I had the Honour to ſerve her Majeſty, under the Duke of *Marlborough* in *Flanders*, that this Lady was at preſent under my Protection, that I hoped to gain his Lordſhip's Eſteem, by aſſuring him that Gentlemen of the Army were Strangers to the delivering up any Conqueſt they had made, or any thing under their Protection, on a bare Summons; which I hoped would be ſufficient to plead the Lady's Excuſe for not waiting on his Lordſhip. This Meſſage Mrs. *Roberts* deliver'd exactly as ſhe had it from me, for I went ſoftly to the Stair-head, and heard every Word. My Lord pauſed a while, and then ſaid, *Serve her Majeſty under the Duke of* Marlborough *in* Flanders! which he repeated twice or thrice, and then bid Mrs. *Roberts* go and give his Compliments to the Gentleman, and tell him that he was alone, that there was a Supper juſt coming from the *Vine Tavern* in *Long-Acre*, and he would take it as a Favour, if he would come with his Lady, and ſpend a Couple of Hours with him; when I heard this I returned to Bed.

I told Mrs. *Goodman* all before Mrs. *Roberts* came up, and that I thought I could not refuſe his Lordſhip; ſhe ſaid not well, but was ſadly afraid of a Quarrel; I told her I hoped there was no Danger, for I would avoid it as much as in me lay. By this time Mrs. *Roberts* came and delivered her Meſſage; I deſired her to preſent my humble Reſpects to his Lordſhip, and tell him, that we ſhould wait on him immediately. In a Quarter of an Hour I handed my Lady down, Mrs. *Roberts* introduced us; My Lord received us very politely, and was reaching a Chair, but I ran and took hold of

Digitized by Google

of it, and brought it to the Table; Mrs. *Roberts* brought another, but I did not behave ſo complaiſantly, as I could have done, for I ſat down between his Lordſhip and the Lady; this I know was very far from being polite, but was reſolved to let his Lordſhip know that I was not in a Temper to part with her. My Lord took his Sword and laid it on a Chair near him; I would not be leſs condeſcending in this, for I alſo took mine, and laid it on a Chair I brought near for that Purpoſe.

His Lordſhip ſaid many ſoft obliging Things to Mrs. *Goodman*, which ſhe returned in a genteel Manner; now and then he aſk'd me ſome Queſtions about the Tranſactions of the Campaign; all which I anſwer'd to the beſt of my Knowledge. He view'd me very narrowly, of which I did not ſeem to take Notice, but was on my guard to prevent Surprize, for I had not forgot his Lordſhip's Affair with *Mumford* the Player, on account of Mrs. *Bracegirdle* an Actreſs, who unhappily loſt his Life, at much ſuch a Meeting.

Supper being come we went to it; as ſoon as Supper was over, Glaſſes and a Bottle of Burgundy with a Flaſk of Champaign, was laid on the Table, with a Supply of thoſe Wines on a Dumb-Waiter. My Lord lov'd Bumpers, and ply'd me pretty hard with the ſame. I had a pretty ſtrong Head, and could bear Wine at leaſt as well as his Lordſhip, but begged he would excuſe the Lady, who he alſo preſs'd; he very civilly told me, that as ſhe was under my Care, he would leave it entirely to me and herſelf to do as ſhe pleaſed; I thank'd his Lordſhip; and we ſat to it the reſt of the Night, drinking all the loyal Toaſts then in vogue, and were as cheerful and friendly as might be, without the leaſt Diſpute, till eight o'Clock in the Morning, when his Lordſhip order'd a Coach

Digitized by Google

to be call'd, to which I conducted him, and though his Lordſhip was pretty well overcome with Liquor, he politely took leave of Mrs. *Goodman*, and at the Coach Door did me the Honour to embrace me, thanking me for the Favour I had done him, and hoped we ſhould meet again; but I never ſaw him after, until he lay dead in *Hyde-Park*, being killed in a Duel by Duke *Hamilton*, (in the Year 1713) where his Grace alſo loſt his Life.

It was always my Ambition to keep Company with my Betters, but my Station prevented my doing this with the Officers of the Army, ſo I ſought out Company among Foreigners. In order to this I went every Day to dine at a *French* Ordinary, kept by Madam *Bennoy*, in *Suffolk-ſtreet*, where there was a great Reſort of ſeveral Nations. There was at that Time an Envoy from the Duke of *Lorrain*, who had a Houſe in that Street, he was called the Baron *de Forcenath*; this Gentleman had a Secretary whoſe Name was *Ebberlin*, that uſed to dine daily at that Ordinary. I made an Acquaintance with him, which ſoon ripened into an Intimacy; we grew fond of each other's Company, and paſt moſt of our Time together, Poſt Nights excepted, for then he was obliged to attend at home; we generally frequented all publick Places together.

There was at this Time one *Burket*, an Actor at *Drury-Lane* Play-Houſe, who kept a weekly Ball, or Dancing on *Thurſdays*, open for every Body on paying a Shilling, to which there was a great Reſort of both Sexes, ſome good, more bad, but all well dreſt. The Ladies came maſk'd, but would let the Man who they lik'd for a Partner ſee their Faces, in order to make Conqueſts, which they could not fail to do, being generally very handſome.

To

Digitized by Google

To this Ball the Secretary and I went one Night, when *French* Dances were going on; we danc'd a Minuet each, that we might have ſomething for our Shilling; as he was a *German* and could ſpeak no *Engliſh*, nor dance Country Dances, tho' preſſed by the Lady he had danc'd the Minuet with, we walked about, and look'd at the Dancing; he went from me for ſome time, and came and told me he had ſeen a moſt beautiful Lady, and begged if poſſible I might engage her to Supper. It ſeems it was the Cuſtom to make Parties to ſup at the Tavern after the Dancing was over; he ſhewed me the Lady at a Diſtance; I was a little ſurprized to ſee it was Mrs. *Goodman*; I did not ſeem to know her; I told him I would uſe my Endeavour to get her; I went and ſat by her, and told her what I came about. My Reader may judge I had no great Difficulty to perſuade her to make one of the Party to go to Supper; I deſired her to get a Girl of her Acquaintance to be my Companion, which ſhe promiſed. I went to the Secretary who had ſeen me talk to her, he aſked me if I had ſucceeded; I told him not yet, but that I would attack her again. I made a Party with two other Gentlemen, who had engaged their Partners, and went again to Mrs. *Goodman*, who had got by that time a Companion for me; I left them ſitting together, went to the Secretary and told him I had ſucceeded, at which he ſeemed overjoyed; I brought him to the Ladies, introduced him to Mrs. *Goodman*, and ſat myſelf by the other Lady, chatting with both until the Dancing was over, the *German* not ſaying one World all the Time, as he could ſpeak no *Engliſh*.

As ſoon as all was over, I went in queſt of the other Gentlemen and their Partners, and brought them with me in two Coaches, to the *Cock and Rummer Tavern* in *Bow-ſtreet*, *Covent-Garden*, where

Digitized by Google

we ſup'd, and were very merry, but none more ſo than the Secretary, who was overjoyed to find that Mrs. *Goodman* could ſpeak *French*; he made his Addreſſes to her and was deeply enamour'd. About twelve o'Clock the Secretary took his Leave, (being obliged to attend the Envoy at that Hour,) giving me a Charge to take Care of Mrs. *Goodman*, and to ſee her ſafe home, and to come to Breakfaſt with him by nine o'Clock the next Day, all which I promis'd and perform'd.

At one o'Clock I ſent for a Coach, took Leave of the Company, and ſaw the two Ladies home; firſt my Partner, and then Mrs. *Goodman*, with whom I paſs'd better than an Hour. She told me, ſmiling, that ſhe had made a Conqueſt for Life, for the Secretary had made Love to her on no other than honourable Terms, and that he begged to be admitted to viſit her, which ſhe neither refuſed nor granted, only telling him they ſhould meet again; I deſired her when that would happen, to be prudent and reſerved, and told her I would ſee him the next Morning, and at our next Meeting would be able to tell her more, and ſo took my Leave.

Next Morning I waited on Mr. *Ebberlin* at the Time appointed; as ſoon as he ſaw me he aſk'd me if I had ſeen Mrs. *Goodman* home; I aſſured him I did, and had promiſed her and the other Lady to go to the Play that Night; he ſaid if it was proper he would be one of the Party; I told him if he was ſo diſpoſed, it could not offend the Company; he made no Difficulty to tell me, that he was mightily taken with Mrs. *Goodman*, and that he never before ſaw any Woman he liked ſo well; aſk'd me where we were to meet to go to the Play; I told him at Mrs. *Goodman*'s Lodgings. As ſoon as I parted with him, I went to her Lodgings and told her what I had done, and deſired her to get the

Digitized by Google

the other Lady ready to go to the Play, that we ſhould call on them about five o'Clock; all which ſhe promis'd.

I met Mr. *Ebberlin* at Dinner, and ſtaid with him till Five. I then told him it was time to go to the Ladies, and aſked if he would go to the Play, he ſaid he would; we took Coach, and found Mrs. *Goodman* and the other Lady ready, and then went to the Play, and from thence to the *Cock* and *Rummer* to Supper, where we were very merry. About twelve we ſaw the Ladies home to their reſpective Lodgings, and then I went to ſee Mr. *Ebberlin* home. Thus we proceeded for about a Fortnight, the Courtſhip ſtill going on ſtrongly, and likely to end in Matrimony.

Though I had a Fondneſs for Mrs. *Goodman*, yet as I was not in Circumſtances able to keep her, I was glad to ſee her well provided for, but could not imagine that the Secretary ever meant (as he pretended) to marry her; and therefore I thought of the following Expedient to try his Sincerity.

Two Days after, I told her that ſhe was to be arreſted for a Debt of Fifty Pounds, that I was juſt come from *Sergeant's-Inn*, *Chancery Lane*, and ſaw an Action of one hundred Pounds taken out againſt her. This having ſurpriz'd her, ſhe ſaid ſhe owed no ſuch Debt, nor ſhe thank'd God ſo many Shillings in the World; I told her I was glad to hear it, but deſired her not to be uneaſy, for I had this Action taken out myſelf, to try the Secretary; that I had got a friendly Officer, to whoſe Houſe ſhe muſt go for a few Hours at a time appointed, and leave the reſt to me; that Mrs. *Roberts* her Landlady muſt be in the Secret, and deſired ſhe might be called up. As ſoon as ſhe came, I told her my Scheme, and the Part ſhe was to act in it, which ſhe promiſed to perform.

I then

Digitized by Google

I then told Mrs. *Goodman* as we were all to ſup together the next Night at the *Cock* and *Rummer*, ſhe muſt invite us to drink Tea with her the next Evening, and before that I would let her know what ſhe had to do.

The Ladies met the Secretary and I at the Tavern, the next Night at the Time appointed; we ſupp'd together, and we ſaw the Ladies ſafe home, to their reſpective Lodgings. Mrs. *Goodman* invited us to drink Tea at four o'Clock the next Afternoon, which was on a *Sunday*. I went by ten in the Morning, and ſettled every thing for our Reception. In the Afternoon Mr. *Ebberlin* met me at Dinner, at four o'Clock we took Coach, and went according to Appointment; the Coachman having knock'd, Mrs. *Roberts* came to the Door, I aſk'd for Mrs. *Goodman*, ſhe ſaid ſhe was not at home; I ſeem'd ſurpriz'd, and told her that we were invited to drink Tea with her, and wonder'd ſhe would go abroad as ſhe knew of our coming; at which Mrs. *Roberts* ſhook her Head, and in a melancholy Tone told me, ſhe could not help it, that ſhe was oblig'd to go. I told the Secretary what ſhe ſaid, at which he was amaz'd, and deſired me to aſk if ſhe had appointed no Time for her Return; ſhe ſaid not; I told this to the Secretary, who ſaid there muſt be ſomething extraordinary in it. I deſired Mrs. *Roberts* to let us know if ſhe knew the Meaning of this ungenerous Behaviour; ſhe came to me, and whiſper'd me, that Mrs. *Goodman* had been arreſted laſt Night, about half an Hour after we parted from her, and was carried away. At this I ſtarted, and lifted up my Hands and Eyes, which made the poor Secretary more earneſt to know what ſhe ſaid, inſomuch that he could hardly give himſelf time to ſpeak; I told him every thing. He bid me aſk where ſhe was carried to, if ſhe was in Priſon, and if we might not

Digitized by Google

not go to ſee her; all which Queſtions I aſk'd Mrs. *Roberts*, who told me that ſhe was at a Bailiff's Houſe, at the *Hand* and *Tip-ſtaff* in *Earl-ſtreet*, *Seven Dials*, and that ſhe believed, we might ſee her there. I told Mr. *Ebberlin*, who deſired the Coachman to drive thither, the Coachman knock'd at the Door, the Officer came; I aſk'd if he had one Mrs. *Goodman* in Cuſtody, and if we could ſee her; he ſaid he had, and might ſee her if we pleaſed to walk in; we were ſhewed to a neat Parlour, I called for a Bottle of Wine, he ordered the Man that brought the Wine, to bring down Mrs. *Goodman*. No ſooner ſhe appeared and ſaw us, but ſhe was ſilenced by a Flood of Tears, as if ſhe had them at Command; this greatly touch'd the Secretary's Heart.

I deſired the Officer to ſhew me his Writ, which he did; I told Mr. *Ebberlin* it was mark'd one hundred Pounds, but that the real Debt was but Fifty. I don't know ſays he, what to do, drawing out his Purſe, I have not above ſixteen Guineas, have you any Money; I told him that I had ſeven Guineas at his Service, and was ſorry I had no more. I gave them to him, he laid down the Money, with his Gold Watch, which he ſaid coſt him thirty five Guineas, deſiring me to tell the Officer, that he was Secretary to the Envoy of *Lorrain*, that on his Word and Honour he would come the next Day by twelve o'Clock, and redeem his Watch, and give him a handſome preſent if he would let us take the Priſoner with us, to which the Bailiff replied, that he was liable for the Debt, that the Watch might coſt what the Gentleman ſaid, but he did not look on it to be worth more than twenty Pounds at moſt, and that he muſt take care of himſelf. All this I told Mr. *Ebberlin*, who was much ſhock'd, and bid me tell him that he would give his Note for any thing he thought deficient.

This

Digitized by Google

This I told the Officer, who anſwer'd, that he believed him to be a very honeſt Gentleman, but could not take his Note, for as he belong'd to a Foreign Miniſter, it could not be recovered by Law; but that if I would join in the Note, he would take it. This I told the Secretary, who haſtily aſk'd me if I would not join with him; I told him, he need not doubt it; the Money and Watch was ſtill on the Table; I told him he could not be without ſome Money in his Pocket, ſo propos'd to take back three Guineas; and to leave twenty and the Watch, and give a Note to the Officer for as much as he ſhould require, for his Security; this he agreed to, and bid me do what I judged proper. The Officer agreed to take the Watch and the twenty Guineas, with our Note for twenty more. I took a Note from him by way of Memorandum, to return the Watch the next Day, when the Debt and Charges ſhould be fully paid, and ſo we took the fair Priſoner home to her Lodgings.

Having drank Tea, we went to the *Cock* and *Rummer* to Supper, Mrs. *Goodman* was ſent back in a Chair, and I went home with Mr. *Ebberlin*, who told me ſeriouſly he intended to marry her; I told him I thought he ſhould be better informed what Family ſhe was of, and take ſome time to conſider, that Things done in Haſte are often repented of at Leiſure; he told me it never would be his Caſe, for he loved her, and would never make any Inquiry, but endeavour to get her Conſent. I ſaid no more on this Head.

Before we parted he deſired to know what time the Bank would be opened, I told him at Nine; he deſired me to come to Breakfaſt with him, and go with him thither; that he was to receive three hundred Pounds, and in coming back we would call for his Watch, and take up our Note; all this

we

Digitized by Google

we did by Eleven o'Clock, and made the Bailiff a handſome Preſent for his Civility. He returned me my ſeven Guineas and parted, being obliged to wait on one of the Barons, but deſired me to come to him at Dinner, which I promiſed to do.

I went directly to Mrs. *Goodman*, and told her all that paſt, which ſurprized and pleaſed her; I took her in a Coach to the *Gray hound* Tavern, at the *Seven Dials*, near the Bailiff's, and ſent for him to come to us; he ſoon came and returned the fifty Pounds to Mrs. *Goodman*, and returned us both Thanks, and went off well ſatisfied, and we no leſs ſo. My Reader may be curious to know, whether I had any, or what Part of this Money, to which I ſhall anſwer, that what either of us had the other never wanted, and every Thing was in common between us, when in the reach of each other.

I met the Secretary at the Ordinary, after Dinner we went to Mrs. *Goodman*'s and drank Tea; Propoſals of Marriage were made and received, a ſolemn Vow pronounced to each other, and confirmed by a broad Piece of Gold, which the Secretary broke, of which he gave her one half in the Preſence of the Gentlewoman who was my Partner at the Dance, Mrs. *Roberts* and myſelf, and then an Exchange was made of the two Bits of Gold, with mutual Vows to marry each other.

I was very glad to ſee Mrs. *Goodman* in ſo fair a Proſpect of being well provided for; but when I ſaw the Gentleman ſo generous, ſo friendly, and ſo ſincere, I muſt confeſs the Trick I put upon him, gave me very great Concern, which I did not get the better of until I had been ſome Months in *Flanders*. Nevertheleſs, whilſt I ſtaid in *London*, which was about five Weeks, we were often together, and as friendly as ever; but Mrs. *Goodman* and I chang'd entirely our Courſe of Life, converſed and viſited as Brother and Siſter, and I never ſaw her,

nor

Digitized by Google

nor endeavoured to see her but in Company with (I may now say) her Husband.

All this Time I seldom mist a Day of seeing my Brother, but never told him one Word of what passed, though he knew Mrs. *Goodman*, and would often ask for her. I went sometimes to wait on Colonel *Pocock*, and often on Sir *Robert Montgomery*, my very good Friend. One Day Colonel *Pocock* sent me to know precisely when the Cloathing for his Regiment would be ready. I was told all would be ready and pack'd up, fit to be sent on Ship-board by the last Day of that Month, which was *February*; the Colonel desired me to make enquiry for a Ship bound for *Rotterdam* about that Time, I told him I would. Some Days after I went and acquainted him, that there was a very stout Ship now taking in her Lading at St. *Catharens*, near the Tower, that the Master told me, that Wind and Weather permitting, he would sail for *Rotterdam* the tenth of *March*, and would take the Cloathing on board, any Day before that time, and take particular Care to stow them well. I brought the Master and Ship's Name; all this was cutting out Work for myself, which I neither expected nor desired. About ten Days after, as I was walking in the Mall, I met Colonel *Pocock*, who called to me, and told me he was glad to see me, for there was nobody in Town he could trust to take take care of the Cloathing, and see them safe to *Flanders* but me; that I must make the best Agreement I could with the Master I spoke to, and fix a Day with him, and see the Cloathing put on board, and get ready to go when the Ship should sail. This was a Thunder-Clap to me, as I expected to stay in *London* until the beginning of *April*.

At

Digitized by Google

At Dinner I told the Secretary the orders I had had received, and that I had not above ten or twelve Days to ſtay; he ſeemed really concerned at what I told him. After Dinner we went to Mrs. *Goodman*'s, where he imparted the News of my ſudden Departure; they both expreſs'd in a kind and friendly Manner, the Loſs (as they termed it) of ſo kind a Friend, and begged I would give them as much of my Company as poſſible, while I ſtaid, this I promis'd, and when proper Opportunity ſerved we were always together.

The Day being fixed for the Cloathing to be put on board, I went to the Colonel, and told him, there would be an Expence for Porters, Carriage, *&c.* attending the putting the Bails on board, and deſired he would be pleaſed to order me ſome Money for that Purpoſe; he ſwore he had none, and that he was ſure I could diſburſe ſuch a Trifle as that for the Regiment, which would be paid me with Intereſt, and when I got to *Rotterdam* ſhould have Credit for what Money was neceſſary to tranſport the Cloathing to *Ghent*. This I did not care to diſpute, and with Reluctancy put all on board by the fourth of *March*, though we did not ſail until the fifteenth, ſo that I had a few Days longer to enjoy my Friends, of which I made the beſt uſe I could, in viſiting and taking my Leave of them, but ſpent moſt of the Time with the Secretary, and (I may now ſay) his Lady.

The Day before I went on board, there happened an Adventure ſcarce worth obſerving in thoſe Memoirs, but cannot well avoid it, to ſhew by what odd Turns of Providence Friends may be raiſed. The Manner this happened was as follows: There was a Place near *Drury-Lane*, call'd *Short's Gardens*, where one *Beveridge* kept a Dancing Room, where a great deal of Company reſorted three Days in the Week; the Ladies that went there were generally

Digitized by Google

rally maſk'd, and ſeveral of the Gentlemen. The Evening before I went laſt to take leave of my Acquaintance, I ſtept in to amuſe myſelf, and had not been long there, when a Friend of mine told me, there was ſeven or eight Bailiffs at *Bridge-Water*'s (meaning a publick Houſe near the Dancing-Room) and was certain they came with an intent to arreſt ſome of the Company; I told him if it was ſo, we ought to make a Party and give them a hearty Thraſhing; and then having made up a Party of fifteen, we went to the *Half-Moon* Tavern to ſettle on a Method to proceed, if they ſhould attempt to make any Caption. The Management of this Matter was left to me, whereupon I made three Detachments of the Company, when the Dancing ſhould be over, one Detachment was to go and poſt themſelves in the Road to the *Seven Dials*, to prevent the Bailiffs from making their Eſcape that Way, the other was to poſt themſelves between the Houſe and *Drury-Lane*, to prevent their getting off that Way, and I with my Party was to ſtay to watch if any Attempt ſhould be made, and was immediately to fall upon them. This being agreed on, we returned by Degrees to the Dancing-Room, where we had not remained many Minutes before there came in a large, ſtrapping Fellow booted, had a great Coat on, and a Whip under his Arm, and wore a Maſk. Mrs. *Beveridge*, the Woman of the Houſe, who ſat behind a Curtain at the Door, to receive the Entrance Money, ſent for me, and told me privately that Man was a Bailiff in Diſguiſe. I told her I would ſoon know that, for I would unmaſk him, and if ſo, he ſhould be well trounced. I acquainted my Friends with it, deſiring them when I cried *Ware Hawk*, to repair to the reſpective Poſts aſſigned them; this they promiſed and performed. Then I went and accoſted the pretended Gentleman, and after ſome Diſcourſe

Digitized by Google

Diſcourſe I deſired him to unmaſk and ſhew his Face, which he refuſed; then I gave the Alarm, crying out, *Ware Hawk*; the Gentlemen all went to their reſpective Poſts, then again I told him if he did not take off his Maſk, I would take it off for him, he dar'd me to it; I laid hold of him with one Hand and took the Maſk off with the other, and found he was a Marſhalſea Officer; he was bid to withdraw, which he refuſing, I gave him a Stroke with my Cane, which he returned with a ſmart Laſh of his Whip; he then received a Stroke or two more from the reſt, and finding himſelf overpower'd, took to his Heels, and made the beſt of his Way to his Companions, whom he had left at *Bridgwater*'s. We purſued him to the very Room where his Brethren were, who on hearing the Noiſe, got up and were coming out to his Aſſiſtance, being eight in Number. Here enſued a ſmart Engagement, there were broken Heads on both Sides; the Bailiffs behaved well, but were drove out of the Houſe at laſt, ſome to the Right, ſome to the Left, and then were attacked on both Hands, and beat back by our Detachments to the Houſe again; ſo that finding themſelves overpowered, and ſurrounded on all Sides, they capitulated, and ſurrendered themſelves Priſoners at Diſcretion. We ſearched them, and took a great Number of Sheriffs Warrants and Actions from them, fourteen of which were iſſued againſt Perſons then actually in the Company; theſe fourteen we burnt, and returned them the reſt, on Condition that they ſhould not come there again, and ſo we dimiſſed them.

When all was over, a pretty young Gentleman who had behaved well in the Fray, came to me, and very courteouſly invited me to go to ſup with him, at the *Red-Lyon* Tavern in *Pallmall*, he had ſomething Majeſtick in his Countenance, that

Digitized by Google

ſhewed he was a Perſon of Diſtinction; I accepted his Invitation, he alſo invited two other Gentlemen who had been in the Fray. After Supper we drank Burgundy until one o'Clock in the Morning; he would ſuffer none of us to pay; at parting he told me he would ſoon be in *Flanders*, and hoped to ſee me there; for in our Diſcourſe I had told him, I intended going to that Country, and was to go on board the next Day, which was the Cauſe of our parting ſo ſoon.

I could not by any Means find out who he was, but we all agteed that he muſt be ſome Nobleman's Son, and were not miſtaken, as will hereafter appear. We took leave of him, and I parted with the other two Gentlemen at *Covent-Garden*, and at ten o'Clock that Morning went on board; the Tide ſerving, we fell down the River, ſailed for *Holland*, and landed at *Helvoetſluis* in three Days.

Thus did I take my leave of *London* for better than nine Months; the Day before I went on board, I waited on Colonel *Pocock*, to know if he had any farther Commands, he gave me a Letter to one *Pennington*, at *Rotterdam*, and an order to give me any Money I ſhould require, not exceeding ten Pounds. As ſoon as I got to *Helvoet*, I went off for *Rotterdam*, and deliver'd my Letter, received the Money, and returned the next Day.

The Morning after I agreed for a Billinder, which is a kind of *Dutch* Veſſel, on board of which I put Straw, *&c.* for the Convenience of eight Recruits, which were given me in Charge to conduct to the Regiment; before I had time to put the Cloathing on board, there appeared a Fleet of Tranſports, under Convoy of two Men of War from *England*, I ſtood on the Pier or Key among Crowds of Towns People to ſee the Fleet ſail towards the Port. The Skipper or Maſter of the Veſſel with whom I had agreed happened to be there, and came and told me in

Digitized by Google

in plain Terms, if I did not give him ten Gilders more he would not go with me, which gave me ſome Concern, but I ſoon found out that this ſudden Change was owing to the Fleet's coming in. I expoſtulated with him to no purpoſe, he told me he could now make a better Bargain, and bid me look out for another Skipper, for he abſolutely would not go; this cauſed a Diſpute, and was likely to end in Blows, which was prevented by his aſking me impudently if I could ſwim meaning as I thought that he intended to fling me into the River. This bold Queſtion frighted me, as I could not ſwim, but knowing that moſt *Dutchmen* do, choſe rather to make him try the Experiment; I therefore without Ceremony tript up his Heels, by which he fell backwards into the Tide, which ran very ſtrong, but luckily for us both it was Tide of Flood, for had it been Ebb Tide his Life muſt have been in Danger.

I ran to the Burgo-Maſter, told him what had happened, and the Cauſe, and deſired he would do me Juſtice; he immediately went with me, and he found the Skipper at a publick Houſe, near the Place, drying himſelf by a good Fire. The Burgo-Maſter inquired into the whole Affair, all that I could ſay in my Defence was, that he fell in the Struggle, and that I did not intend it.

The Town was then filling with *Engliſh* Officers and Recruits, that came aſhore from the Tranſports, which I am ſure was of great Service to me; for had not this happened, I ſhould hardly been ſo gently dealt with; thoſe Magiſtrates being very partial, in favour of the Town's People. However, the Burgo-Maſter, commanded the Skipper to perform his Bargain with me; or otherwiſe he would ſend him to Priſon. He being thus obliged, I got my Stores and Recruits on board, with all Expedi-

Digitized by Google

tion, and ſail'd to *Sars-Van-Ghent*, where I put all on board the Treckſevit, or Boat drawn by Horſes; and ſo come to *Ghent*, where I thought I ſhould have ſome time to reſt, but was miſtaken.

The *French* having taken the Field early this Year, our Troops marched out of Garriſon, and encamped near *Doway* to obſerve them; ſo that I had orders to tranſport the Cloathing, *&c.* with all convenient Speed to *Tournay*, which was about thirteen Leagues farther. I got a Boat for that Purpoſe, that was bound for *Audenard*, which was about half Way to *Tournay*; on board of which I put all things, and arrived the next Day. Here I ſtaid two Days before I could get Convenience to convey the Cloathing, *&c.* to *Tournay*. I took up my Sergeant's Coat that I had left there at the Poſt-houſe the laſt Year as before mentioned. The third Day I got all Things on board a Boat bound for *Tournay* where (by the Bleſſing of God) I got ſafe the next Morning.

At the opening of the Gate, I went directly to my old Quarters, at the Sign of the *Bear*, where all the Family were glad to ſee me, my old Sweetheart in particular, who was ſtill with her Mother, though her Huſband was at the *French* Army. I got a Room to put my Stores in, until I ſhould receive farther Orders, which came in two Days, *viz.* that I muſt ſtay at *Tournay* untill the whole Regiment was cloathed, which would come by Detachments, each conſiſting of fifty Men, and by the time they would all arrive, I ſhould receive farther Orders. This Command was no ways diſagreeable to me, as I had time to reſt, with Company I lik'd.

Next

Digitized by Google

Next Day the firſt Detachment came, commanded by a Captain, whoſe Receipt I took for the Number of Cloaths, *&c.* which he received for his Detachment: This Method I followed, taking a Receipt from every Officer that came with Detachments, until all was finiſhed; by this Means I was able to give a clear Accompt, without being puzzled when it ſhould be called for, as I had never been uſed to the like before.

All the Regiment being cloathed, and the laſt Detachment gone to the Army, I waited for farther Orders. In two Days, the Colonel came, who ordered me to take a convenient Place to put the Remainder of the Stores in: I took a Cellar from the Man, who kept the Coffee-houſe at the Market-place, where all the great Officers reſorted, for which I was to pay a Crown a Week. I acquainted the Colonel with it, who approved of it: I am the more particular in this Matter, as I ſhall have ſomething to ſay hereafter, which will ſhew, that Men in low Station are often, undeſervedly, ill treated by their Superiors, which proves prejudicial to the Service, and cauſes many to deſert their Colours, who would otherwiſe ſerve faithfully.

As I was putting the Stores into this new Store-Room, there came one *Mitchell*, a Quarter-maſter, in General *Sabine*'s Regiment, deſiring I would give him Leave to put in two Bails of Cloathing which he had left, and that he would pay any thing in Reaſon towards the Rent. I told him, that it was not in my Power to grant it, as Colonel *Pocock* was in Town, who was then at the Coffee-houſe, to whom I might apply, and made no doubt of his granting what he deſired: He went, and ſoon returned with Orders for me to attend the Colonel, who commanded me to receive any Stores that *Mitchell* ſhould ſend, and to take as much Care

Digitized by Google

of them as of our own. I aſked him (aſide) if I ſhould make an Agreement with him for Payment of any Part of the Rent; he ſaid by no means.

I received *Mitchell*'s Things, and the next Day by my Colonel's Orders I ſet out for the Army, which lay near *Douay*, the Duke of *Marlborough*'s Quarters, who was then arrived, being at the Village of *Leward*, within a League of that Town, where we lay a long Time. The *French* incamped not far from us, to cover *Arras*, and prevent any Surprize: Here we had time to reſt, and take our Pleaſure, having nothing to do, but mount our ordinary Guards.

Four Days were ſpent by the Duke of *Marlborough*, and Prince *Eugene*, in reviewing the Imperial and Confederate Armies, which made a moſt glorious Appearance. Not long after this, the *French* found an Opportunity to ſurpriſe, in the Night, a ſmall Body of our Troops, who lay at, or near *Arlu*, which was a ſtrong Paſs, taken that Summer by the Duke of *Marlborough*; and, if I miſtake not, retaken by the *French*. Various were the Reports in our Army concerning that Action; but as I had no Share in it, I ſhall not pretend to give any Account of the Particulars, which I received by Hear-ſay, and ſhall only obſerve, that the whole Body (whatever their Number was) were defeated, their Camp plundered and burnt, and the *French* returned with little or no Loſs. General *Hamilton*'s Regiment of Foot, and one Squadron of General *Windham*'s Carbineers, were ſo ſhattered and weakened, that they could not keep the Field, and were marched to *Ghent* for the Remainder of the Campaign.

There was one *Farrell*, who was a particular Friend and Acquaintance of mine, a Sergeant in Brigadier *Newton*'s Regiment; his Wife kept a great Sutler's Tent, where a good Number of the

Digitized by Google

the head Officers dined every Day, for ſhe kept an exceeding good Ordinary: This *Farrell* came and aſked me to go walk, which I did, and dined with him, and others. After Dinner, a Diſpute aroſe between *Farrell* and ſomebody in Company about a Point of Practice in military Affairs. I was appointed the Arbitrator of this Difference, which, after due Conſideration, I determined againſt *Farrell*; for which Judgment *Farrell* forced me to fight him, in my own Defence I gave him a ſlight Wound in the Belly, and brought him home to his Wife. I mention this, to ſhew my Reader how inconſiderately Men often expoſe their Lives for Trifles, eſpecially when ſpurred on by immoderate Drinking, which ought to be avoided as much as poſſible by all Degrees of People, but eſpecially by the Gentlemen of the Army, who are generally more expoſed to thoſe Dangers than any other Set of Men.

The Army continued there ſome Days longer, but the Duke of *Marlborough* finding he could not draw Mareſchal *Villars* to a Battle, nor gain any other Advantage over him, reſolved to change his Quarters, beſides Forage grew ſcarce, and he was tired with Inaction; and accordingly gave Orders, that the Army ſhould march the next Day. The general Alarm was beat by Break of Day, and all was in Motion by five o'Clock, directing their March towards *Bethune*, *&c.* which was taken the laſt Year.

The next Day the Army incamped near *Viller-Brulin*, where the Duke took up his old Quarters the laſt Year. There we ſtaid a conſiderable Time, the *French* Army alſo marching to obſerve us, ſtill covering *Arras* within their ſtrong Lines, which the Duke of *Marlborough* went often to reconnoitre, and as often was ſaluted by the Enemy's Cannon.

Digitized by Google

There were ſixteen fine Villages along the Front of our Army between us and the *French* Lines, which his Grace ordered to be burnt and levelled, which was done, and in three Days became as even as any Part of the Plain. This finiſhed, the Duke ordered a vaſt Number of Faſcines to be made, and laid at the Front of our Camp: By all theſe Preparations, it appeared manifeſt to the whole Army, even to the ſuperior Officers, that we ſhould ſoon attack the Enemies Lines, which muſt have coſt much Blood. Mareſchal *Villars* was making all neceſſary Diſpoſitions to give us a warm Reception, by draining all his Forces from the Right of his Lines to ſtrengthen his Left, where he expected the Blow.

Every thing being thus diſpoſed on both Sides, the Duke of *Marlborough* ſent Orders to the Governor of *Douay*, to ſend him as many Troops as he could poſſibly ſpare, and to march with all Expedition to join the Army; that there were ſealed Orders for the General Officer that was to conduct them; which Orders were not to be opened until the ſaid General Officer came to a certain Village to be named to him, as well as the Time of his March.

All theſe Orders being given, and the neceſſary Diſpoſitions made, the Army were to hold themſelves in readineſs for a March in two Hours after: The firſt Orders were, that the Tatoo ſhould ſerve for general, and as ſoon as that ſhould beat, to load the Baggage, and ſtrike the Tents; ſo that all was in Motion by ten o'Clock; but inſtead of marching, to attack the Enemies Lines, as was expected, we marched to the Right, the better to deceive Mareſchal *Villars*, who, without doubt, had Intelligence of all theſe Motions by his Spies. This had the deſired Effect, for he marched with his Army to the left to obſerve our Army, and at the ſame Time,

Digitized by Google

Time, cover the Town of *Eddin*, a Frontier Garriſon, of which the Fortifications were but in bad Order, imagining that the Duke of *Marlborough* intended to ſurprize it.

Theſe Motions induced the *French* to leave their Lines on their Right but thinly guarded for ſome Miles, eſpecially the ſtrong Paſs of *Arleu*, where they left but a very weak Detachment, not dreading any thing from the Confederate Army, which was at ſuch a conſiderable Diſtance, and ſtill marching farther from them; but the Duke of *Marlborough* knowing the Time that the Detachment from *Douay* was to be at the Place where the Commander was to open his Orders; he ordered his Army all on a ſudden to turn to the Right about, and march to the left; by this Motion, our Rear became our Front, and our Front the Rear: The Commander of the *Doway* Detachment opened his Orders and found, that, inſtead of joyning the Army, he was to direct his March, with all Expedition, to the Paſs of *Arleu*, and attack it: This he performed, while the whole Army was in full March to ſupport him, if there had been occaſion.

The Paſs was attacked and taken, with little or no Reſiſtance, the few Troops that were left to defend it flying in Confuſion and Diſorder. About four in the Morning, our Army ſtill in full March, paſt by *Arras*, leaving it not above two Miles on our Right, and at ſix o'Clock the Army had the agreeable News of the Paſs being taken, of which they expreſſed their Joy by three loud Huzzas from Front to Rear. This raiſed the Spirits of the Troops to that Degree, that though they had marched very faſt all Night, they continued their March with Chearfulneſs until about two o'Clock, when we got over the Paſs, and about a League beyond it: This was reckoned to be the hardeſt and longeſt March that the Army had during the War,

and

Digitized by Google

and never computed to be leſs than ten Leagues: Be that as it will, it is certain that there was little leſs than a third Part of the Foot quite tired, lying along the Roads unable to ſtir. Here we drew up, and grounded our Arms, and reſted all Night, and the next Day, without pitching our Tents. In this Time our Straglers joined by degrees.

We received an Account in this Place, that Mareſchal *Villars* was in full March to get between us and *Bouchin*, a ſmall, but very ſtrong Town, but was prevented by the Vigilance of the Duke, who had almoſt inveſted it before the *French* could come up; for that Afternoon he cauſed a Bridge to be laid a-croſs the River *Scheld*, over which the Army paſſed in the Beginning of the Night, and marched towards *Bouchin*; but ſomething happening near the Bridge, which occaſioned a Stop to a good Part of the Army that had not yet paſſed; the Part that got over marched on, not knowing any thing of the Stop at the Bridge; ſo that when the reſt got over, they miſt the Line of March, and went another Way, which might have been of bad Conſequence, had the *French* General known any Thing of the Matter; but the Night being dark, nothing material happened, and the Army joined the next Day, which was ſpent in cannonading, and ſome trifling Skirmiſhes, the Enemy and we endeavouring to ſeize on ſome Poſts, that each Party thought convenient for themſelves. We did not pitch our Tents that Day, and towards Night, the Army ſeemed to divide, ſome marching one Way, and ſome another. I was ordered to keep in the Rear, and not let any Men loiter, but bring up all Straglers: On this Service, the Night being dark, I loſt the Line of March, not knowing for above two Hours where I was going with thirty Men of different Regiments I had picked up: At laſt, I ſaw ſome briſk Firing at a pretty good Diſtance,

Digitized by Google

tance, but could not hear the Shot, as the Wind blew from us: However, towards this Firing, I marched with my thirty Men; and as I drew nearer, I could hear, as well as ſee it. I came up to the Place, and found ſome of the *Dutch* Forces were beginning to throw up ſome Work between them and the *French*, who on their Part were endeavouring to prevent it. This Detachment was commanded by Brigadier *Collier*, a *Scotch* Officer in the States of *Holland*'s Service: To him I went, told him how and what happened to me; that I brought thirty Men I had picked up, that were come to put ourſelves under his Protection, and receive his Orders. He inſtantly aſſigned us a Poſt under the Command of a Major, where we did our Part, in defending the Work that was going on; but we had not been there above five or ſix Minutes, when the *French* deſpairing of Succeſs, retired.

We ſtaid there the Remainder of the Night; the next Morning I went with my thirty Men to wait on the Brigadier, and prayed that he would give a Certificate of our having paſſed the Night under his Command, which he readily granted, and very much to my Advantage; for when I returned to the Regiment I was narrowly examined where I had been all Night; I told the Colonel, and ſhewed him my Certificate; at which he told me, he was well pleaſed at the Teſtimony I gave of my good Behaviour.

The two next Days paſſed in marching backward and forward; ſo that it was hard to tell what we were about: At laſt, the Duke of *Marlborough* fixed his head Quarters at a handſome Village, called *Aveſn le Seck*: At the ſame time the Earl of *Orkney* took up his Quarters at a ſmall Village contiguous to it, but was obliged to quit it, becauſe of the *French* Cannon firing on it continually from Morning

Digitized by Google

Morning till Night; however, the Town was inveſted, and an Army of thirty thouſand Men ordered to form the Siege, under the Command of General *Fagle*, of which Number there were five Regiments of *Engliſh*, *viz.* the Royal *Iriſh*, the *Welch* Fuzeliers, commanded by General *Sabine*, General *Earl*, General *Winne*, and Colonel *Pocock*. Theſe five Regiments compoſed the *Engliſh* Brigade, of which Major *George Groves* was Brigade Major. I ſhall not enter on the Particulars of this Siege, only ſo far as I was concerned in them.

The firſt Duty that came to my Lot at this Siege was to be orderly Sergeant, from our Regiment, on General *Fagle*. Here Major *Groves* came and called for the *Engliſh* orderly Sergeants; being all come, he aſked if any of them could ſpeak *Dutch*; which, if any could, they would not anſwer, being unwilling to be ſent on Errands; tho' my *Dutch* was not extraordinary, I told him I could ſpeak a little: He gave me a Paper, and ordered me to go to General *Ivoy*'s Quarters, and receive that Money, which was a thouſand Nine-pences for a thouſand Men of the Brigade, that had been at work on the Lines of Circumvallation. I went, and found that this General was a *Frenchman*: I ſpoke to him in that Language, telling him that I came from the *Engliſh* Brigade Major to receive that Money, preſenting him the Paper: He aſked me, if I was a *Frenchman?* I told him I was an *Iriſhman*: He ſaid I ſpoke good *French*, and wiſhed he had known me two or three Days ſooner, that he would have done ſomething for my Advantage. I thanked him, and told him, I ſhould be proud to have the Honour of his Protection; and that I was ready to ſerve him in any thing that I was capable of; he ordered me to write down my Name, the Regiment and Company I belonged to; and ſaid,

Digitized by Google

ſaid, if any thing offered, he would ſend for me; he gave me Pen, Ink, and Paper, and I wrote a Memorandum of my Name, *&c.* as deſired. I received the Money, and carried it to Major *Groves.* Two Days after, Colonel *Pocock* ſent for me, who ſwearing a great Oath, aſked, what the Devil I had done; This a little ſtartled me. I anſwered, that I hoped no Harm: He ſaid, he had received Orders from General *Fagle* to ſend me to him, and I muſt immediately go to his Quarters, that he was afraid there was ſomething extraordinary. I aſſured him not to my Knowledge. I went, and met General *Ivoy* there, who, on ſeeing me, ſaid, I have not forgot you; then told me, he would make me Trench-Sergeant until ſomething better offered, for which I was to have a Crown a Day. In this Duty I was to attend in the Trenches twice a Day, at ſix in the Morning, and ſix in the Evening; was to have under my Command a Detachment of thirty unarmed Men to be conducted through the Trenches where any Works were flung up, in order to gather the Pick-axes, Shovels, Wheel-Barrows, *&c.* that ſhould be left or ſcattered by the Workmen, and carry them to ſuch convenient Place as ſhould be appointed by the Ingineer.

I was not above four Days at this Work, when General *Ivoy* ſent me Word to attend him at his Quarters; I was afraid there might be ſomething amiſs, but was well pleaſed to find myſelf miſtaken, when the General told me, he had provided better for me; as I ſpoke the Languages, he thought me more capable to parade the Workmen, and detach them properly for the reſpective Works, than the Perſon he had employed for that Purpoſe, who could ſpeak nothing but *Dutch*; and for this Service I ſhould receive a Piſtole a Day: This was an Advancement that deſerved a low Bow, which I did not forget, and went off well ſatisfied. I entered

Digitized by Google

tered on my new Imployment that very Afternoon at four o'Clock, made the Detachments, conducted them to the Entrance of the Trenches, and delivered them to the proper Perſons who were to appoint them their reſpective Works: The Lieutenant General, who commanded in the Trenches, was ſitting hard by: I went up to him, and told him I had brought the Workmen down, and came to know if he had any Commands to honour me with; He aſked me ſeveral Queſtions, and ſeemed well pleaſed at my ſpeaking *French*, which I found he was very fond of diſcourſing in, though he could not ſpeak it well. While I ſtaid, I ſaw a Mule ſtop, with a Couple of Hampers; I found that this was the General's Supper, it being then about nine o'Clock: Immediately four Drums were placed for a Table, the Cloth was laid, and a plentiful cold Supper of Fleſh and Fowl was ſerved up. There was a large Plate of roaſt Mutton, Part of a Fowl, Bread, and a Bottle of Wine ſent me; though the Balls were flying, my Stomach was not ſpoiled; for we were ſecurely covered by the Intrenchment. After the General had ſupped, being in a good Humour, he flung a Shoulder of Mutton over the Trench, and aſked, who would go fetch it? Immediately five or ſix Soldiers went over, ſcrambled for it, and brought it back without receiving any Hurt. The General ordered them Bread, and two Bottles of Wine, and deſired them to ſit down and eat it for their Pains, which they did, I believe with a good Appetite. I ſtaid there until four o'Clock, which was my Hour to be at the Parade every Morning during the Siege, and every Evening at the ſame Hour. About eight o'Clock I led the Workmen to the Trenches, as I did the Evening before, and waited on the General, who ſent me on Meſſages, which I executed to his Satisfaction.

At

Digitized by Google

At ten o'Clock the Trenches were relieved; the General then (at my Requeſt) recommended me to the General who relieved him, as a Perſon that might be uſeful to him: He received me, and ordered me to ſtay near him, which I did, and fared well. At four o'Clock, I went to the Parade, telling the General, that I was obliged to attend at that Hour to make the Detachments of Workmen, and that I muſt go with them: When I came to the Parade, I found there moſt of the Adjutants of the ſieging Army, who came to treat and ſettle with me about the Fagots (Men deficient of the Number of Workmen, ordered from each Regiment) which are more or leſs, as it happens; out of three the Adjutant was to have two, and myſelf one. This is called Perquiſites, which if honeſt, or not, I will not pretend to ſay; but I am ſure it is frequently practiſed at Sieges, and on other Occaſions. The Men are to work twelve Hours; if at the Batteries, each Man has Eighteen Pence, if at the Trenches, but Nine-pence; ſo that every Fagot brought Eighteen-pence, or Nine-pence, which came to a pretty Sum to me, as I had the third Part of it through the ſieging Army. This Point being ſettled, and Detachments made, I lead them down to the Trenches, and waited on the General: By this Attendance, I lived well, without Expence.

An Engineer came that Night to the General, to let him know, he was ſhort of Hands, to finiſh a Piece of Work, abſolutely neceſſary to be done before Day, deſiring that he would pleaſe to order him one hundred Men for that Purpoſe: I was ſent to the Colonels of the four Regiments, who mounted Trenches that Day, to let them know, it was the General's Commands to ſend five and twenty Men each, without Arms, to finiſh a Piece of Work, which they ſhould be led to by the Engineer, and for which they ſhould be paid equally with the other

Digitized by Google

other Workmen. I then returned to the General, and acquainted him, that I obeyed his Orders. By ſeven in the Morning, a Sergeant came from each of theſe Regiments to the General to get Certificates to be paid for the Work; theſe four Sergeants went with the Men, and were intitled to be paid, each equal to two Men, as is uſual. The General ordered me to write the Certificates for him to ſign. Immediately it came into my Head to make ſome Advantage by this; the Method I took (though unfair) was thus; I drew the Certificates, left a Blank for the Number, judging, if found out, it might paſs for a Miſtake, which I intended to make my Plea: I carried one on my Pocket-book, with a Pen full of Ink, and preſented it, with a low Bow, to the General, who ſigned it without taking any Notice of the Fraud, and ſo ſigned all the Four: The Sergeants were waiting to get the Certificates, but I told them, I was ordered to go and receive the Money to pay them; they were all glad of this, and I not ſorry. I went with them to the Treaſurer's Quarters, but in the Way went to a Sutler's Tent, called for a Feltmet, (or Camp Meaſure of Beer) drank to one of the Sergeants, bid them drink, for I had two or three Words to write, and would return in two Minutes: I went and filled my Blanks, and inſtead of five and twenty Men and a Sergeant, put forty Men and a Sergeant. *In for a Penny, in for a Pound*; ſo that by this I got ſixty Nine-pences. I went and received the Money, paid the Sergeants, who went away very well ſatisfied, thanking me for the Trouble I had taken. I returned to the General, and ſtaid until four.

That Day our Regiment mounted the Trenches; at their coming in, Sir *Robert Montgomery* aſked me, if I had ſeen the Colonel? I told him he juſt paſſed by with Brigadier *Carr*: He deſired me to acquaint him the Regiment was come. I went, found

Digitized by Google

found him and the Brigadier ſtanding on a riſing Ground viewing the Town. I had not well delivered my Meſſage, when a Drake Shot, otherwiſe a Four Pounder, being fired from the Town, tore about a Hand's Breadth of the Brigadier's Boot, and blew off four or five Buttons of Colonel *Pocock*'s Spatterdaſh, broke four Legs of four Grenadiers of his Regiment, but did no further Miſchief; the Brigadier fell, and tho' his Skin was not tore, nor his Blood ſpilt, yet he was near loſing his Leg, and was ever after lame; he was Brother to the Duke of *Roxborough*.

That very Night being ſent by the General to order one of the Engineers to come to him, as I was paſſing by our Regiment, I was fortunately ſtopped for about half a Minute by Sir *Robert*, who wanted to ſpeak to me, which in all Likelihood ſaved my Life; for when I came within twenty Paces of the Engineer, a Mine was ſprung; whereupon he, with all that were about him, were blown up, and I flung down by the Blaſt, and almoſt covered with Earth, which fell like a heavy Shower, but thank God I received no Hurt; I then went to my Duty on the Parade: Thus I continued during the Siege, having many ſuch Jobs, being daily recommended from one General to another; ſo that finding the Sweets, I lay ſeventeen Nights in the Trenches, where I needed not have lain one: By theſe Perquiſites (ſo called) during the Siege, which laſted but three Weeks, after the Trenches were opened, including my Piſtole a Day, I got one hundred Pound Sterling, without the leaſt Suſpicion, and a much better Character than really I deſerved.

The *French* being unable to hold out much longer, the Governor ordered the white Flag to be planted on the Breach, Conditions were ſoon agreed on, and two or three Days after, the Garri-

Digitized by Google

ſon marched out with the Marks of Honour. Thus ended the Siege of *Bouchin*, remarkable for being the laſt Town the Duke of *Marlborough* beſieged or took: On the Chamade or Parly being beat, I ran with all Haſte to give my Benefactor General *Ivoy* an Account, who on ſeeing me wiſhed me Joy, for he had been apprized of it before I came, having ſeen from his Quarters the white Flag.

In my Diſcourſe with him, I returned my ſincere and hearty Thanks for all his Favours to me, aſſuring him, I ſhould always be ready to ſerve him, when in my Power, and be glad of the Honour of his Protection. He promiſed me, when any thing offered, he would not forget me, telling me I muſt go on as I did, until the Trenches were levelled, which took up three or four Days more, and then I loſt the Title of Parade Major; and, what was worſe, my Piſtole a Day, and then returned to the Regiment, to content myſelf with the Pay and Title of a Sergeant.

Now with my Readers Leave, I muſt go back to the Camp of *Viller-brullin*, to add ſomething material to my Story, which I omitted mentioning when I treated of my March to *Arleu*, and is as follows; Colonel *Pocock* ordered a Meeting of the Field Officers, and Captains of his Regiment to ſettle ſome martial Affairs; and, among other Things, to conſider how to apply one hundred and fifty-ſix Crowns remaining in the Paymaſter's Hands of the Queen's Bounty Money allotted for recruiting the Army, at the Rate of Four Pounds and a Crown a Man, as the Regiment was then full and well recruited.

At this Meeting, it was agreed, that one hundred and four Crowns of the ſaid Sum ſhould be given by way of Gratification to Enſign *Churchill* for his Care and Diligence in well recruiting the Regiment, and the remaining fifty and two Crowns

Digitized by Google

Crowns ſhould be given to me, for the Care and Trouble I took in tranſporting the Cloathing from *London* to *Tournay*, which was thirteen Leagues farther than ever they were brought, though my Bill of Charges was much leſs than any Bill brought in before on the like Occaſion.

After the Trenches were levelled before *Bouchin*, the Army marched to, and encamped at, or near a good Village, called *Les Quatre Cloche*, or, *The Four Spears:* This Name comes from a great and rich Cloyſter, or Abby, where there is a very fine Church that has four Spears, and the largeſt Set of Organs I ever ſaw in my Travels: It is within two or three Leagues of *Tournay*. There the Army remained until they ſeparated for Winter Quarters. At this Ground, I was told by Sir *Robert Montgomery*, that Enſign *Churchill* received the hundred and four Crowns, and bid me apply to the Paymaſter for my two and fifty. I went to him, and aſked him, but he had not yet forgot his Loſs of ſigning the Paſſes at *Ghent* the laſt Year, and bid me go and bring an Order from the Colonel: I went to him, and he ordered me to go to the Major, who told me he would ſpeak to the Colonel about it as ſoon as he ſaw him. Thus they ſent me from one to the other three or four different Times; at laſt, the Regiment being under Arms, I ſaw them walking together at the Front; I went to them, and ſpoke for the Money; the Major told me, I ſhould ſoon be paid, but he was ſure I could not yet want Money; that I was indulged by the Regiment to go to the Siege, where he was certain I got a good deal, and deſired me not be ſo preſſing, that Money was then ſcarce.

The Colonel bid me go and bring the Sergeant Major to him; being come, he gave him Orders about the Regiment, and me; I was to be put on no Duty, and ordered me to ſtay in the Camp;

Digitized by Google

but if I went any where to leave Word with the Sergeant Major; for that as ſoon as he ſhould know where the Regiment was to winter, I muſt be ready to go with the Stores. I was now again turned Idler, having nothing to do for a whole Week, when an Order came for our Regiment to winter in *Courtray*. Next Day I was ordered to go to *Tournay*, whither the Colonel and Major were gone before, where I was to wait at the Coffee-houſe at the Market-place to receive further Orders: Being come there, I was ordered to provide neceſſary Carriages to move the Stores to *Courtray*; that there ſhould be a Sergeant and ſixteen Men to eſcort them; and as ſoon as every thing was ready, to make the beſt haſte I could, and when I got thither, to take a convenient Place for putting the Stores in for the Winter; then the Colonel made me drink three Bumpers of Champaign, and told me, that he was going off for *England* the next Day, and was pleaſed, in the Preſence of a good Number of Field Officers, then in Company, to ſay a good deal in my Praiſe, aſſuring me, that he was well ſatisfied with my Behaviour: He then took Leave of his Company, and went to his Quarters, ordering me to ſtay, and attend the Major, who would give me farther Inſtructions: While I was waiting there, I deſired the Man of the Coffee-houſe to ſend for a Man who hired Carriages; being come, I took him to the Store-room, ſhewed him what was to be carried; agreed with him, and every thing was to be loaded, and ready to march the next Day by the Opening the Gates, and then I returned to the Coffee-houſe to wait the Major's Commands.

As I was walking backward and forward before the Houſe, he ſaw me, and ſent for me, and aſked me what I had done; I told him, he ſeemed well pleaſed, and ſaid the Eſcort ſhould be with me,

Digitized by Google

me, as ſoon as the Gates were opened: I told him I would be ready: He gave me a large Bumper of Champaign, bidding me drink the Company's Health, which I did, but paid dear for it. I ſaw that he was pretty far overcome by the Champaign, for he clipped the Queen's Engliſh. At laſt he told me, that he muſt own I was a clever Fellow, yet he muſt tell me, that I uſed the Regiment very ill; that I had been indulged more than any Man in my Station in the Army, which Indulgence I made a very bad uſe of, by groſly and largely impoſing on the Regiment in my Accompts, and particularly in charging a Crown a Week for the Store-room, though I had admitted General *Sabine*'s Quarter-maſter to put in his Stores, for which he had paid Part of the Rent, though I had charged the Whole to the Regiment. This groundleſs Accuſation gave me ſome Concern, at which Major *Campbell* of the *Scotch* Greys having taken Notice, gave me another Bumper of Wine to comfort me. I offered to ſay ſomething in my own Defence, but was not admitted to ſay any thing more, but with abuſive Words was commanded down Stairs. I went to the Man of the Coffee-houſe, told him all that paſſed above, deſiring he would do me juſtice, as I had taken the Store-room from him; and, as he knew the whole Affair, he aſſured me he would.

The Time for ſhutting the Gates drawing near, and the Company being obliged to go to the Camp, and their Horſes being come: They all came down, and the Major had his Foot in the Stirrup, I brought the Man of the Houſe by the Hand to him, and begged he would give him Leave to juſtify my Conduct: The Major ſeemed to take no Notice, but mounted, having his Cane hanging on one of his Piſtols, which he took off, and hung it to his Wriſt, and then called me, tel-

Digitized by Google

ling me he wanted to ſpeak with me; I approached him, ſtill leading the Man of the Houſe by the Hand; but, inſtead of ſaying, or hearing any thing, he fell to caning me to that Degree, that I may juſtly ſay, I never got ſuch a Drubbing before nor ſince. I can aſſure my Reader, no Hardſhip that I went through in all my Life-time was ſo hard to digeſt as this, being then in full Vigour and Strength, and thus arbitrarily and unjuſtly treated, which I was obliged to bear, my Hands being tied; but about three Years after, a Circumſtance occured, by which I had an Opportunity to let him know, that I deſerved better Treatment.

I went directly to the Colonel to complain, my Heart was ſo full I could hardly utter one Word to be underſtood; but at laſt I told him what had paſſed, and begged I might have Juſtice done me; that if I was culpable, I ſhould be puniſhed, if not, I hoped to be diſcharged; for I never could prevail on myſelf to ſerve under Major *Green* (that was his Name) any longer than till the Regiment was ſettled, and my Charge delivered up: He told me, I knew that he was going off for *England* in the Morning; that he had not then Time to inquire into the Matter, but I might depend on having Juſtice done me; ſo I took my Leave, wiſhing him ſafe to *England*. By the Opening the Gates the next Morning, the Sergeant, with the Eſcort, came to the Market-place, where I had every thing ready, and marched for *Courtray*: The firſt Thing I did there, was to take a Store-room, in which I put all the Things I brought from *Tournay*; and then had nothing to do for ten Days, and was all that Time my own Maſter, our Regiment being not yet come, which with ſome other Troops that were to winter there, and in the Neighbourhood, were marching backwards and forwards, eſcorting warlike Stores coming from *Holland* to *Store Ayre*

Digitized by Google

Ayre, and other Frontier Towns, taken the laſt Year from the *French*

One Day Sir *Robert Montgomery* being on that Service, came with ſome other Officers to the Town to dine; I waited on him, and acquainted him, that the Stores were come ſafe, and lodged in a Place taken for that Purpoſe: I then told him the undeſerved Treatment I received from Major *Green:* He told me, he was very ſorry for it; that he had all the Particulars of that Affair from Major *Campbell*, who was then in the Houſe, and from one of the Company, who ſaid it was barbarous Uſage. Sir *Robert* deſired me to have Patience until the Regiment came in, and then he would do any thing in his Power to ſerve me; and Major *Campbell* ſwore the Duke of *Marlborough* ſhould be acquainted with it, who, without doubt, would cauſe ſuch Proceedings to be inquired into. Major *Campbell* profeſſed a great Regard for me, I believe on account of the Character given him of me by Sir *Robert*. This Major came afterwards, very deſervedly, to the Rank of a General Officer, and was juſtly and greatly lamented, when killed in his King and Country's Service, at the Battle of *Fountenoy*, in *April* 1745.

In a few Days, the Regiment came in, and in two Days after were to be reviewed by Sir *Robert*, to whom (as being my very good Friend) I applied, and, as he now commanded the Regiment, I begged he would pleaſe to give me my Diſcharge; I ſaid, I made this Requeſt with great Reluctance, as he had always been a very good Friend to me, ſince I had the Honour to ſerve under him; but as I could not, on any Conſideration whatſoever, prevail on myſelf to ſerve longer under Major *Green*, I begged he would not put me on taking Meaſures that might prove deſtructive to me, if he did not

Digitized by Google

grant my Requeſt. He told me, he would conſider on it. I requeſted of him, that as the Regiment was to be the next Day under Arms to be reviewed by him, he would excuſe my being preſent. He told me, he would, and ordered me to look out for convenient Stabling for his Horſes.

Next Day by the Opening of the Gates, the Regiment marched out to a convenient Place, and were reviewed by Sir *Robert*, and the Major walking together. When they had gone round the Regiment, Orders were given to form into Companies. This being done, they viewed them Company by Company, beginning with the Colonel's on the Right, and ending with the Colonel's on the Left; to which Company I belonged: Being come to this Company, Major *Green* aſked, in a ſeeming angry Tone, where Sir *Robert*'s other Sergeant was? Sir *Robert* made Anſwer, that he was about his Buſineſs: To which the Major replied warmly, Blood! always on Buſineſs, and never at his Duty. To which Sir *Robert*, with no leſs Warmth, ſaid, that he never knew him abſent from Duty ſince he ſerved in his Company; aſking ſmartly, who commands here, you or me; the Major replied, Sir, you command, but as Major to the Regiment, it is my Buſineſs to ſee that every Man does his Duty. All this, and a great deal more paſt between them; of which I was informed by the Sergeant Major as ſoon as the Regiment came back: Moſt of the Officers and Soldiers imagined that this would end in a Duel, which gave me ſome Concern. I wiſhed myſelf in Sir *Robert*'s Station, had it been but for a Couple of Hours. I waited on him, and acquainted him that I had ſeen convenient Stables for ſix Horſes, which he might ſee whenever he pleaſed. He went directly and agreed for them, but did not mention a Syllable of what paſſed between

Digitized by Google

tween the Major and him. I renewed my Requeſt of being diſcharged: He told me, he was ſorry to part with me, but as he was ſenſible of the ill Uſage I had unjuſtly received, he would diſcharge me, bidding me get one drawn to my liking, and that he would ſign it. I had got one ready at all Events; I preſented it to him, with a Pen full of Ink, which he immediately ſigned. Thus I parted with my very good Friend Sir *Robert*, but never loſt his Favour. And now I became once more my own Maſter. If this Diſcharge had not been granted, I had reſolved, at the Hazard of my Life, to go to *Ypres*, a *French* Garriſon about four or five Leagues from that Place; a Step, that nothing but the worſt of Treatment could induce me to do; as ill uſage has made Numbers of others forſake their Country's Service, and fly to the Enemy in hopes of better Treatment.

Being now diſcharged, and at my own Liberty, all my Thoughts ran on going for *England*; the firſt Step I took was to go to the Major, and give him my Accompts of the Stores, *&c.* then in my Poſſeſſion, and deſired he would order ſomebody to receive them, with the Key of the Store-room: He told me, I muſt take Care of them, or do my Duty, as the other Sergeants of the Regiment did, and I might take my Choice: I told him, I would do neither, for I was going for *England*, and I would never ſerve one Hour under his Command. He ſwore he would ſend me directly to Priſon for my Impudence: I told him, I thanked God it was out of his Power, for that I was diſcharged, and deſired again he would receive, or appoint ſomebody to receive the Stores and Key, or elſe I would deliver them to Sir *Robert Montgomery*, who commanded the Regiment. He aſked me, who diſcharged me, I told him Sir *Robert:* He ſaid, it was not in his Power: I replied, that I looked

on

Digitized by Google

on my Diſcharge to be good, and would make uſe of it as ſuch; let him diſpute the Power of granting it: however he ſent for the Quarter-maſter, and ordered him to receive what I had in my Care, of which he had an Inventory. I went and delivered the Stores, and took the Quarter-maſter's Receipt, and returned to the Major, and aſked him for the two and fifty Crowns the Regiment had appointed me, for I was going for *England*. He told me, I muſt apply to the Colonel, who, without doubt, would order me Payment. I ſaid no more, but told him, I knew how to come at it. I waited on Sir *Robert*, told him all that paſſed: He laughed at the Major's ſaying, it was not in his Power to grant a Diſcharge. I told him my Intention of ſtaying in *Courtray* ten or twelve Days longer; that I ſhould be very willing to do him any Service in my Power while I ſtaid; and if he had any Commands to honour me with to *London*, he might be ſure of my faithfully diſcharging them to the beſt of my Power. He thanked me, and deſired me to ſave Expence, to eat with his Gentleman *Lewis* every Day, as I had done the laſt Year in *Ghent*.

For this friendly Offer, I was very thankful, though I did not make Uſe of it; for as I was now a Gentleman at large, and full of Money, I looked out for better Company; in order to this, I went daily to dine at the beſt Ordinary in Town, where the beſt Company reſorted, eſpecially Travellers, and ſome of the Officers of the Garriſon, nay of our own Regiment, who were now very friendly, as I was no longer a Sergeant, and they could keep me Company without being pointed at. Some of the Captains, who wiſhed me well, did me the Honour to take a Bottle with me in the Evening; ſo that I now ſpent my Time with ſome Comfort.

One

Digitized by Google

One Day being at Dinner at this Ordinary, there appeared a comely handſome Lady, about thirty Years of Age. I had the Pleaſure to ſit near her, which gave me an Opportunity to diſcourſe with her; I found that ſhe was a *Saxon* Woman, born at *Dreſden*; that ſhe was returning to her Country, her Huſband (as ſhe told me) being killed in a ſmall Action, that Summer, near *Bouchin*; that he was a Captain in the *Saxon* Service. I condoled with her on her Misfortune, telling her, I ſhould be proud to do her any Office ſhe might want to have done in Town as a Traveller. She thanked me, telling me ſhe wanted nothing but to have a Place taken for her in the *Ghent* Stage, for which ſhe had ſpoke to the Landlord. Dinner being over, I ordered a large Pot of Coffee to be made, and carried in the Drawing-room, near the Dining-room; when the Servant came to tell me the Coffee was ready, I aſked the Company in general if they were diſpoſed to drink any; but as they were to pay their Club, they begged to be excuſed. I was not concerned at this, being certain that the Lady would not refuſe; I therefore offered her my Hand, to conduct her to the Drawing-room, which ſhe readily granted, giving me hers: We then took Coffee in the View of the Company, the Door being left quite open. While at this Repaſt, I gave her ſome Glances, and ſaid ſome ſoft Things, inſinuating that her Charms were not loſt on me, of which ſhe took little, or no other Notice, only now and then a Bow, or Nod of her Head. The Company being withdrawn from the Dining-room, ſhe civilly begged Pardon, telling me, that ſhe would go to her Apartment, ſo took my Leave for that Time.

At Supper we met again, and had ſome Converſation to as little Purpoſe as before: We drank Tea together, and about nine o'Clock I took my Leave very

Digitized by Google

very little pleaſed with this Rencounter, but did not quite give it up.

I went directly, and hired a handſome Horſe and Furniture, that I might look like ſomebody, and went off in the Morning for *Ghent*; ſtopped at the dining Place, told the Landlady that the Stage was full, deſired ſhe would have a good Dinner ready, ſaid I would dine with the Company; this was promiſed and performed: the Stage came, I was ready at the Stage Coach Door, to hand the *Saxon* Lady out, ſhe was ſurprized to ſee me; I handed her to the Dining-room; we had ſome Diſcourſe before Dinner, I told her, that ſoon after I took my Leave of her laſt Night, I was ordered on ſome Buſineſs of the Regiment's to *Ghent*; that I received theſe Orders with Pleaſure, as I flattered myſelf it would give me an Opportunity of having the Honour to dine with her there. She returned my Compliment in a polite Manner, aſſuring me ſhe was glad to ſee me. I aſked her, if ſhe had Lodgings provided for her in *Ghent?* ſhe ſaid, none in particular; for as ſhe was to ſtay but one Night, ſhe would lie at the Inn the Stage ſet out from: I told her, that would be very inconvenient and noiſy; that ſhe could have neither Satisfaction nor Reſt; but as I was going to *Ghent* immediately after Dinner, if ſhe would give me leave, I would take a Lodging more ſuitable to her Rank, near the Stage; ſhe thanked me very kindly, telling me ſhe would not give me that Trouble; that ſhe would rather make ſhift at the Stage Inn: However, with a good deal of Intreaties, ſhe condeſcended I ſhould take a Lodging for her. Dinner being over, ſhe and I took Coffee, and went off for *Ghent*.

I went directly on my Arrival to the *Looking-glaſs*, then the principal Inn of *Ghent*, where the beſt Company reſorted, except by chance, as I did that time. I deſired to ſee a good Apartment, which

Digitized by Google

which was ſhewed me: I ordered Supper, told them it muſt be ready by nine o'Clock, and deſired my Landlord to let me know, where I might hire a Coach or Chariot to meet my Wife, and bring her to the Lodgings, for ſhe was coming in the Stage from *Courtray*. He told me, he kept Coaches and Chariots himſelf. I bid him order a Chariot and Pair, which was ſoon brought to the Door; I went in, ordered the Coachman to drive where the *Courtray* Stage came in. I was there a full half hour before the Stage arrived. As ſoon as it appeared, I went to the Door, handed the Lady out; told her I had taken a very good Lodging; hoped ſhe would like it. She thanked me very kindly, and ſaid, ſhe hoped it was not far off; that ſhe was much fatigued. I told her it was not, that ſhe would ſoon be there, giving her my Hand, and conducting her to the Chariot. This ſurpriſed her indeed, telling me how much ſhe was obliged to me: We drove to the Lodging, where the Landlady attended at the Door, and ſhewed her to the Apartment. In a few Minutes I followed her up; the Landlady left us together: I told her, I hoped ſhe liked her Lodging; ſhe ſaid ſhe could not diſlike them; that they were fit for any body, if not too dear. I aſſured her that ſhe would not find them ſo. She deſired I would do her the Favour to ſtay and ſup with her. I told her ſhe prevented me, for I intended to aſk her Leave to do myſelf that Honour, and to ſave her the Trouble; that I had ordered Supper, telling her what I had beſpoke, but that if ſhe liked any thing elſe, if ſhe would pleaſe to let me know, I would order it; ſhe ſaid, No. She then ſent a Waiter to take a Place for her in the *Bruſſels* Stage for the next Day; and on that Occaſion, ſhe lamented the Want of a Servant in her Travels, of which ſhe had given ſome Hints before at the Dining-place, telling me, the Maid

ſhe

Digitized by Google

ſhe had brought from *Dreſden*, was a pretty Girl, and that a young Officer fell in love with her, and married her, ſince her Huſband was killed; but as ſhe was going home, ſhe would take no Servant until ſhe got to *Dreſden*, where ſhe might get one ſhe knew. We talked on other Matters until Supper was ſerved; we ſat to it with good Appetites, and ſpent the Remainder of the Evening until eleven.

I perceived that the Lady was growing drowſy; I told her, that I believed ſhe was tired, and wanted to go to Reſt: She owned ſhe was, and did not care how ſoon ſhe retired, as ſhe was to be at the Stage by eight, and hoped I would come and breakfaſt with her. I told her it was my Intention, and that if I had taken any Step ſhe ſhould diſapprove, ſhe might blame her own Charms; for that the firſt Minute I ſaw her, ſhe made an intire Conqueſt of my Heart; but wanting a proper Opportunity, I took this Method to make this ſincere Declaration, which I hoped ſhe would not reject, unleſs ſhe intended to make me unhappy the reſt of my Days. To this ſhe anſwered with a Smile, and told me, that this was a gallant Declaration; but if true, it required Time to conſider, to which I acquieſced, and ſaid, I hoped ſhe would put a favourable Conſtruction on my having taken this Lodging for myſelf and Wife; that nevertheleſs I ſhould be upon Honour, and intirely conform to her Will. At this ſhe ſtormed, and was really in a Rage, which I could hardly appeaſe with all the Aſſurance I could give her, that my Love was too great to attempt any thing that might diſoblige her; that it would be of little Service (even to her Reputation) to make a Noiſe after being ſo long together; that ſhe would only expoſe herſelf; that ſhe could not but know, that Men uſually make ſuch Attempts, and that Ladies might chuſe to grant or reject ſuch Offers; that this was now her Caſe,

Digitized by Google

Caſe, and begged ſhe would make herſelf eaſy, aſſuring her on my Word and Reputation I would not attempt any Violence on any Woman; that I would not give a ſingle Shilling to enjoy the fineſt Lady on Earth, but by her own Conſent; and however great my Paſſion was for her, if ſhe would, without making more Words, go to Bed, ſhe ſhould find I was a Man of Honour; ſhe told me ſhe really believed me to be ſuch, and begged that I might continue her in that good Opinion, by getting another Apartment for myſelf. I ſaid, that if it could be of any Satisfaction to her to prove myſelf a Liar, I would do it; but that I was very well aſſured, it would be little to her Credit; but that I would let her know what would be better, and more to both our Reputations. She aſked me, what that might be; I told her, there was a good eaſy Chair, pointing at it, and a good Fire, that I had paſſed many Nights in the Trenches, where I had not ſo good Convenience to take my Reſt; and that ſhe might freely go to Bed, giving her my Honour, with ſome Proteſtations, that I would on no Account diſturb her; and that if ſhe conſented to this, I would call the Servant to put her to Bed. With fair Words, Promiſes, and repeated Proteſtations, ſhe at laſt conſented; whereupon, I called one of the Maids to come and put her to Bed; I ſtaid in the Dining-room while ſhe was undreſſing, and when in Bed, I went in before the Maid was gone, and ordered a Hand Bell that was on the Toilet, to be laid on the Chair by the Bed-ſide, to ring if any thing ſhould be wanted. This the Maid did, and went away, wiſhing us both a good Night. As ſoon as the Maid was gone, I alſo took my Leave of the Lady, giving her freſh Aſſurances ſhe ſhould not be diſturbed; for which ſhe thanked me, wiſhing me a good Night's Reſt: I told her, that was next to impoſſible, and then went

Digitized by Google

went to my Chair, pauſing and thinking how this Affair would end. Thus I continued better than an Hour, and then ſtarted as if out of a Dream; went and opened the Chamber-door; ſhe was awake, and cried out in an angry loud Voice, Who is that; I told her it was I, that ſhe need not be afraid, for I was a Man of my Word; and aſked her, if ſhe did not ring the Bell; She anſwered in a real Paſſion, that ſhe did not, and deſired that I would withdraw, which I did, and returned to my Chair. In about two Hours after, ſhe rung the Bell indeed: I went and aſked her, if ſhe did not ring; She told me ſhe did, and deſired me to come to her, that ſhe wanted to ſpeak with me: I went to the Bed-ſide; ſhe then told me ſhe found that I was a Man of Honour, and might depend on my Word, and that ſhe was uneaſy at my ſitting up all Night; that ſhe would permit me to lie on the Bed, on the Condition and Promiſe I had made. I thanked her, but refuſed her Offer; telling her, that my Weight on one Side of the Bed muſt prove very uneaſy to her, and not be of any Service to me; but if ſhe would give me Leave (as I was upon Honour) to go into Bed, I ſhould obſerve my Promiſe and Proteſtations equally as I had done; to this (my Reader may believe) ſhe would not conſent. As we had paſſed a good Part of the Night in ſetling Preliminaries, without Reſt, we took Leave, and went to ſleep; and I believe ſhe, as well as myſelf, ſlept ſoundly, for it was ten o'Clock by my Watch when ſhe rung the Bell; I waited on her, and told her the Time of the Day, and that I hoped ſhe had reſted well: ſhe ſaid too well, if it was ſo late, for ſhe was afraid the Stage was gone. I called the Maid, who confirmed the Time of Day, and the Stage's being gone. I ordered her to make Fires in both Rooms. Whatever Concern the Lady might have had about the Stage being gone, ſhe ſaid

Digitized by Google

ſaid but little, and took no farther Notice, only ſaid, ſhe had loſt her Earneſt, and that it was but a Day loſt. The Fires being kindled, I went to the Dining-room, leaving the Maid to help to dreſs her: I ordered Coffee, Tea, and Chocolate, that ſhe might take her Choice. As ſoon as ſhe was dreſſed, ſhe came to the Dining-room, where our Breakfaſt was brought, and we ſat to it. I, in a merry Mood, reproached her with the hard Articles ſhe kept me to, but that I generouſly forgave her: She ſmiled, and reproached me in her Turn, for the daring Step I took, in aſſuming the Character of an Huſband, which ſhe did not yet forgive me. I aſked her, as ſhe was to ſtay another Day, if ſhe would go and ſee the Curioſities of the Town, which Travellers generally did; ſhe ſaid, with all her Heart, that ſhe might be able to give ſome Account of her Travels when ſhe went to *Dreſden*. I told her, I would go and order the Chariot, but ſhe ſaid by no means, as it was a fine Day, ſhe would rather walk. To this I agreed, not ſo much to ſave the Expence, but as I really loved walking: We went, and ſaw only one worth relating, which was a Braſs Statue of a Father and Son, who had been both Criminals under Sentence of Death, which happened at a Time when there was no Executioner in Town. They were in two ſeparate Dungeons; and the Magiſtrates offered the Father his Life, if he would behead his Son (the Puniſhment they were ſentenced to) the Father rejected the Offer with Contempt. They went to the Son, and made him the ſame Offer, who accepted it with Joy. They were brought to the Place of Execution, where there was a Stage erected for that Purpoſe, and in ſight of the Magiſtrates, and a vaſt Concourſe of People, the Father kneeled down to receive the fatal Blow, and both the Son's Arms were lifted up with the Sword to cut off his Father's Head; but in

Digitized by Google

drawing the Stroke, the Blade flew off within about two or three Inches of the Hilt. This was accounted a Miracle, and is recorded as ſuch. This whole Story is engraved on the Pedeſtal the Statue ſtands on, where there is a fine Picture of about ten Feet, or more, in Height, and a proportionable Breadth, in a fine carved and gilt Frame, with the whole Story in large gilded Letters fixed on one Side of the Stadt-houſe. This Piece is reckoned by the beſt Judges to be exceeding well done, and is really worth ſeeing.

Having ſeen as much as we thought proper, and the Lady being a little tired, we went home to Dinner; in our Way, the Lady went into a Toy-ſhop, to buy a ſmall Diamond Ring, worth about forty Guilders (ſomething more than three Guineas) but differed about a Crown in the Price, and there left it. As ſoon as we had dined, the Lady begged the Favour of me to order up one of her Trunks; for ſhe had two large ones, and ſhe deſcribed that which ſhe would have up; which being come, ſhe opened, and took out ſome Things ſhe wanted, and a fine Caſe of Piſtols, Silver mounted, not worth leſs than ten or twelve Guineas, with a Silver imboſſed Sword. Thoſe Things ſhe told me belonged to her Huſband; telling me, that as ſhe wore no Sword, ſhe would make me a Preſent of it for my kind and civil Behaviour, but that I muſt promiſe to wear it.

I received it with Pleaſure, aſſuring her that I would not only wear it, but uſe it for her ſake, if there was occaſion, at the Hazard of my Life; tho' I had a good Silver hilted one of my own. I directly put it on, returning her my ſincere Thanks. She deſired I would ſend ſomebody to take a Place for her in the Stage before it was too late. I told her, if ſhe would give me Leave, I had a little Buſineſs out, and if ſhe reſolved to go, I would, as it was

Digitized by Google

was in my Way, take a Place for her, and would return in half an Hour. To this ſhe conſented. I went and took a Place, and likewiſe called at the Toyſhop, bought the Ring ſhe had been about, and returned home. We ſupped, and paſſed the Evening chearfully together, I ſtill making Declarations of my Paſſions, and ſhe ſtill obſtinate.

At Bed-time, we wiſhed each other a good Night, and parted as we did the Night before. The Maid was ordered to have a Fire in both Rooms early, and to have Breakfaſt ready. I ordered the Chariot to be at the Door at the proper Time, to carry us to the Stage; all which was done as ordered. In the Morning, we were up by times, without any Bell ringing. We breakfaſted, and drove to the Stage: I handed my Lady out of the Chariot to her Place in the Stage: Juſt as ſhe was going in, ſaluting her, I ſlipped the Ring on her Finger, whiſpering her to wear it for my ſake, which ſhe promiſed, with a gentle Squeeze of my Hand; and we took our laſt Leave of each other. The Stage being gone, I mounted my Horſe, and went to *Courtray*, leaving my own Sword to be ſent after me by the Stage.

This Lady was a comely Woman, tall, ſtrait, and well ſhaped; had a fair Skin, ſparkling Eyes, Hair and Eyebrows as black as Jet. In ſhort, ſhe was ſo very handſome, that I was extreamly ſorry to part from her ſo ſoon. Being come to *Courtray*, I waited on Sir *Robert Montgomery*, told my whole Adventure, and ſhewed him my fine Sword; he ſaid it was very handſome, and extraordinary good Work, and, in his Opinion, could not coſt leſs than ſeven or eight Pounds. He ſeemed mightily pleaſed with this Piece of Gallantry. He made me ſit down with him, an Honour he never did before. I took Tea with him, and ſtaid above an

Digitized by Google

Hour. There I ſtaid eight or nine Days, ſettling my little Affairs. I bought two Pieces of fine Linen for Preſents, one for my Brother, the other for his Wife, by way of Friendſhip. I ſold to my Comrade Sergeant, in Sir *Robert*'s Company, my Sword, for leſs by fifteen Shillings than the Silverſmith offered in his Preſence.

As ſoon as I ended what I had to do in *Courtray*, I went and took Leave of Sir *Robert*, and the reſt of my Friends, poſted off for *Rotterdam*, by the Way of *Ghent*, and got thither in five Days. I went directly to Mr. *Penington*'s, where moſt of the chief *Engliſh* Officers, and others reſorted, where there were three Ordinaries at different Prizes, the loweſt was a Guilder, or twenty Pence. As I came up to the Door, there ſtood the young Gentleman, who laſt *March* was one of the Party that took a Number of Writs from the Bailiffs, and beat them, and had invited me and two other Gentlemen to ſup with him at the *Red Lyon* Tavern in *Pall-mall*, as abovementioned. He was richly dreſſed; I ſtrove to avoid him, as he was in high Station, but he knew me, and called, after I had paſſed him, Sir, Sir; I looked back, and he aſked me, if I did not know him; I told him, that I had the Honour of ſeeing him before, but could not call to mind where. He told me he knew me very well; that he had often ſeen me at *Beveridge*'s, and ſaid ſomething about the Adventure at that Place with the Bailiffs, and that he wondered he had never ſeen me in the Camp. At this, General *MacCartny*, and others came, and prevented his ſaying any more to me for that time. This Gentleman was the Marquis of *Harwich*, Son to the Duke of *Schomberg*, Brother to the Duke of that Name, who was killed at the Battle of the *Boyne* in *July* 1690.

The

Digitized by Google

The Wind being weſterly, obliged thoſe that intended for *England* to ſtay ſome Days, but I could get no Opportunity all the Time to ſpeak with the Marquis. At laſt the Wind chopt about, and I with ſome others went to *Helvoetſluys*, and there met again with contrary Winds, which continued for above a Fortnight, ſo that the Town was ſo full, that there was hardly Lodgings to be got at any Rate, and ſeveral were obliged to go and lye on board Ships for want of Lodgings. Theſe Diſappointments happen often there at that Time of the Year, which cauſes a vulgar Notion, that the Inhabitants of the Town can command the Winds, and not ſuffer the *Engliſh* to return home, while they have a Shilling left. The Wind grew fair at laſt, and in the Sailors Opinion like to ſettle; the Town ſoon began to fill from *Rotterdam*, and other Parts, who as faſt as they came in, went directly on board. As I had not yet agreed for my Paſſage, which I was obliged now to do and pay for, ſince I belonged to no Regiment, I waited the Marquis's coming, not doubting, if I applied to him, but I ſhould get my Paſſage free. He came in two Days; I waited on him, and told him my Buſineſs. He immediately ſpoke to his Gentleman, who was a *Frenchman*, his Name was *du Pain*; he ordered him to take me in the Packet with him as one of his Retinue. I thank'd his Lordſhip, went on board that very Day, and ſail'd immediately for *Harwich*, where we landed in ſixteen Hours.

The Fleet being hourly expected from *Holland*, made Lodgings and Carriages ſo dear, that ſix or ſeven young Fellows of us reſolved to walk to *London*, and agreed to keep the Horſe Way, and not quit it for any but a loaded Waggon. We came the firſt Night to *Manintree*, and took our Quarters at the *Cock*, the beſt Inn in that Town. The

Digitized by Google

next Morning about ten o'Clock as I was ſtanding at the Door, with ſome of my Fellow Travellers, a Coach and Six came with the Marquis and his Gentleman, who on ſeeing me, ſtop'd, and beckon'd to me; when I came to the Coach Door, my Lord's Salute was, ſo *Drake*, you are here before me, how did you come? I told his Lordſhip that theſe Gentlemen who ſtood at the Door, and I walk'd it, being ſo much in our Way to *London*; he told me he would dine at *Colcheſter*, which was about eight Miles, that there he would take Poſt, and if I would make haſte thither, I might go with *Du Pain* in the Coach, the reſt of my Journey; I thanked his Lordſhip, telling him I would uſe my Endeavour; he ſaid, pray do, and let me ſee you when you come to *London*, then order'd the Coachman to drive on. I went and hired a Horſe, took leave of my Companions, and got to *Colcheſter* before the Marquis went to Dinner at the Poſt-houſe, being the *White-Hart Inn*, kept by one *Wallis*, of whom I ſhall have occaſion to ſay ſomething hereafter. As ſoon as my Lord had dined, he mounted and went off, charging *Du Pain* to take Care of me, and to make much of ourſelves, bidding me not to forget to come to him, and that *Du Pain* would tell me where.

My Lord's Orders were obſerved to a Tittle: We dined together, took a hearty Bottle, and went that Night to *Chelmsford*, and the next Day to *London*. I parted with *Du Pain*, deſiring him to give my moſt humble Reſpects and Thanks to the Marquis, and tell him, that in two or three Days, when I got myſelf in a little Order, I would wait on his Lordſhip. That Night I went firſt to ſee my Brother and Siſter, who received me with Joy. I ſupped with them, ſtaid until Twelve, and then went to the *Hummums* to take my reſt.

The

Digitized by Google

The next Morning I went to Mrs. *Roberts*'s, to enquire for Mrs. *Goodman*, and the Secretary, who was mighty glad to ſee me, telling me, that ſhe had repeated Compliments of Love and Friendſhip from them both for me; that about Midſummer laſt the *Lorain* Envoy was recalled; that the Secretary and ſhe went off together, and that at their Departure, they both expreſſed their Concern for not ſeeing me, or knowing where to write to me. I aſſured her, that my Concern was not leſs than theirs, ſo took my Leave and went to viſit other Friends; not forgetting the Companion that Mrs. *Goodman* recommended to me the laſt Winter, when the Secretary was courting her, with whom I made Shift until Providence would ſend me one, I might think more to my Purpoſe. This Lady was mighty glad, ſhe ſaid, to ſee me return ſafe from the Wars; I thank'd her, and told her I did not doubt her good Will and Wiſhes for me, that I would uſe my Endeavours to merit her Friendſhip, and if ſhe would give me Leave I would often viſit her; ſhe ſaid not ſo often as welcome. She deſired I would dine with her; I told her I was engaged to dine with my Brother, but that if ſhe would give me Leave I would come and ſup with her; this ſhe complied with, and a Match was concluded for a time: I dined with my Brother, ſupped with her according to promiſe, and viſited her often during the Winter.

Two Days after I went to Duke *Schomberg*'s in *Pallmall*, as directed by *Du Pain*; I enquired of the Porter for my Lord *Harwich*'s Gentleman, who was ſent for; being come, I aſk'd him if the Marquis was ſtirring; he ſaid he was not yet up, that he juſt came from him, ſaid he had ſeveral times ſpoke of me, and that he would let him know I was come to wait on him; he ſoon came

Digitized by Google

down, and conducted me to his Lordſhip's Bed-ſide, who received me kindly, took me by the Hand, bidding me welcome to *London*, and making me ſit down by the Bed-ſide. We talked about the Adventure with the Bailiffs; he aſk'd me if I was not in the Army, and in what Regiment; I told him I had ſerved in Colonel *Pocock*'s Regiment, and had juſt quitted it, I alſo told him for what Reaſon; he ſaid, I did well to quit, that it was barbarous uſage, that if I was diſpoſed to ſerve in the Horſe, I ſhould be treated like a Gentleman, which he really believed me, by my Looks and Behaviour, to be. To this Compliment I got up and made a very low Bow, told his Lordſhip that I had the Honour to ſerve in the *French* Gens d'Arms, where I was treated as ſuch. He told me it was a fine Corps, and Strangers to ill Uſage, and though he never ſaw them, he had heard much ſaid to their Honour. I was willing to let him know, before I entered on any Agreement with his Lordſhip, that I had been in the *French* Service, to try how he would reliſh it, that he might make no Difference after, if I ſhould by Chance enter in his Regiment, which I believed to be his Deſign. However, he ſaid no more on that Subject at that time; he told me that laſt Spring his Father had (by her Majeſty's Conſent) reſign'd his Regiment to him; and if I would ſerve in his own Troop, he would be very kind to me; that I ſhould immeditely receive my full Pay, at fourteen Shillings *per* Week, and keep no Horſe until I came to the Army in *Flanders*; I thanked his Lordſhip for this generous and kind Offer, telling him, I had a Brother in Town, who, through the Intereſt of his Friends, had Hopes of procuring me a Commiſſion; that with his Leave I would go and adviſe with him; he bid me go, telling me,

Digitized by Google

me, that theſe Things met with Delays, and frequent Diſappointments; that he would be extream glad to hear of my Preferment, and, if my Brother ſhould meet with Succeſs, my being in his Troop could be no Hindrance, for he would at any Time diſcharge me, and do me any Service in his Power. I thanked him, and took my leave, telling him, I would make bold to let him know my Reſolution in two or three Days.

Next Day I read in the New's Paper, that the *Chandois*, a *Dutch* Trader, on board of which I had put my Trunk, *&c.* was come to the Quay; I went on board her to get my Things, but was told they were ſent to the Cuſtom-Houſe, that the Trunk was entered, and the two Pieces of Linen, which I had ordered, and that the proper Time was then, to get them; I went, and paid the uſual Duty for the Linen, then took Coach, and drove to Mrs. *Noble*'s (this was the Lady's Name above ſpoke of) with whom I made free until I could provide better; I made her a trifling Preſent of Cambrick, *&c.* to the Value of five or ſix and twenty Shillings. I ſent for a Porter, gave him the two Pieces of Linen to carry along with me to my Brother's, I preſented one to him, and the other to his Wife, and received their kind Thanks; I acquainted him with what had paſt with the Marquis of *Harwich*, and my Intention of entering into his Troop on the above Terms, until better Proviſion could be made; all which my Brother left to my own Diſcretion. This happened on a *Thurſday*. I dined with my Brother, and went in the Evening to *Burkit*, the Player's Ball, or Dancing-Room, in hopes to make ſome new Conqueſt.

I was not diſappointed; for I was not long in the Room when a jolly, ſhining Lady made her Appearance, I ſay ſhining, for ſhe had on a rich Diamond Necklace, Diamond Ear-rings, and Girdle-buckle,

Digitized by Google

buckle, and a ſuitable Dreſs to all theſe. I fell inſtantly in love with her, though I could not ſee her Face, being maſkt; going up to her, I ſaid if ſhe was not engaged I would be proud to have the Honour of being her Partner; ſhe ſaid ſhe could not as yet tell me. I told her I would wait her Time with Pleaſure; ſhe then took a Turn round the Room, and I followed her. A briſk young Gentleman, in lac'd Cloaths, came up to her, and propoſed to be her Partner; ſhe told him, he ſpoke too late, that ſhe was engaged; he aſk'd haſtily, to whom? She turned about, and ſaid, to this Gentleman, pointing at me, and coming up, gave me her Hand; the Gentleman ſeemed diſpleaſed, but had no Remedy but Patience. We danced together, and the Muſick leaving off for a while, we ſat on a Bench which went quite round the Room; as we were pretty warm, I propoſed to her to take ſome Refreſhment; ſhe deſired to be excuſed, turned her Head from me, and took off her Maſk to uſe her Handkerchief. I complained of this, as being an Injury done me, as I was her Partner, and deprived of the Pleaſure of ſeeing her Face, a Favour ſeldom or never refuſed. She aſſured me ſhe did not do it with Intent to diſappoint my Curioſity, if I was ſo diſpoſed, but that there was ſo many People in the Room, that ſhe could not avoid being ſeen by ſome others, which ſhe did not chooſe, for Reaſons I might know at another Time, if we met. I told her it muſt be her Fault if we did not. The Muſick being got to the Gallery, every one took their Partners, and danc'd until Eleven, when the Company broke up. I deſired, as I had a Coach waiting, ſhe would give me leave to ſet her down; ſhe thank'd me, and ſaid ſhe had a Chair waiting, but would be obliged to me, if I would ſee her to it. I preſſed her

Digitized by Google

her in vain, to do me the Favour to ſup with me, and chooſe the Place; ſhe ſaid it was not in her Power, that ſhe muſt go home directly. I pray'd her to make good her Promiſe, of meeting me another Time, and to let me know when and where, and that ſhe would oblige me with the Pleaſure of ſeeing her Face. She told me, laughing, that ſhe was not willing to loſe ſo good a Partner, ſo ſuddenly, which muſt be the Conſequence, if ſhe granted my Requeſt, for ſhe was afraid I ſhould not like her, but next *Thurſday* ſhe would meet me there, and run the Hazard. I begged, ſince ſhe was ſo good, to give me leave to appoint a Meeting at the *Five-Bell Tavern*, which was but three or four Doors from the Dancing Room, and prayed her if ſhe approved of it to name the Hour; to this ſhe agreed, and appointed ſix o'Clock, without fail. I handed the Lady to her Chair, without ſeeing her Face, and bid her remember. I went that Night and ſupped with Mrs. *Noble*, then went home to Bed, and got but little Reſt, my new Adventure, and the long wiſh'd for *Thurſday* running in my Head.

Notwithſtanding all this, Buſineſs was not to be neglected. I went at the Time appointed to the Marquis of *Harwich*, who on ſeeing me, aſk'd me, if I was come to a Reſolution; I told him I was, that that the Minute I told my Brother of his Lordſhip's generous and kind Offer, I had the Pleaſure to find him of my own Mind, and that I was now come with Pleaſure, to receive his Lordſhips Commands. He immediately ordered *Hodges* to be ſent for, who was one of his Corporals, the only Officer then in Town, for taking Care of the Recruits and Horſes. *Hodges* being come, he ordered him to get me a good Room in the Inn, not to put any of the Troopers with me, and to pay me fourteen Shillings *per* Week, and to exempt me from Stable

Digitized by Google

ble Duty, for I ſhould keep no Horſe, until I got to the Army. At parting, the Marquis whiſper'd the Corporal, who told me, that his Lordſhip ordered him to uſe me with Reſpect; I ſaid I was obliged to his Lordſhip, and would by my Behaviour, endeavour to gain his (*Hodges*'s) Eſteem, and that of my fellow Troopers. He took me with him to the *White Bear* in *Piccadilly*, where at his own Expence, we crack'd a couple of Bottles, as my welcome, which in a few Days I paid with Intereſt, reſolving not to be behind hand with my Officer; he choſe this Place to treat me, being the Inn where he and the Troopers were quartered. There I had a handſome Room ſhewed me, by the Corporal's Orders, which he ſaid was to be my Lodging till we ſhould march for *Flanders*. I thank'd him, telling him, if he had any particular Friend to oblige, it ſhould be at his Service, for I ſhould make but little Uſe of it, being better provided; he ſaid whether I made uſe of it, or not, it muſt be kept for me, as it was his Lordſhip's Orders. I then aſk'd him, if it was neceſſary to aſk my Lord's leave to lye out from my Quarters; he told me, he could and would give me leave himſelf, but 'twas better ſpeak to his Lordſhip. We went back, the Corporal told him, that every thing was done according to his Lordſhip's Commands, and that I was fix'd in a good Room; his Lordſhip aſk'd me if I lik'd it; I told him I did, but that I had a Lodging taken for a Time, that was not yet up, and if he would give me Leave, I would willingly ſtay until then; at this he ſmil'd, deſiring me to be free, and tell him, if there was not a Girl in the Caſe; I own'd there was, and a pretty one too; he ſaid he thought ſo, then bid *Hodges* let me do as I pleaſed. I went and ſupped with my Brother, and told him all that paſs'd with the Marquis (the pretty Girl excepted) at which he ſeemed

Digitized by Google

ſeemed well pleaſed, and ſaid, he hoped I ſhould ſoon be better provided for. I went often to viſit Mrs. *Noble*, and paſt my Time in the moſt agreeable Manner I could, expecting the long-wiſhed-for *Thurſday*, which being come, my Reader may believe I was not the laſt at the *Five Bell Tavern*.

I was there near half an hour before the Lady, tho' ſhe was very punctual. I had left number Six at the Bar, as agreed on at parting, which ſhe enquired for, and was introduced by one of the Drawers, who are generally Maſters of the Ceremoney, in ſuch Caſes. I received her with open Arms; ſhe appear'd in her Jewels as before, with an Addition of two fine Brilliants, I had not ſeen the laſt time, and a rich Dreſs of Silver flowered Silk; ſhe made a fine Appearance, and looked very graceful, though ſtill maſk'd. As it was a cold Evening, I propoſed a Glaſs of mull'd Claret; ſhe choſe White Wine, not ſtrong; I ordered a Bottle of *French* White to be mull'd, in the beſt Manner; I thanked her for being ſo exact to her Hour, and not keeping me in Suſpence; ſhe ſaid ſhe always was punctual to her Word; I told her I would ſlip no Opportunity Providence or ſhe would put in my Way; to try that, ſhe aſſured me, whenever ſhe made me a Promiſe, I ſhould find her ſtrict in the obſervance of it. I prayed her to unmaſk; ſhe ſaid it was not yet time; that ſhe was unwilling to loſe me ſo ſoon, which muſt be the Conſequence, as ſhe told me before, if ſhe ſhould ſhew me her Face; I aſſured her to the contrary, for I was poſitive where Nature had form'd ſo comely, and well proportion'd a Body, it could not but form a Face ſuitable to ſo extraordinary a Frame. Our Wine came, two Glaſſes were filled, and the Waiter withdrew; I preſented one to the Lady, and held the other, praying her to unmaſk, and touch Glaſſes,

Digitized by Google

ſes, which ſhe did, turning her Head, and drinking my Health. This nettled me, ſhe perceived it; ſhe deſired me to fill another Glaſs for her, but firſt drink my own; this I readily complied with, filled both Glaſſes, and gave her one, which ſhe took, ſaying, now, Sir, I am with Concern going to put an End to our Dancing and Partnerſhip, by granting your Requeſt of ſeeing my Face, but take Care you do not repent it. With this ſhe took off her Maſk, deſiring me to take my Glaſs; we touch'd Glaſſes as before, and drank to each other. I then went and ſaluted her, which ſhe did not ſeem to take amiſs; here we ſtaid chatting to finiſh our Bottle. I deſired to know if ſhe would oblige me with her Company to ſup there, when the Dancing was over; Sir, ſays ſhe, you joke, would you venture to dance with me after ſeeing my Face? I anſwer'd, yes, Madam, and will run that Hazard, as often as you'll do me the Honour to permit it, aſſuring her, if I ever repented ſeeing her heavenly Face, it muſt be owing to the Hardneſs of her Heart, in not letting me enjoy that Sight as often as I could wiſh, for I am all Love ſaid I; or all Flattery, ſaid ſhe. I told her ſhe knew to the contrary, and begged ſhe would let me know if ſhe would ſup here; ſhe ſaid with all her Heart, but ſhe muſt be at home at Twelve. I ordered Supper, looked at my Watch; ſhe was not behind-hand, for ſhe looked at hers, which I had not ſeen before; it was a fine Repeater. She made it repeat the Hour, it was within a Quarter of Eight; as ſhe was to go home ſo ſoon, Supper was ordered to be on the Table at half an hour after Nine. We went to the Dancing Room, took two or three Country Dances, and returned to Supper.

At

Digitized by Google

At the Dancing Room I met a Gentleman who I knew, we ſpoke *French* together; this put the Lady on asking at Supper, what Countryman I was; I told her I was a Native of *Ireland*, but that I had been a long time in *France*; ſhe ſaid, well! I was not miſtaken, for I thought the firſt Moment you ſpoke to me, you were of that Country. Madam, ſaid I, you'll oblige me, in telling me, what could induce you to think ſo, or whether that Country People, have any particular Mark, to diſtinguiſh them from the reſt of Mankind? Yes, Sir, ſaid ſhe, they are generally cleverer made Men, and more polite, than any other Foreigners that come to this Country. To this Compliment I made a low Bow, and thanked her for the good Opinion ſhe had of my Countrymen; telling her, they were Subjects, and not Foreigners; to this ſhe begged Pardon, declaring ſhe meant no Harm. At this I got up, went over to her, and to ſhew her I made no doubt of what ſhe ſaid, I ſaluted her, and returned to my Place. After this, I began to be more free, and told her ſhe had the Advantage of me, that ſhe knew my Country, that I was a Stranger to hers, unleſs ſhe would pleaſe to indulge me in that Particular; ſhe ſaid, it was but reaſonable, that ſhe was born at *Egham*, in *Surry*, not far from *Windſor*, that her Name was *Viers*; that now the Advantage was on my Side, for ſhe had not the Pleaſure of knowing mine; I told her my Name was *Drake*, that there was none of my Family in that Kingdom, except an only Brother, who lived at *Somerſet-houſe*, and was very well known in that Neighbourhood. Whatever Benefit I might reap from this Diſcovery, I was ſure it would not leſſen me in her Favour, if ſhe ſhould inquire; which (as I found after) ſhe did not fail doing. I found her ſo free and chearful all the Time we were together, that I made

no

Digitized by Google

no doubt of ſoon gaining the Conqueſt I aimed at; I was the more confirmed in this Opinion, by ſome Glances ſhe now and then darted at me; one of which ſhe perceived I caught flying, which put her to the Bluſh: However I took no Notice, but turned my Diſcourſe to divert her; ſhe ſaid, it was Time to think of going, for it was Eleven o'Clock; I ſaid, I would not delay her a Moment beyond her Time, and that ſhe had ſtill three Quarters of an Hour to ſtay; her Lodging, ſhe ſaid, was as far as St. *James*'s, and it would take Time to go thither; this I granted, telling her, if ſhe would give me Leave, I would ſee her Home to her Time; ſhe frankly told me, it was impoſſible for her to grant my Requeſt of ſeeing her Home; that ſhe would be glad of my Company to go near it, and to ſhew me that ſhe had a good Opinion of my Prudence as well as my Perſon, ſhe would then tell me her Lodging, upon giving her my Word I would neither go, ſend, or make the leaſt Inquiry about her until ſhe thought proper; that by this I might judge ſhe had no ſmall Eſteem for me. All this ſhe ſpoke with ſo ſerious an Air, that I promiſed all ſhe aſked, and performed to a Tittle. She then told me, if it would ſuit my Convenience, ſhe ſhould be at Leiſure the next *Sunday*, to go and dine ſomewhere in the Country, that ſhe wanted a little Air; ſhe appointed the Sign of the Fan, a Milliner's Shop in *German-ſtreet*, near St. *James*'s Church, as the Place to call on her, at one o'Clock, where ſhe would meet me without fail. I neither could, nor had time then to conjecture what all this meant, but hoped for the beſt. I called for a Bill, ordered a Coach, and handed the Lady in; ſhe deſired the Coachman ſhould ſtop at the Lower End of *Duke-Street*, near St. *James's Square*, where he was to ſet me down firſt, and then ſet herſelf down, at the next Houſe beyond the

Two

Digitized by Google

Two Black Posts in *Duke-Street*; this was the Place she lodged at. Thus we parted very friendly, she desiring me not to forget one o'Clock on *Sunday*, and likewise to remember my other Promise, and so we took our Leave of each other.

The *Friday* and *Saturday* following, I spent in going to the Marquis's Levee, visiting my Brother and other Friends, but Mrs. *Noble* had the most of my Company.

This Winter was remarkable for two great Events; the one was the Duke of *Marlborough*'s resigning all his Posts under the Queen, the other was the Duke of *Ormond*'s being promoted, and appointed Captain General of all her Majesty's Forces, *&c.* This Change pleased some, and displeased others, as it generally happens in such Cases. At parting with Mrs. *Viers* on *Thursday* Night, I went to my Lodging, and then to Bed, had little Rest all Night, my Thoughts being employed in finding out what this Woman might be; I thought if she had been a common Woman she would endeavour to make some Gain of me, that her Dress was too rich for a Tradesman's Wife, and that she would not go to such Places, nor run such Lengths with me on so slender an Acquaintance: I concluded her at least, that she rather was a Mistress kept by some Man of Quality, who had taken this Frolick for Change of Diet. I resolved to think no more about her, until *Sunday*, hoping that then our Meeting might clear up the Matter, as it really did. The *Sunday* being come, I went to the Place according to Appointment, the Lady was come a little before me, for which I ask'd her Pardon. I had got a neat clean Hackney Coach, into which I handed the Lady; she told me that there was another Lady she had for a Companion, and desired the Gentlewoman of the House to bid her make Haste:

Digitized by Google

This a little confus'd me, which Mrs. *Viers* perceiving ſmiled; the Lady being come, I handed her into the Coach; I aſk'd the Ladies what Side they would chuſe to take an Airing in; they agreed to *Hyde-Park*. I found this new Comer was to be no Check on me; this gave me Spirits, and I began to be as merry and chearful as uſual: We took a Turn or two round the Ring, then went to the Crown at *Kenſington*; I went to order a Dinner of the Ladies chooſing, at my Return they bantered me, for not having ſaluted them ſince they came in; to this I pleaded guilty, begged Pardon, and ſaluted them both, and often look'd earneſtly at them; Mrs. *Viers* took Notice, and aſk'd me, which I liked beſt; I told her that was not a fair Queſtion, that ſhe very well knew by whoſe Appointment we all met; ſhe ſaid it was true, and for that Reaſon aſk'd the Queſtion, and deſired I would anſwer it freely; that this Lady was a ſincere Friend of hers, in whom ſhe could truſt her Life, but would not admit her a Rival if ſhe could help it; to this I replied, that I was glad to ſee her in ſo merry, though a bantering Strain; that without Doubt, the Lady had Merit enough, to engage a Heart, not pre-engaged; that for my Part, if I might ſuppoſe myſelf to be comprehended in this Rivalſhip, I had not time to conſider the Lady, never having had the Pleaſure of ſeeing her before, but as ſhe deſired me to anſwer freely, ſhe muſt believe, I lik'd her beſt, who I had lov'd for ſome time paſt; the other Lady ſaid, do not mind her, Sir, ſhe knows that, and is only joking; I anſwer'd, that I knew this to be true. Mrs. *Viers* came over to me, made a low Courteſy, and thank'd me for the kind Declaration I had made in her Favour, and ſaid ſhe would not be long in my Debt, for ſhe would give

Digitized by Google

give me convincing Proofs of the great Eſteem ſhe had for me, that knowing me to be diſcreet and obſervant of my Promiſe, was therefore reſolved to hide nothing from me; that the Steps ſhe had taken, and was ſtill neceſſary to follow, in Conjunction with this Lady, her Friend (taking her by the Hand) required the greateſt Secrecy, and when let into the Knowledge of her whole Affair, that I muſt be extreamly cautious in my Behaviour towards her; I aſſured her ſhe might depend on it; the other Lady ſaid, ſhe did not doubt it, and that I could not be too careful. You muſt know then, Sir, ſays Mrs. *Viers*, that I have for ſome time been kept by Count *Gallace*, the Imperial Ambaſſador, in all the Splendor that you have ſeen me; nevertheleſs I cannot but confeſs my Paſſion for you, and have no Motive for making this Declaration, but pure Love, which I have entertained for you ſince I firſt ſaw you; and as I cannot with Safety ſee you in *Duke-Street*, I have ſettled with this Lady, who keeps a Houſe in *Rider's-Street*, to meet you there as often as Opportunity ſerves, it being convenient for me, being near my Lodgings, and hope you will not find it far from yours; you ſee now what I have done, and what will you think of me for being ſo forward? Madam, what can I think or ſay, but that you are all Goodneſs, that the Trouble you have taken is far beyond my Merit, but my Study and Endeavours ſhall be always to make the moſt grateful Return for this kind Proof of the Regard you are pleaſed to expreſs for me. Then I prayed her to tell me, how I ſhould be informed of her Time, or Days of meeting me, at that Lady's Houſe in *Rider's-Street*; the Lady anſwered, it was well thought on: Mrs. *Viers* aſk'd me, what Coffee-houſe I frequented, that ſhe might write by the Penny Poſt, and direct her Letters thither,

Digitized by Google

I thank'd her, and told her that would do extraordinary well, and prayed her to direct for Captain *Drake*, at the *Rainbow Coffee-house*, in *New-Street*, near *Covent-Garden*; that I should not fail calling every Morning and Evening, and would punctually observe her Directions and Commands, but hoped she would not be slow in sending them; she assured me I should hear from her as soon as possible; the other Lady said, she would often (according to Custom) visit her, and if she neglected thro' her own Fault, she would let me know; I thank'd her, though I did not believe her: We dined, took a a chearful Glass after Dinner; and every thing being thus settled as above, I set the Ladies down where I took them up, in *German-Street*, took my Leave, and went to sup with Mrs. *Noble*.

I went every Morning to pay my Respects to the Marquis of *Harwich*, who always received me kindly, and often kept me several Hours, talking of the Humours of the Town, but chiefly of the Army, which he was very fond of, and would sometimes take a Lesson of Exercise from me, keeping a Carabine at his Apartment, for that Purpose. I went sometimes (tho' but seldom) to see my Corporal and fellow Troopers, took a Bottle with Mr. *Hodges*, and ordered Beer for the private Men, never missing to call at the Coffee-House twice or thrice a Day, in hopes of finding there my Fair-One's Commands, but did not hear a Word, until the *Saturday* Evening, when I received the following Epistle, contained in so small a Compass as a whole Sheet of Paper, *viz.*

TO-*Morrow being* Sunday, R. S. *at one o'Clock precisely*,

Yours.

My

Digitized by Google

My Reader may judge, that I was in *R. S.* or *Rider ſtreet*, at the Time appointed, where there was a good Dinner provided. Mrs. *Viers* received me as well as I could wiſh; the Lady her Friend (whoſe Name was *Jones*) bid me heartily welcome to her Houſe; we dined, ſupped, and ſpent the Evening together, until near twelve o'Clock, Mrs. *Viers* then telling me, it was full Time to part. I took my leave; but I muſt do Juſtice to Mrs. *Jones*'s Prudence, ſhe did not come oftner, nor ſtay longer, than ſhe was welcome to us. This Intrigue went on in this Manner from our firſt Acquaintance, without the leaſt Interruption, until the End of *January*, which was near three Months; and in all that time I never ſaw my precious but at Mrs. *Jones*'s.

I hope now it will not be taken amiſs, to give my Reader a ſhort Account of this Lady's Perſon: She was tall and graceful, had good Limbs, a very fine Hand and Arm, and a very fair Skin; her Eyes were rather of a dark Blue than Black, but bright; a handſome Face, inclinable to be fat, with ruby Lips; her Hair and Eye-brows ſeemed to be dark Brown, but really Red; this Defect (if it was one) ſhe artfully concealed, by the help of Pomatum, burnt Cork, and a leaden Comb; this ſhe ſtill kept a Secret, as ſhe thought, though I knew it, but took no Notice.

She met me as often as ſhe could, and made thoſe Days as agreeable to me as I could wiſh. I received ſeveral Letters from her, directed as above, without any other Alteration in the Stile, but the time of Meeting.

One Day being at Breakfaſt with my Brother, he told me that he had made Intereſt with the Duke of *Devonſhire*, and others, to recommend me to

Digitized by Google

the Duke of *Ormond*, who was then Captain General, and that I muſt go the next Day with him to wait on his Grace, about one o'Clock, who ordered him to let him ſee me. We went, there was a very great Levee, three large Rooms full; one of the Duke's Gentlemen came, by his Grace's Orders, took my Brother to the Dreſſing Room; I was alſo ſent for. I found his Grace with a Napkin in his Hands, wiping himſelf, in cloſe Conference with my Brother; he turned about, honoured me with a Bow of his Head, and viewed me narrowly. My Brother then took his Leave; as we were going out of the Dreſſing Room, we bowed, which his Grace courteouſly returned, ſhaking his Head, and Hands, as much as to ſay, live in Hope, your Buſineſs ſhall be done. My Brother told me, that his Grace promiſed to do for me, and ordered me to follow him to *Flanders*, and there put him in mind. This I did not fail to do, as will appear in its proper place. I waited on the Marquis of *Harwich*, told him all that paſt, who ſaid he was very glad I had ſo fair a Proſpect of being ſo well provided for, and that he would do me all the Service in his Power; I thank'd his Lordſhip, and now thought myſelf in a fair Way. Thus between Love and War I ſpent my Time agreeably.

At my firſt coming to *London* that Winter, my Brother did me the Honour to introduce me to his Lady the Counteſs of *Arlington*, who received me kindly, and was pleaſed to expreſs her Gladneſs of ſeeing me come ſafe from the Dangers of War, deſiring my Brother to invite me to eat at his Table during the Winter, to ſave Expence; we both thank'd her Ladyſhip, and though neither of us intended to accept this kind Offer, yet we did not preſume to tell her ſo.

Early

Digitized by Google

Early in *January* 1712, the Marquis of *Harwich* (on whom I frequently waited) in a merry Mood one Morning, bid me take my Leave of the Pleaſures, and pretty Girls of *London*, and prepare for *Flanders*, that we ſhould ſoon march, for he expected every Day the Route to the Place of our Rendezvous; and aſked me, if this News was not diſagreeable to me: As my Lord was pleaſed to give me Leave to be free, and as he loved to joke, I aſſured his Lordſhip, that *Venus* had pretty well played her Part that Winter, and as *Mars* was now preparing to compleat the Queen's Honour, and the Glory of *England*, nothing I ſhould leave behind in *London* could give me half the Satisfaction I would receive in being an Actor on the Stage, where this great Work was to be the Drama, and eſpecially as his Lordſhip (though young) was to appear in one of the principal Characters. At this his Lordſhip was pleaſed to ſhake me by the Hand, and tell me, he was glad to find I was ſo near his own Way of thinking; for he longed to be in *Flanders*, and did not doubt but the following Campaign would put an End to the arbitrary Power and Tyranny of *Lewis* XIV. Thus we talked a good deal more on the like Subjects.

As ſoon as his Lordſhip was dreſſed, he was pleaſed to take a Leſſon at Exerciſe with his Carrabine, in which he made a quick Progreſs in a ſhort time, being extreamly fond, and giving his Mind to it. Having received this timely Notice, I made the moſt I could of the Remainder of this Month, taking my Leave of my Relations and Friends. I cannot tell who was moſt concerned at my Departure (eſpecially when I took my laſt Leave) Mrs. *Viers*, or Mrs. *Noble*; they were both free of their Tears, and Mrs. *Viers* was no leſs ſo of her Money, having made me a Preſent of a handſome green and gold wrought Purſe, with ten

Digitized by Google

Guineas and a *Jacobus*, desiring me to keep the latter as a Token of her Love, until we met again, which I promised, and was as good as my Word, though I did not see her for a Year and nine Months after.

As soon as I had Notice of a Day being fixed for our March, I went to acquaint my Brother with it, and take my Leave of him. He gave me very wholesome Advice, praying me to be regular in my Conduct, to avoid Quarrels, which often proceed from drinking, and was glad at his Heart to know, I was not fond of that Vice. He charged me, by all means, to be careful in preserving the Marquis's Favour, which might probably be of great Service to me, and not to neglect waiting on the Duke of *Ormond* as often as possible. I thanked him, assuring him that I would be punctual in all he desired, and took my Leave. I went likewise to Mrs. *Jones*, who expressed her kind Concern at my Departure. I desired her to present my most tender Love and Respects to Mrs. *Viers*, which she promised. In taking my Leave, she gave my Hand a gentle Squeeze, and darted such a Glance, that made me vain enough to think she liked me, and told me, that the next Winter she hoped to see me in *Rider's Street*, whether Mrs. *Viers* should be in Town or not. I assured her I would not fail waiting on her as soon as I came to *London*. I thought it good Policy to have two Strings to my Bow, that if Mrs. *Viers* should by any means fail me before, or at my Return, I might have a Chance to make my Quarters good with Mrs. *Jones*, who was a very agreeable Woman, and had a well-furnished large House, where I supposed I might have a Lodging at my Return, at least, until I should provide one.

Two Days after, being the first of *February*, we set out from *London* to the Place of our Rendez-

vous,

Digitized by Google

vous, which was *Ingateſtone* in *Eſſex*, twenty Miles from *London*. We marched from the *Bear Inn* in *Picadilly*, only eight private Men of the Marquis's own Troop, under the Command of Mr. *Hoggis* the Corporal, to *White Chappel*. Here we were joined by about fifty more belonging to the other Troops of the Regiment, under the Command of their reſpective Corporals, and marched that Day to *Ramford*, where we quartered that Night, and the next Day marched to *Ingateſtone*.

Here every thing was prepared for our Reception; we were billetted on the Inns; the Marquis's Troop was quartered on one *Palmer*, who kept the *Swan*, one of the beſt Inns in the Town: We were civilly received by the Landlord and his Wife, who was a comely handſome Woman. As I was not to take Care of Horſes, I had no Buſineſs in the Stable, ſo I followed the Corporal to a Parlour the Landlord conducted us to: The Landlady ſoon came with the Tapſter, who brought a Bottle of Wine to welcome us. Mr. *Hogges* went and ſaluted her. I ſaid it was a Soldier's Duty to follow his Officer's Example, where there was Honour to be gained, let the Danger be ever ſo great, and went and ſaluted her. She ſaid, ſhe wiſhed I had no greater Danger to encounter next Summer, and if I had not, I ſhould have a pleaſant Campaign. I thanked her for her kind Wiſh. At this, Mr. *Palmer*, who had been gone out, came in, and Mrs. *Palmer* withdrew. I called for a Bottle of Wine, thinking it not fair to let my Landlady's Favour go unreturned. I bid the Tapſter ſend in his Miſtreſs to take a Glaſs of our Bottle; as I made a better Appearance than any of my Fellow Troopers, I was willing to make her believe I was ſomething above them; and, to ſtrengthen her in that Opinion, I told her that I was in a manner a Stranger to all my Companions, Mr. *Hogges* excepted; that I knew

Digitized by Google

I knew it to be the conſtant Practice to put two in a Bed, a Method I was no ways fond of, and therefore ſhould be very much obliged to her, if ſhe would let me have a little ſnug Room to myſelf, I would freely pay for it. She ſaid, ſhe would conſult her Huſband about it. Mr. *Hogges* deſired that ſhe would, and aſſured her, I had a Room to myſelf in *London* by the Marquis's Orders. She ſaid, ſhe would go and ſee what could be done, and ſo left us. Mr. *Hogges* followed to ſee what was for Supper; he came back, and told me there was a Piece of Pork and Potatoes, and a Leg of Mutton roaſted. I ſaid it was an excellent Supper, but that for my Part I could not eat ſo ſoon; but if he would oblige me to ſtay until the People of the Houſe went to Supper, we would ſup with them; and as it was the firſt Night, we would make ourſelves merry. He ſaid, with all his Heart, ſmiling; but he believed I had ſome Roguery in my Head. The other Troopers went to Supper; Mr. *Hogges* making an Apology for himſelf and me. As they had but ſmall Beer allowed to drink, I ordered each Man a Quart of Ale, and after Supper a Quart of Brandy made into Punch among them, being deſirous by this Method to gain their Eſteem and Friendſhip.

There was in Town at this Time a Penny Lottery; moſt of the Town's People went thither to try their Fortune; among the reſt Mrs. *Palmer* went, with a Couple of her female Acquaintance; Mr. *Hogges* and I went to accompany them, and put in our Penny each, and drew Lots in our Turn. I had the good Fortune to get the great Prize, a Silk Handkerchief, Value about four Shillings. This I made a Preſent of to Mrs. *Palmer*, which ſhe received with ſome Difficulty. We went home, and ſupped. My Landlord gave me Thanks for the Preſent I made to his Wife. I told him, it was not

Digitized by Google

not worth Thanks, for it coſt but a Penny. After Supper, we took a hearty Glaſs, and parted. The Chamberlain was ordered to ſhew me to the *Roſe*, a pretty neat Room, with a good handſome Bed. This Lodging I kept all the Time we ſtaid here, which was forty Days, and lived very pleaſantly, making love to Mrs. *Palmer*, whenever I could find the leaſt Opportunity, which I perceived ſhe was indifferent about. This no ways pleaſed me; however I did not drop it, knowing that he muſt be unworthy a Conqueſt, who abandons the Undertaking for being repulſed. When the leaſt Opportunity offered, I did not fail to let her know the great Regard I had for her: She would civilly thank me, and, with a Smile, tell me, ſhe had a Reſpect for me, but deſired me not to put a wrong Conſtruction on her Words. At this, ſomebody came into the Kitchen, where we were ſitting by the Fire, and prevented for that time my requeſting her to explain herſelf. It was ſome Days before the leaſt Opportunity offered to ſpeak one Word in private to her, being ſo taken up by Lord *Peters*'s Company, who, with moſt of the noble Batchelors in *England*, were come into *Lancaſhire*, to ſtrive who ſhould be the happy Man that could gain the Affections of Miſs *Wamſly*, an Heireſs, ſaid to be worth ſeven Thouſand Pounds *per Annum*, and ſixty thouſand Pounds in Caſh, who being a Roman Catholick, had declared herſelf in favour of this Lord, being of the ſame Communion, and married him, who about this Time brought her home to his Seat of *Ingateſtone Hall*, within half a Mile of this Town, where there was great Doings, and open Houſe kept for a Month; nothing ſeen all the Time but Bonfires, Mirth and good Chear, all the Neighbours flocking thither.

A young Gentleman in the Neighbourhood who frequented the *Swan*, with whom I had often taken a Bottle,

Digitized by Google

a Bottle, prevailed on me to go with him to the Hall, to partake of the Diverſion; that he would inſure me a pretty Girl, and a good Dancer, for my Partner. At our firſt coming into the Hall, we were conducted by a Gentleman (who I ſuppoſe was employed for that Purpoſe) to my Lord *Peters*, after we had wiſhed his Lordſhip Joy, he did us the Honour to introduce us to his Lady, who courteouſly received our Salute, and Compliments ſuitable to the joyful Occaſion; and then we took Leave of her Ladyſhip. My Lord put us in the Care of a Gentleman, or Maſter of the Ceremony, who he charged, to ſee us well entertained. We thanked his Lordſhip, and went with the Gentleman, who brought us where there was plenty of all ſorts of Proviſions, laid in the beſt Order on three large Side-boards, and Servants to attend. My Friend and I took two or three Glaſſes of Burgundy, and then went to meet two Ladies he expected, one of which he told me was the Partner he promiſed me. We had got but to the outmoſt Yard, when they came in at the Gate in a four Wheel Chaiſe. We handed the Ladies out, and my Friend did me the Honour to introduce me to my Partner, as he was pleaſed to call her; ſhe really was a very pretty Girl, and, I dare ſay, the genteeleſt that appeared there that Night. I ſoon found out by her Diſcourſe that ſhe was my Friend's Siſter, but took no notice. The Muſick playing with different Inſtruments made a delightful Harmony, and the Company crouded to hear them perform ſeveral Pieces. Then the Lady *Peters*, with a Man of Diſtinction (whoſe Name I really forgot) began *French* Dances, which continued about an Hour, and then to Country Dances, until ten, when the Company went to Supper. About twelve, the Lord and Lady retired; others who were not diſpoſed to ſit up, went off, and the reſt of

Digitized by Google

of the Company danced all Night. My Friend and I, with our Partners, were of the Number. About Sun-riſe the two Ladies went home in their Chaiſe, and my Friend and I to the *Swan*. At ten we wiſhed each other a good Reſt, and went to Bed; I ſlept about three Hours, got up, went to the common Parlour, where I found my Landlord and Landlady with Mr. *Hogges*. I gave them a full Account of the Reception we met with from Lord and Lady *Peters*, and what paſſed at the Ball. My Landlady told me, ſmiling, I had a handſome Partner. This fed my Vanity a little, not doubting that it proceeded from Jealouſy, and gave me a ſecret Pleaſure. I told her, that I was indebted for that Favour and Honour to Mr. *Hove* (that being the Gentleman's Name with whom I went to the Hall) who introduced me to that pretty Lady, to whom I was an intire Stranger before.

As ſoon as Mr. *Hove* was up, he came to us, and inſiſted on my going home with him to Dinner: I made ſome Excuſe to no Purpoſe: He ſaid I muſt go ſee my Partner, who with the other Lady (his Partner) were to dine with him, ſtill keeping me in the dark (as he thought) of the Lady's being his Siſter. He lived a ſmall Mile from *Ingateſtone*; as it was a fine Day, we walked it; being come to the Houſe, Mr. *Hove* aſked for his Mother: He was told, that ſhe was in the Parlour with ſome Ladies and Gentlemen, whom the Servant named; without farther Ceremony, he ſhewed me the Way; did me the Honour to introduce me to Mrs. *Hove*, his Mother, and the reſt of the Company: Compliments being over, and all ſeated, the Converſation ran intirely on the great Order every thing was conducted in at the Hall the Night paſt; the deſerving Praiſes given to Lady *Peters*, as to her Perſon and Behaviour, *&c.* but all this time I did

Digitized by Google

did not ſee the two Ladies, our Partners, which made me take the Freedom with Mr. *Hove* to aſk for them. He went to his Mother, who told him they would come immediately. They ſoon made their Appearance; I went and ſaluted them, firſt my Partner, then the other. I underſtood afterwards, they were firſt Couſins; that a Match was on Foot between Mr. *Hove* and his Partner. After Dinner, it was propoſed to ſpend the Evening at the Hall; but put off until next Day by Mrs. *Hove*, who inſiſted on the Company's ſtaying to Supper with her, and that ſhe would wait on them to the Hall the next Day. By this, I was obliged to ſpend the Evening there with my pretty Partner, though in Reality I had rather gone to paſs it with Mrs. *Palmer*, where I thought I might have a greater Probability of Succeſs. To do Miſs *Hove* Juſtice, ſhe indulged me beyond my Merit or Expectation; for whenever her Mother ſent her to order any thing, at her Return ſhe would come and ſit by me, ſay ſomething merry to divert me, obſerving I was penſive, which was true. In this manner did ſhe behave all the Evening; we ſupped at nine, and having ſettled Matters for meeting at the Hall the next Day, Miſs *Hove*, as I was on the Point of taking my Leave, deſired me, with an audible Voice, to remember I had a Partner, aſſuring me ſhe would have no other; I told her ſhe was before-hand with me, that I intended to aſk her the Favour to do me that Honour, then took my Leave. Mr. *Hove* had ordered the Chair, and would ſee me to my Inn, where we took a Bottle, and parted. Mr. *Hogges* was gone to Bed; I ſpent half an Hour with my Landlord and Landlady, and gave them a full Account of what paſſed at Mrs. *Hove*'s, and of the Appointment at the Hall the next Day. Mrs. *Palmer* aſked me, if Miſs *Hove* was to be my Partner again; I told her ſhe

Digitized by Google

ſhe was, having done me the Honour to lay her Commands on me for that purpoſe. This Queſtion, with ſome other Obſervations, I made on her Conduct, ſtrengthened me in the Opinion of my being pretty much in her Favour; therefore uſed all Methods poſſible to let her know I was deſerving her Eſteem.

The next Day I met the Company according to Appointment, went to pay my Reſpects to them, to Mrs. *Hove* in particular, begging her Leave to take my Partner, which ſhe politely granted, joining our Hands; I bowed, and thanked her, telling her, if I had a Fortune worthy Miſs *Hove*, I ſhould think myſelf the happieſt Man living, if the Parſon of the Pariſh had done ſo much; at which the Mother and Daughter ſmiled, and gave me Thanks. We left the Mother, and went to ſit where we could talk with more Freedom. As ſoon as the Muſick began to play, the Company went to the Dancing-room; Lord and Lady *Peters* ſoon appeared, welcomed the Company in a polite manner; the Lady *Peters* began the *French* Dances as the Day before; but firſt danced a ſhort Minuet with the Gentlemen, as the Lord *Peters* did with the Ladies. I had the Honour to dance with her Ladyſhip, and conducted her to her Seat. Here my Dancing gained me Applauſe, which did not diſpleaſe me, though ſoon after I expected to be brought into a Quarrel about it. There was a young troubleſome Gentleman from *Chelmsford*, who came and ſat by me, and addreſſed himſelf in this Manner, in the Preſence of Miſs *Hove*: Sir, ſays he, here is a great deal of good Dancing: I ſaid, it was true, and that (if poſſible) the joyful Occaſion deſerved better: Yes, Sir, replied he, and better Company too, but I really think you dance very well for a Trooper; and I really think, ſaid I, you dance very ill for a Gentleman, if you

are

Digitized by Google

are one: One! Sir, ſaid he, it is very well known here who I am; it is pretty well known too that I am a Trooper, and ſhall endeavour to behave as a Gentleman, but this is not a proper Place to talk farther on this Subject; then I turned to my Partner: Sir, ſays he, you quarter at *Palmer*'s: You ſeem, Sir, replied I, to know more of me than I do of you; I quarter at the *Swan* Inn at *Ingateſtone*; my Name is *Peter Drake*; I belong to the Marquis of *Harwich*'s Troop; if you have any Deſire to know more, you'll certainly hear of me there, but do not be long winded. He ſwore a great Oath, I ſhould ſoon hear from him, and left us. Miſs *Hove* told me, he was known to be a quarrelſome Gentleman, much hated about *Chelmsford*, and prayed me not to mind him. I aſſured her, if he was ſatisfied, I would give myſelf no farther Trouble, having told him my Mind; ſhe was pleaſed to ſay I did ſo, and to the Purpoſe; that he had nothing to boaſt of.

French Dances being over, all Partners joined and went to Country Dances until eleven, when Mrs. *Hove* came, and civilly begged my Pardon for coming to take my Partner away, as they were going to retire. I told her, as ſhe did me the Honour to truſt her Daughter to my Care, ſhe had a Right to demand her when ſhe pleaſed, but prayed her to let her reſt to cool herſelf, as ſhe was pretty warm. Mr. *Hove*, with his Partner, and the reſt of the Company that came from his Houſe, joined us, and we all went to the Side-board Room to take ſome Refreſhment; then I handed Mrs. *Hove* and her Daughter to the Chariot, and took my Leave for that Night.

I went to my Quarters, glad of getting home ſo ſoon, to enjoy a little of Mrs. *Palmer*'s Company. My Officer, Landlord, Landlady, and I ſupped

Digitized by Google

ſupped, and ſat together till two o'Clock, which Time I ſpent in ogling Mrs. *Palmer*.

Mr. *Hove* came to me by ten next Morning, with Intent to take me with him to Breakfaſt. I told him, I could not ſtir from home, that I expected Company, and hoped he would excuſe me. He ſwore he was certain I ſhould be diſappointed, for my Company would not come. I ſaid, that muſt be their Fault; as I had much rather it might be ſo, than they ſhould not find me at home. He ſaid, he knew it was *Smith* I expected, meaning the Gentleman with whom I had the Words, his Siſter having told him the whole Story, how ill he behaved, and how well I anſwered him; and ſaid he would lay twenty Pounds *Smith* would not come near me, nor appear any more, whilſt I ſtaid in that Country, which proved very true, for I never ſaw him more. I told Mr. *Hove* that I was very eaſy about it, but would not however ſtir out that Day, praying he would preſent my humble Reſpects to Mrs *Hove* and Family; and that I would do myſelf the Honour to breakfaſt with her the next Morning. He told me he would expect me, and took his Leave. I was glad to have the Day to myſelf to ſpend with Mrs. *Palmer*, in order to find how her Pulſe beat. She was no way ſhy, but ſtill avoided as much as poſſible being alone with me, though otherways merry and familiar. I gave her now and then ſome Hints of the Reſpect I had for her, which ſhe ſeemed not to underſtand, and would only ſay ſhe was obliged to me, and that her Huſband and ſhe had a great Regard for me.

The Diſpute with Mr. *Smith*, and his Behaviour was the Town Talk for a Week or more. My Fellow Troopers being at Dinner, I went to ſee them, and ordered each a Quart of Ale. Mr. *Hogges* and I dined with the Landlord and Landlady, and ſpent

Digitized by Google

the Evening together with ſome of the Neighbours at Lue, a Game much played in that Country. The next Day, according to Promiſe, I went to breakfaſt with Mrs. *Hove*, and ſpent the whole Day there. In the Evening, playing at Whiſt, Miſs *Hove* happened to be my Partner, which cauſed a little Mirth, and drew ſome Banters on that young Lady, who bore them without being the leaſt out of Countenance. We ſettled a Meeting for the *Monday* following at the Hall, at five in the Afternoon, then I took my Leave, and went home.

This being on *Thurſday*, I had almoſt four Days to purſue my Deſign on Mrs. *Palmer*, and found her (as I thought) inclinable to favour my Intention. On the *Monday*, after Breakfaſt, while ſhe was removing the Tea Equipage, I told her I had ſomething material to acquaint her with, and begged ſhe would indulge me with ten Minutes of her Company in any Part of the Houſe ſhe ſhould think proper, and that I would for ever acknowledge the Favour. She told me ſhe would conſider on it, and let me know the next Day. I thanked her; and thought I had now made a great Progreſs, that my Wiſhes were near compleat, and was extraordinary chearful the reſt of the Day, and fancied that Mrs. *Palmer* was ſo too.

The Time appointed drawing near, I went to the Hall, where I had not been long, before Mr. *Hove*, attended by the two young Ladies, came; I went and paid my Reſpects to them, took my Partner, ſpent the Evening in dancing as uſual, until eleven o'Clock; when the Company broke up, I handed my Partner to her Chair, and went home to Bed.

The next Morning as ſoon as Breakfaſt was over, I put Mrs. *Palmer* in mind of her Promiſe; ſhe told me, ſmiling, ſhe had not forgot, and that as ſhe had

Digitized by Google

had an Intereſt in it, ſhe would be as good as her Word. There was a Clock in the Parlour; ſhe deſired that as ſoon as it ſhould ſtrike Twelve, I would go up the great Stairs, and that ſhe would meet me in the Dining-room; I ſtaid better than half an Hour, then went up Stairs to the Dining-room, and Mrs. *Palmer* came in at the other End from an adjacent Apartment. I went briſkly up to her with intent to ſalute her, which ſhe prevented, by putting out both her Hands, ſaying, Hands off, Sir, or I will not ſtay a Moment; I then deſiſted. She ſaid, now Sir, you may if you pleaſe diſcloſe this Secret you ſo earneſtly requeſted this Meeting for, and be brief, for I cannot ſtay. I told her, ſhe might juſt ſtay her own time, that I had her Reputation at heart as much as herſelf; but in ſhort, that I loved her more than I could expreſs; that I requeſted this Meeting to make this Declaration, which proceeded from the Sincerity of my Heart; and now that ſhe knew my Mind, ſhe might make what Uſe ſhe, in her own Prudence, ſhould think fit. She told me, ſhe was ſure it was ſome ſuch Thing I had to ſay, and ſhe would not be leſs ſincere than ſhe believed me to be; aſſuring me, ſhe had as great a Regard for me as I could poſſibly have for her, of which ſhe made no doubt; and to confirm what ſhe ſaid, ſhe declared, that if ſhe was either Maid, or Widow, ſhe did not know the Man ſhe would prefer to me; but as I knew her to be a married Woman, begged I would deſiſt from future Thoughts, or Declarations of Love to her, which could have no other Tendency, but her being my W---re, which I might aſſure myſelf ſhe never would; but any thing elſe that lay in her Power to ſerve me, I might depend on. I would have ſaid ſomething in anſwer, but ſhe went off, ſaying, ſhe had declared her Mind. My Reader may judge what Effect

Digitized by Google

this Declaration had on me, which at once baniſhed all Hopes of Enjoyment, and at the ſame Time, gave me to underſtand, that I was ſtill in her Favour.

I went to my Room, where I ſtaid ſome Time, puzzling my confuſed Thoughts of what had paſſed, and making ſome moral Reflections on the Vileneſs and Baſeneſs of my Conduct, in endeavouring to ſeduce that good Woman, and the prudent Method ſhe took to prevent my making the like Attempt for the future. Then I fell to making Reſolutions; the firſt was, never to talk of Love to Mrs. *Palmer*, this I punctually kept; then promiſed myſelf never more to make Addreſſes to any married Woman; and in ſhort, was then reſolved to begin a new Life. In this Mind I came to the Kitchen, a little diſordered in my Countenance, which no Perſon obſerved but Mrs. *Palmer*, who had cauſed it; ſhe came civilly, and aſked me, if I was well; I told her, that I was a little diſordered in my Stomach, and called for a Gill of Brandy; ſhe ſaid, ſhe had ſome fine Stomach Water, and would bring me a Glaſs of it, which would do me more good; ſhe brought it, and I drank it off to her Health. Thus I ended all Thoughts of making love to Mrs. *Palmer*, though our Friendſhip continued, and I had a greater Regard for her than ever.

Now being out of all Hopes of Succeſs in my Amour, I viſited Mr. *Hove*, and ſome other Gentlemen in the Neighbourhood, that I got acquainted with at Lord *Peters*'s, where I had the Pleaſure of going once or twice a Week; but amongſt theſe Diverſions, a Cloud aroſe, which had like to have fallen heavy on Mrs. *Palmer* and me, by the Villany and Malice of my Fellow Troopers, who being jealous of ſeeing me (as they thought) better treated than they, and more regarded by the Gentlemen in the Neigh-

Digitized by Google

Neighbourhood, began to whiſper among their Acquaintance, that there was ſomething more than ordinary between Mrs. *Palmer* and me; and that poor *Will* (meaning my Landlord) paid for all. This, in a very ſhort Time, being ſpread about the Town, ſoon came to their Ears; and Mr. *Palmer* knowing his Wife's Innocence, and ſhe knowing herſelf to be ſo, only laughed at it, though it gave me great Concern, and I was reſolved to ſpare no Pains to find out where this Scandal ſprung from; but one of the Troopers, named *Jeſſop*, who was the very Man that began all the Miſchief, prevented any farther Enquiry in this matter.

One Day as Mr. *Hogges*, was at the Stable, ſeeing the Horſes taken Care of, I went to him, and in the Preſence of my Fellow Troopers, deſired Leave of him to go to *London* for two or three Days; he told me I might, and ſtay as long as I pleaſed; I ſaid I would walk to *Burntwood*, and there wait for the *Chelmsford* Stage, and go in it to *London*. This was only a Stratagem, which fully anſwered my Ends. I took a clean Shirt in my Pocket, and marched off. I walked a Couple of Miles to a Publick-houſe, where I ſtaid about three Hours, and returned home. I went into the Parlour, where I found my Landlady drying her Eyes. At the Sight of me, ſhe ſobbed and cryed afreſh. I aſked her what was the matter, but ſhe could not utter a Word; there was a young Woman preſent whom I likewiſe aſked, but ſhe would nor could not tell me. About half an Hour after, ſhe being come to a little better Temper, very mildly aſked me, if ever ſhe deſerved the ſcandalous Report I had ſpread about her. This Queſtion having amazed me, I deſired ſhe would explain herſelf: She ſaid ſhe would, aſking me what Grounds I had to boaſt, among my Companions, of a criminal Correſpondence with her; I aſſured her, that if I had

Digitized by Google

been guilty of any ſuch thing, I ſhould be the greateſt Villain breathing; but hoped ſhe had a better Opinion of me. She told me that Mr. *Jeſſop* was her Author, who ſaid, that I was making my daily Brags of the Freedoms we had together, and the Favours I received. I told her, that this was what I ſuſpected, and begged ſhe would not let *Jeſſop* know ſhe had ſaid any thing of it, and that in a Day or two I would clear up this Point to her Satisfaction, and intreated ſhe would reſt ſatisfied until then: This ſhe promiſed, but deſired I might have no Quarrel.

This Day my Fellow Troopers had more of my Company than uſual; I ſupped with them, treated them with Ale, and a Bowl of Punch after Supper; we had Mr. *Palmer*'s Company, but his Wife did not appear, ſo *Jeſſop* thought he had done my Buſineſs. I ſat near him, directed moſt of my Diſcourſe to him, as if I knew nothing of the Matter, and we were very ſociable until we went to Bed.

Next Day turning out fine, after Breakfaſt, I aſked *Jeſſop* if he would take a Walk; with all my heart, ſaid he. We walked into the Fields, along the Side of a Wood, talking of the Time drawing near for our going to *Flanders*. I aſked him, if he knew by what Means this ſcandalous Report was ſpread about Mrs. *Palmer* and me; that it was a baſe Action to villify an honeſt Woman's Reputation in ſo groſs a Manner; adding, that I would give any thing in my Power to know from whence it ſprung, and would leave no Stone unturned to find it out. He ſaid, I was much in the right of it, but he could not ſatisfy me: I told him, he might inform me as well as Mrs. *Palmer*. I then aſked him, if ever I had boaſted to him, or any other Perſon, to his Knowledge, of a criminal Correſpondence held between her and me, or ever bragged of any ſuch Favours conferred upon me by her; he

Digitized by Google

he ſaid he never knew, nor ever heard of any ſuch thing: I aſked him, how he came to tell Mrs. *Palmer* ſo; he ſwore he never did. We had each a good Oak Sappling in our Hands, and Swords by our Sides. I told him, that I was poſitive Mrs. *Palmer* would not belye him; I then hit him a ſmall Stroak, to provoke him to draw; but it had not the deſired Effect, for he ſtill ſwore he never ſaid any ſuch thing. I ſtruck him again, ſwearing, if he would not draw, I would give him a good Beating; but, Coward like, he choſe a ſevere Drubbing, rather than be Man enough to draw his Sword. I then inſiſted on his clearing himſelf publickly of having uttered any ſuch Thing to Mrs. *Palmer*, as he had denied it to me; to which he agreed: We then parted, but he did not return home till Dinner-time. Unluckily for him, and as lucky for me, there happened to be ſome Labourers of the Town in the Wood, unſeen by us, binding of Faggots, they ſaw and heard all that paſſed, and did not fail giving a full Account of the whole Affair, which was ſoon ſpread over the whole Town. Mrs. *Palmer*, who it moſt concerned, heard of it long before Dinner, though I did not know ſhe had had ſo early Intelligence. Mr. *Hogges*, in a merry Mood, told me, that he heard of my Exploit, and that *Jeſſop* deſerved what he had got. No ſooner was Dinner over, than I deſired Mr. *Jeſſop* to come into the Parlour, for I wanted to ſpeak with him; I alſo deſired Mr. *Hogges* to go thither, and then I ſent for Mr. and Mrs. *Palmer*; they being come, I aſked her what Mr. *Jeſſop* had ſaid to her about me. She told me before him and the Company every thing as mentioned above; all which he denied with Imprecations not proper to mention; ſo this Affair ended little to *Jeſſop*'s Credit, and I continued as much in Favour with my

Digitized by Google

Landlord and Landlady as ever, and her Reputation not in the leaſt violated.

Sometime after this as we were at Dinner, there being a Couple of Neighbours and their Wives in Company, my Affair with *Jeſſop* was the chief Subject of their Converſation, in which he was arraigned, tried, and condemned, by the whole Company: This Affair pleaſed Mrs. *Palmer*, who being of a chearful Diſpoſition, ſaid to her Huſband, in a merry Mood, Well, *Will*, all this Talk cannot be helped, I never did, nor ever will deſerve it; for I would have you take care to preſerve your Health (he drank hard) and live long, for if you play the Fool and die, Mr. *Drake* ſhall be my Second, if he pleaſes. Mr. *Palmer* replied, Well, *Beſs*, with all my Heart, you have my Conſent. I returned them Thanks, and wiſhed them long Life to enjoy each other. This Declaration and Conſent cauſed ſome Mirth, and from thence forward, ſhe called me her Second as long as ſhe lived, which was about ſixteen Years. She died about *Michaelmas* 1728.

At my Return from *Flanders*, at the latter End of the Campaign, I paid them another Viſit, and brought them ſome Preſents, which they kindly received. I ſtaid there about a Month, complimenting my Acquaintances in that Neighbourhood, and was kindly received by them all, particularly by Mrs. *Hove* and Family.

I ſhall now reaſſume the Thread of my Story. On the tenth of *March*, there came a Lieutenant of our Regiment to ſee the Quarters cleared, and paid off; his Name was *Seagriff*, or *Seagrove*; he was a moroſe, ill-tempered Man, and I was informed was not beloved by the Regiment. He took a Diſlike to me at firſt Sight, for my appearing clean; but as ſoon as he heard me ſpeak to Mr. *Hogges*, he aſked him, who I was; he informed him, I was a Gentleman

Digitized by Google

Gentleman belonging to the Marquis's Troop. He cried out, G --ds Oons, a Trooper! What's his Name? He told him *Drake*; all this I over-heard. He preſently called me in his ſmooth and genteel Manner, Hear, you *Drake*; I went to him with my Hat in my Hand: Are you a Trooper, ſays he? I told him I had that Honour. How long have you had that Honour? I ſaid about three Months. Are you going to the Play, ſays he? I anſwered him, I knew no Play here to go to. He replied, your Dreſs and powdered Wig is fitter for the Playhouſe, than to take care of your Horſe. Sir, ſays I, I have no Horſe to take care of, when I have, I ſhall dreſs accordingly, and do my Duty. Mr. *Hogges* told him, that the Marquis indulged me from keeping a Horſe until we went to *Flanders*. I made him a low Bow, and then went off.

At Night he ordered a large Bowl of Punch, invited Mr. *Hogges*, and all the Troopers quartered in the Houſe, me excepted, to take ſhare of it, and ſpend the Evening with him: This did not give me the leaſt Concern, though he thought otherwiſe. There was at this Time, and had been there about ten Days, a young Woman from *Colcheſter*, ſaid to be a Relation to Mr. *Wallis*, who kept the *White-Hart* Inn and Poſthouſe in that Town, of whom ſome Obſervations have been made before. This Lady had little to recommend her but her Youth, for ſhe did not exceed Nineteen, but was a good plump Country Girl: I often had the Favour to ſit and converſe with her, but had no Inclination to enter into any Love-intrigue; if I had, I believe it would not have been diſagreeable to her. Mr. *Seagrove* having ingroſſed, and excluded me from my Company as above obſerved, I ordered a Pint of Arrack to be made into Punch, and invited this Lady to partake of it, which ſhe readily agreed to. One of the Troopers ſeeing this,

Digitized by Google

this, went and acquainted Mr. *Seagrove* (who had not yet ſeen the Lady) with it; he ſoon diſpatched Mrs. *Palmer*, who, with her Huſband, were in his Company, to give his Compliments to the Lady, and tell her, he deſired her Company. Mrs. *Palmer* came with a ſmiling Countenance, to deliver her Meſſage; ſhe begged my Pardon for coming to take my Company from me, but that ſhe was ſent, and then delivered her Meſſage: I told her, ſhe was welcome, but thought it a little unkind, as I had but one Companion, to be deprived of her; yet, I would lay the Lady under no Reſtraint, ſhe might act as ſhe thought proper. The Lady, without further Compliment, bluntly bid her tell him, ſhe was engaged, and would not go. This nettled my Commander pretty much; however he, like a true Soldier, did not give over for being repulſed; he ſent to the Charge once or twice again, but to as little purpoſe.

Next Morning he thought to be before-hand with me; breakfaſting with Mrs. *Palmer* and the Lady, he attacked her with all the fair Words he was maſter of to engage her Company with him and Mrs. *Palmer* that Evening; but ſhe told him ſhe was engaged: He aſked her, if it was with the ſame Company ſhe was with the preceding Night? She deſired him not to enter into Particulars, for that ſhe was engaged, and that was enough. Afterwards we ſupped, and ſpent the Evening together, for which the poor Girl paid dearly. The next Day Mr. *Wallis* came to ſee his Couſin from *Colcheſter*, and Mr. *Seagrove* engaged him and his Couſin to Supper, which was agreeably accepted by Mr. *Wallis*: After Supper, Mr. *Seagrove* aſked her, how ſhe liked the *Iriſhman*; ſhe aſked him, what *Iriſhman* (for ſhe really did not know me to be one) why, Madam, ſays he, the *Iriſhman* you ſpent the two laſt Evenings with, rather than ſpend them

them in Company with Mrs. *Palmer*'s Huſband and me; but I confeſs he is a clever Fellow. This anſwered the Deſign it was ſpoke for, which was to make a Breach between the poor Girl and *Wallis*, who mortally hated the *Iriſh*; the young Woman retired, which gave Mr. *Seagrove* an Opportunity to throw out all the ill-natured Invectives that Malice could deviſe. *Wallis* believed all he ſaid, and was ſo enraged, that he went with all the Fury imaginable to his Couſin, and bid her prepare herſelf to go the next Day for *London*; that he would have nothing to ſay to her, or ever ſee her more: She told him (as I was informed after) that ſhe was very eaſy about the matter. Soon after he came into the Kitchen, his Paſſion not being abated, where I happened to be. He gave me abundance of foul Language, not forgetting the vulgar Reflections on my Country; telling me, he was as good a Man as me, and that if he was not troubled with the Gout, he would make me know it: I aſſured him, if he had been a ſound Man, and had the full Uſe of his Limbs, I would try that, by giving him a good Beating, which was what he deſerved, for uſing me in ſuch a manner, that had no Quarrel with him. With ſome Difficulty he was perſuaded to go to his Company, but not till *Seagrove* came for him, who gave me a ſtern Look, and ſhaking his Head, ſaid, Well, well.

The next Day Mr. *Wallis* did not forget his Promiſe of ſending his Couſin to *London*, which he did in the *Chelmsford* Stage Coach; ſo the poor Girl was packed off, and *Wallis* went back to *Colcheſter*. Thus ended this Affair, which really gave me ſome Concern, though ſhe ſeemed in full Spirits, when taking her Leave. What was ſuſpected before by a great many, was by the Behaviour of *Wallis*, made evident, that ſhe was no Relation of his, but kept by him only as a Miſtreſs.

In

Digitized by Google

In two Days after, all the Troopers received Orders to ſettle their Accompts with their reſpective Landlords, and that Mr. *Seagrove*, the commanding Officer, ſhould go round their Quarters, and ſee them paid. I went to ſettle with Mr. *Palmer*, who generouſly gave me a Receipt in full, telling me, that I had been a good Cuſtomer, had cauſed Money to be ſpent in the Houſe, and that he would poſitively take nothing for my Diet: Though this was a great Compliment from an Inn-keeper, yet it did not ſave me above twenty or thirty Shillings; for, by Act of Parliament, we were to pay but Sixpence *per Diem*, and for all Extraordinaries to pay ready Money. When we came to produce our Accompts, in Preſence of the Landlord, to Mr. *Seagrove*, I only ſhewed him my Receipt; he aſked my Landlord, if he was ſatisfied; he told him he was, and had no farther Demands on me. Mr. *Seagrove*, with a ſeeming Reluctancy, paid me my full Pay, at fourteen Shillings *per* Week, amounting to between four and five Pounds.

Our Rout and marching Orders being come, we began our March from *Ingateſtone* on the ſixteenth Day of *March*, to a Place called *Oakley*, near the Sea, within two or three Miles of *Harwich*, where there was good Hay, Oats, and other neceſſary Conveniencies for ourſelves and Horſes, until the Tranſports and Convoy ſhould be ready. This Place was famous for long Puddings, which cauſed a Saying, *That at* Oakley *we ſhould feed on good Pudding by the Yard.* Here we ſtaid about three Weeks, in which Time nothing worth relating happened. There joined with us a Gentleman that had been a Lieutenant of Foot in the Queen's Service in *Spain*, but had been broke there for ſome Miſdemeanor. He inliſted himſelf for a Trooper, and was a Man of Courage, but quarrelſome, and full of himſelf, which cauſed frequent Broils and Diſputes

Digitized by Google

Diſputes with moſt of the Troopers, and with ſome of the Town's People.

He often threw Reflections upon my Country, to provoke me to a Quarrel, which I avoided as long as we ſtaid here, though (by the bye) it made me ſuſpected by ſome to be a Coward. He would often ſay, that I had not *Jeſſop* to deal with, which gave me no manner of Concern, knowing myſelf, and judging if ever we ſhould fall out, which I expected, and any Misfortune ſhould happen, the Blame would moſtly be laid on him. I never would converſe with him when I could avoid it, which ſtrengthened him, and others in the Opinion that I was afraid of him. However, I paſſed my Time as agreeably as I could until every thing was ready for our Embarkation, when we received Orders to march for *Harwich*, where every thing was ready to embark our Horſes, which we finiſhed by four o'Clock, and were all ordered to go on board that Evening, there being no other Quarters provided for us. We lay on the Boards, or the Cable between Decks, which was a hard Lodging for us, but it agreed better with me, than with any of my Companions.

The next Day we were put on the Ship's Proviſions, which was none of the beſt; Complaint was made thereof to the Court againſt the chief Commiſſioner, which was ſhortly remedied. Thoſe who had Money, went every Day on Shore, none being debarred that Liberty. As there was an Ordinary of three or four Diſhes of Meat, ready at one o'Clock every Day, all Comers were welcome, paying Six-pence *per* Head. Here Mr. *Hogges* and I went conſtantly to dine, and ſeveral other Troopers, among whom was our Hero above ſpoke of, whoſe Name was *Colliſter*. When Dinner was over, and the Cloth taken away, Box and Dice were ſet on the Table at the Company's Requeſt, for

Digitized by Google

for them that were disposed to divert themselves at Hazard. This being soon known, many came that did not dine, and several of the Town's People came likewise to try their Fortunes; so that in a few Days it became a perfect Gaming-house. I was no ways unlucky, for I won sufficient to discharge my Expences, and pay me for my Trouble, during my Stay here. One Day there was a Dispute arose about a Bet, which is generally decided by the Company; every body but myself being asked from the Caster, the Question at last was put to me, I gave my Opinion as I really thought it was, and as was judged by the Company to be so. Mr. *Collister*, to shew his Manhood and Breeding together, told me I lyed like an *Irish* Scoundrel: I replied, that I knew no Scoundrel in the Regiment, except he was one, and that this was Language I neither gave, nor would take; so without further Ceremony broke his Head with an Oak Sappling; the Company interfered, and prevented further Mischief for that Day. We played on, and he was often told by most of the Company, how much he was in the wrong, but it had little Effect on him, for he assured them he had not done with me yet. He left no Stone unturned to meet me in a convenient Place, neither did I go a Yard out of my Way to shun him.

Two Days after, as I was taking a Walk at one End of the Town, near the Fields, he stepped out of a Publick-house, unseen by me, and clapped me on the Shoulder, swearing a great Oath, that he had caught me at last, and that he would, before we parted, try what Mettle I was made of. In short, we did not walk above forty Yards before we drew, and decided this Matter. We had several Thrusts at each other; at last, thinking I had a good Opportunity, I made a full Thrust at him, when he, at the same Instant, altered his Position, making

Digitized by Google

making a Thruſt in Secoon, as the Maſters call it, and received the Thruſt I intended at his Body, under his Eye, through the Cheek, which came out under the Tip of his Ear: He ſwore he had it, I told him not where I intended it, but much good might do him with it; he ſaid he was ſatisfied; I anſwered, ſo was I; then bid him deliver his Sword, which he did; I went to him, and tied his Handkerchief to mine, to ſtop the Blood, then I went with him to a Surgeon, had him dreſſed, and parted good Friends, never quarrelling with him after. This made Noiſe enough, and was the chief Subject talked of among the military Gentlemen for ſome Days. Mr. *Seagrove* endeavoured, as much as in him lay, to fix the Blame upon me, and threatened to confine me on board; but Mr. *Hogges*, and others, aſſured him, that *Colliſter* was intirely in the wrong, and that if I ſhould be any ways puniſhed, the Marquis, who he knew to have a great Regard for me, would take it very ill; ſo I eſcaped that Danger.

About the middle of *April*, every thing being ready, and a Convoy of five Men of War being arrived, the whole Fleet ſet ſail; we were two Nights at Sea, and the third Day in the Evening came to an Anchor at *Helvoetſluys*; the next Day our Ship ſailed for *Williamſtadt*, where we landed our Horſes, and were quartered on the Boors, or Farmers in that Neighbourhood. We ſtaid about a Fortnight to refreſh ourſelves, and then marched acroſs the Country to *Ghent*: there we ſtaid two Nights, and then marched to *Tournay*, the Regiment, and ſome few other Troops being cantooned in that Neighbourhood. The Marquis, who came from *England* ſome Days before, met, and reviewed us here, and the new Horſes were diſtributed. His Lordſhip did me the Honour to welcome me to *Flanders*, ſhaking me by the Hand, and aſked me

Digitized by Google

me in *French*, which he ſpoke very well, if I had not been ill uſed by Lieutenant *Seagrove*, and the Reaſon of it. I aſſured his Lordſhip, that I had received no ill Treatment from him, or any other Perſon worth troubling him with. All he ſaid was, he thought I dreſſed too well, fitter to go to the Play, than to rub a Horſe's Heels. He told me it was kind of me to ſay ſo; but he had an Account of the whole Affair ſent him about *Jeſſop* and *Colliſter* before he ſet out from *London*; that he approved of my Behaviour from firſt to laſt; and that my getting the better of the latter gave him great Pleaſure. Then he deſired me to take my Choice of all the Horſes: there was a handſome Gelding that one of the Quarter-maſters intended to put into the Hands of a favourite old Trooper, who was a reputed good Groom, and very careful of his Horſe, *&c.* this Horſe I told my Lord I ſhould like, if not diſpoſed of to better Hands. He ordered one of his Grooms (when the Horſes were diſtributing) to take that Gelding to his Stable, without ſaying any more to me at that Time, which I looked upon as a Refuſal, and it ſhocked me a little.

The next Day we marched to join the Regiment incamped at a Village within two Leagues of *Liſle*; the Marquis's Quarters, was at a large Farm-houſe, where there was good Convenience for himſelf and Retinue; as ſoon as we came to this Camp, my Lord ordered me to deliver the Horſe I rode on to the Quarter-maſter, and go with *Dupan* (his Gentleman) to his Quarters, for he wanted to ſpeak with me there. This ſomewhat ſurpriſed me, firſt to be commanded to deliver up my Horſe, and then to go to his Quarters; I could not tell what to think of it; but when I came to his Quarters, I ſaw in a handſome Barn, a Table laid with twelve Covers, a fine Side-board of Plate, Glaſſes, *&c.* and Dinner preparing. In about two Hours,

my

Digitized by Google

my Lord came with a great Number of Officers; I put myſelf in the Way to be ſeen by him, for I longed to know what I had to truſt to: As ſoon as my Lord ſaw me, he ſent *Dupain* to acquaint me, that when the Company was gone, he wanted to ſpeak with me, ordering him to ſhew a Reſpect for me. There was one of the Quarter-maſters of the Troop, who took Care of my Lord's Equipage, and acted as Houſe Steward; with him and *Dupain* I dined at the ſecond Table. The Company ſtaying, I had no Opportunity of ſeeing his Lordſhip that Night.

The next Morning, as ſoon as my Lord was up, he ſent for me, and taking me by the Hand, ſaid, he was glad to ſee me; that the Horſe I had fixed upon, he had ordered to his Stable, not to deprive me of him, but to have him taken Care of, until the Army joined, which he thought would be in a few Days, and then I ſhould have him. I thanked his Lordſhip, and aſſured him I would take great Care of him. He farther added, I might continue with him as his Quarter-maſter, until marching Orders came, and then I muſt join the Regiment, and do my Duty. I told his Lordſhip, he had exempted me a long while, that I was willing and ready, whenever he laid his Commands, to obey.

In a few Days after, Orders came for all the ſmall Corps, that were cantooned about that Neighbourhood, to march to St. *Amann*, a few Leagues from *Tournay*, where the Army was to join. The Day we began our March, I mounted my black Gelding, joined the Regiment, and commenced Duty: We were not long here, before we had an Account of the Duke of *Ormond*'s being on his Way from *Holland* to join the Army. Here kind Providence favoured me once more; for Captain *Crow*, a Quarter-maſter to the Duke, was at a Loſs for the *French* Lan-

Digitized by Google

guage, which was neceſſary for his Poſt. He applied to Captain *Feurry*, an Acquaintance of mine, who informed him, there was a Gentleman in the Marquis of *Harwich*'s Troop, whoſe Name was *Drake*, a perfect Maſter of that Language, and believed would intirely anſwer his Purpoſe, as he was qualified, not only to ſpeak *French*, but many other Languages. He gladly embraced this Opportunity, and took a ride with my Friend to the Regiment, when Captain *Feurry* ſent for me from a Sutler's. I immediately went, and was glad to ſee him: After ſome time ſpent in different Converſation, they acquainted me with their Buſineſs, deſiring to know, if I would accept his Offer, with a Salary of 5*s*. a Day for my Trouble. I thanked them, but that I had two Objections to get over; the firſt was, I thought myſelf not ſufficiently qualified for the Employ, the other, that I was not my own Maſter, being engaged in the Service: Captain *Crow* told me, he would venture my firſt Objection, if I could get over the latter; and if I thought it neceſſary, he would wait on the Marquis to get Leave for me. I was much obliged to him, but acquainted him, that as the Marquis was my Friend, I would firſt apply to him myſelf, being in hopes I ſhould not be refuſed, and that in two Days I would wait on him, or Captain *Feurry*, and let them know the Marquis's Anſwer: This was agreed on, and they then took their Leave.

They were no ſooner gone, than I went to the Quarter-maſter, and to Mr. *Hogges*, the Corporal, who were both my Friends, and had my Lord's Ear pretty much: I told them the Offer juſt made me, and my Intention to apply to the Marquis for Leave, hoping they would put in a good Word, if there ſhould be any occaſion. This they promiſed me: I then waited on the Marquis, which I generally

Digitized by Google

nerally did once a Day when not on Duty, and frankly told him the Offer that was made me; that it was very advantageous for me, and that his Lordſhip's Goodneſs had always ſhewed a great Regard to my Intereſt, which emboldened me to acquaint him with it, and beg his Permiſſion to accept of it; aſſuring his Lordſhip, if there ſhould be the leaſt Appearance of Action, I would immediately return to my Standard, which no Intereſt ſhould prevent; he told me, ſmiling, he would conſider of it, and let me know.

The next Day he ſent for me, and told me, that as he had a great Regard for my Intereſt, he could not refuſe me Leave to accept of the Offer; that he conſidered it would be neceſſary for me to have a Horſe in my new Employment, he therefore gave me Leave to have my own, charging me to take great Care of him, which I aſſured his Lordſhip I would; telling him I ſhould have a good Opportunity of ſo doing, as I ſhould moſtly be at the Duke's Quarters, where there would be no want of Forage. I ſaid, I hoped to have another Advantage from this kind Indulgence of his Lordſhip, *viz.* that what I acquainted him with laſt Winter, about being recommended to the Duke of *Ormond*, and his Grace's Promiſe to my Brother to provide for me, I ſhould then be at hand to put him in mind of it. My Lord agreed with me in this, and bid me not neglect it, wiſhing me good Succeſs.

The next Day I went to Captain *Crow*, to acquaint him that the Marquis had given me Leave; at which he expreſſed much Satisfaction, ſaying, he expected Captain *Feurry* every Minute, and that we ſhould dine together. I was glad of this Opportunity; for I was willing that *Feurry* ſhould be witneſs to whatever Agreement might be made. It being near Dinner-time, we went to the Sutler's,

Digitized by Google

where there was a good Half Crown Ordinary, and Captain *Feurry* ſoon joined us. After Dinner, Captain *Crow* aſked the Landlord, if there was any body in Sot's Hole, who anſwered in the Negative. He ordered him to ſend in a Flaſk of Champaign, and a Bottle of Burgundy. Here Captain *Crow* and I ſoon came to an Ecclairciſment, which was bound with two Louis d'Or. He told me, that my greateſt Fatigue would be on a *Saturday*, when I muſt collect his Rents from the Sutlers, and other Dealers, who ſold any Thing at the Duke's Quarters, of which I ſhould have an exact Liſt, and what each muſt pay. This Part of my Office I liked very well, judging at once that ſomething would ſtick to my Fingers, in which I was not miſtaken. Another Part of my Buſineſs was, whenever the Army marched, I was to go before, as I ſhould be directed, and mark the moſt convenient Houſes for the General and his Retinue. This alſo brought ſome Griſt to my Mill, as will ſhortly be ſeen: We ſat drinking and talking until the Evening Gun was fired, when we parted all ſatisfied. At taking my Leave, I told Captain *Crow*, that I would wait on him the next Day, or the Day following, without fail, to receive his Orders, and enter on my new Employ; he ſaid, that would do very well. I then returned to the Regiment.

The next Day I waited on the Marquis, and gave him an Account of what I had done, and that I had promiſed to be with Captain *Crow* the next Day, to enter on my Office; but I ſhould be ready and willing to return to the Regiment whenever his Lordſhip thought proper. In taking my Leave, he did me the Honour to ſhake me by the Hand, and wiſh'd me well. The Quarter Maſter was willing I ſhould think myſelf partly indebted to him for the Favour of having my Horſe, by telling me, he

Digitized by Google

he ſpoke to the Marquis for that Purpoſe; I thank'd him, at the ſame time inviting him and Corporal *Hogges*, to take a parting Bottle. I went the next Day well mounted to Captain *Crow*, who received me kindly, ſaying, I ſhould have but little to do until the Army march'd: However, idle as I was for a while, I had the Title of Deputy-Quarter-Maſter to the Duke, which was of Service to me for ſome time.

Orders being given for the Army to move, I had a Serjeant and ſixteen Men under my Care, with whom I was ordered to march by Break of Day, to a pleaſant Village, call'd *Sollem*, where the Duke's Head Quarters were to be fixed. Here I began the Exerciſe of my Office, by writing *Ormond*, on the Houſes, Barns and Stables, for his Grace and Retinue. This was performed with a Lump of Chalk; there was a pretty neat Houſe near the Church, on which I put my Chalk Manuſcript; here I found a very ſavoury Smell, as from a good Kitchen; I went in, and ſaw a Clergyman in his Suttan, or long black Coat, ſitting aſtride a Form, with a courſe Towel for a Table Cloth, and an excellent Soop before him; without ſaying one Word, I put my Leg over the Form, and fac'd him; having a Caſe with a Silver Spoon and a Fork in my Pocket, I pulled them out, and fell to eating without Invitation: The Prieſt ſeemed ſomewhat ſurprized, but ſaid nothing. I had my Eyes about me, and ſaw in the Chimney Corner, a cover'd Diſh, on a Chaffing-Diſh; as ſoon as the Soop was ended, I prudently and civilly got up, and ſerved that on the Form; there was an old Woman looking on all the Time, ſtanding in a Corner, as if dead. I at laſt broke Silence, telling the Prieſt, in good *French*, that I had dined very well, but wanted Drink. He cried out, in a ſeeming Rapture, Ah! Sir, you ſpeak *French*; I told him I

Digitized by Google

did, and that his Victuals was good, but I ſhould be glad to have it to ſay, that his Drink was ſo too; that ſhall not be long ſo, ſays he, ordering the old Woman to go and bring a Jugg of Beer. As ſoon as ſhe was gone, he told me, that, hearing of our Army marching this Way, he, all the Town's People, and Neighbours thereabouts, had moved their Effects to the Church for Safety. I aſk'd him, if they were not under Contribution; he ſaid they were, and had Safe-guards. I told him they gave themſelves an unneceſſary Trouble, in moving their Goods, for that the *Engliſh* were a more generous Enemy, never touching any thing, where Contribution was paid. By this time the Woman came with the Beer, which was pretty good, we took a a Couple of Glaſſes each; then he aſk'd me to go ſee the Church: As we went, he obſerved *Ormond* written in Chalk, on his, and ſeveral other Doors; he aſk'd the meaning of it, to which I anſwer'd, I mark'd his Houſe for our General to lodge in, and the other Houſes were for his Officers and Attendance; he ſaid his Houſe was no way fit for ſo great a Man; I told him that the Houſe we came from, which I ſuppoſed to be his, was neat and clean, and that I was almoſt ſure the Duke would lye there, and prove a good Lodger; he ſaid it was his Houſe, that he had been Pariſh Prieſt here theſe twenty Years, and never ſeen the Enemy there before. When we came to the Church-yard, I ſaw it crowded with poor People, and Cattle of all Sorts; the Church was full of Beds and other Furniture, with great Numbers of Sacks of Corn. Here the honeſt Prieſt gave me Share of two Bottles of Burgundy, he took out of a Hamper that had a Padlock on it, of which he had the Key; we ſat on a large Cheſt of his for beter than an Hour, drinking our two Bottles.

At

Digitized by Google

At our Return, the Prieſt was amazed, to ſee the Duke's Kitchen Tents already pitched in his Orchard; thirty or forty Cooks, Scullions, Turnſpits, and other Servants, buſy at their ſeveral Employments, ſome ſpitting all Sorts of Fleſh and Foul in Seaſon, others making Pies, and Tarts, and others making Fires, and fixing Boilers and Ovens. In ſhort, in leſs than three Hours, there was as grand a Dinner ſerved up, as if it had come from the Markets of *London*, or *Paris*: The Prieſt declared, that if he had not ſeen it, he could never have believed that ſuch a Dinner could be had in a Camp, even for the great *Louis Quatorz*, *Lewis* the Fourteenth. When we went into the Houſe, we found the Duke's Field Bed fix'd in a Ground Room, that looked into a pretty Flower Garden; then we went to ſee the Dining Tents, in the largeſt of which, was a Table of twenty-four Covers, in another a Table of eighteen, and in a third one of twelve, all looking into each other, with a fourth for the Muſick to play, while his Grace was at Dinner. The Prieſt was as much charmed as ſurprized at what he ſaw; I aſk'd him, if he did not think, I had got a good Lodger for him; he thank'd me, telling me laughing, that he believed I ſhould make him full amends, for the Surprize and Fright I put him in at my firſt coming; but that he thought me very inhuman, as I could talk *French*, to ſit ſo long with him without ſpeaking; to this I made no other Excuſe, than, when a Man is hungry, and good Victuals before him, there is no Time to be loſt, Delays being dangerous.

We ſtaid here about ten Days, his Grace ſhewing a great deal of Reſpect to the Prieſt, for he dined and ſupped with him every Day, and often ſat with him when at Leiſure. The Night before the Army marched, the Duke made him a handſome Preſent; this he told me, but did not name

Digitized by Google

the Sum, and at taking my Leave of him, he ſqueezed a Louis d'Or into my Hand for a Pair of Gloves.

The Army being to march the next Morning, a Sergeant and ſixteen Men were appointed for me as before; I joined them at twelve o'Clock, and marched to *Chatty Cambriſy*, where the Army was to encamp. Here the Biſhop of *Cambray*, had a handſome Palace. I arrived with my Guard at the Town Gate, which was wide open, by Break of Day; as I was entering at one End, there was briſk Firing, and a ſmart Skirmiſh at the other, between a ſmall Detachment of *French*, who had been quartered here, and were drove out, by a Detachment of *German* or *Dutch* Dragoons, for there was no *Engliſh*. I march'd towards the Place of Action with my Guard, but all was over; the Dragoons ſtill purſuing the Enemy; we ſaw ſixteen *Frenchmen* lying dead in the Street, not quite cold, with their Cloaths on; there were alſo three Horſes killed, and their Riders deſperately wounded. I returned immediately, and mark'd a good Number of the beſt Houſes, in the Market Place, at the Bottom of which, the Biſhop's Palace ſtood, in which the Duke took up his Quarters. Here I had it in my Power (with Captain *Crow*'s Leave) to oblige ſome Officers of Rank with Houſes, who were unprovided, as I had ſome to ſpare, by which I got ſome Preſents and Friends. However, I did not forget myſelf, for I took my Quarters at the *Canteen*; this is a Tavern that pays no Duty, the Keeper not being allowed to ſell any Wine but to the Clergy and Military Men. Theſe have Wine at the beſt Hand, the Inhabitants not daring, on ſevere Penalties, to reſort thither, unleſs invited by an Officer or Soldier, which is often done; but this *French* Regulation was broke through by our coming

Digitized by Google

coming; and every Body was free, of which Liberty the Town's People made a good Uſe.

The next Day after our Arrival here, Notice was given by beat of Drum, that all Sutlers and other Dealers, who had Stands, or were willing to have Stands, at the Head-Quarters, ſhould, within eight and forty Hours, be at the Place appointed by ſaid Notice, give in their Names to the Quarter-Maſter, or his Deputy, and agree for their reſpective Standings; and any Sutler, Shop-keeper, *&c.* that did not come in, according to ſaid Notice, or who ſhould pitch, or fix Tents or Shops, *&c.* and ſhould be found ſtanding after the Expiration of the ſaid eight and forty Hours, ſhould be excluded from the Liberty of Dealing, or ſetting up at the Head-Quarters, for the Remainder of the Campaign. I drew up the above ſhort Notice, and delivered it to Captain *Crow*, for his Approbation, who ordered it to be publiſhed. This had the deſired Effect, for as he and I, or one of us, always attended at the Place appointed, within the limited time, we got a liſt of near three hundred Tenants. The Captain made up the Rent Rolls of what every one was to pay *per* Week, of which he gave me Copies, ſo that I had little to do but take my Pleaſure, except *Saturdays*, when I was always buſy in collecting the Rents, which generally amounted to between twelve and fourteen Pounds.

This was a pretty Income to the Quarter-Maſter, out of which I had five and thirty Shillings only, excluſive of Wind-falls. It was remarkable that all the Time I was in this Poſt, the Captain and I never had the leaſt Diſpute, he ſeeming always well pleaſed with what I did. One Day as he, Captain *Fuerry* and I were at Dinner, he ſaid in my Preſence, that he found by Experience, the Character he had of me was true, for he really believed,

Digitized by Google

ed, there was not a Man in the Army, could ſo well and readily go thorough what I undertook, and that he never had the leaſt Reaſon to complain. This gave me ſome Pleaſure, and not a little to my Friend.

There was within three Doors of the *Canteen*, (my Quarters,) a Silver Smith's Houſe, on which I had wrote *Ormond*, where there was no one yet quartered. I ſaw the Man ſtanding at the Door, and went to him, ſaying, I was come to look at his Lodgings, for I expected the Officer I had taken it for that Night, or the next Day. By this Step, I expected he would offer me a Pair of Gloves to excuſe him from having a Lodger; but, I ſoon altered my Scheme; for as he conducted me to look at the Apartments, there was ſitting in the Dining room, two very pretty Women, the one his Wife, the other her Siſter; they both got up and received me very politely. When the Huſband informed them what I came about, the Wife begged, that if they muſt have an Officer, it would oblige them much, if I would ſend one who could ſpeak *French*; I told her, I feared ſhe laid too hard a Taſk on me, but would uſe my Endeavours. Says the Siſter, how ſilly ſhall we look, to have a Gentleman we can't underſtand? The Huſband brought a Bottle of fine white Wine, and ſome Biſcuits; the Ladies took a Glaſs each, and the Landlord and I finiſhed it. At taking my Leave they preſs'd me to eat ſome Soop with them, at one o'Clock; I thank'd them, ſaying I was engaged, but would do myſelf that Honour another Time. The Ladies repeated their Requeſt, that I might not forget my Promiſe, of ſending one, if poſſible, who could ſpeak *French*; I told them they might depend on my Endeavours.

I went

Digitized by Google

I went home to my Lodging, ſat down in my Room, pauſing, and thinking how I ſhould behave in this Affair. I liked my Lodging at the *Canteen* very well, and, for good Reaſons, I liked the Silver Smith's, it being neat and clean, but much more on Account of the two Siſters, who ſeemed to be as affable and free, as they were handſome. At laſt I hit on a Project to keep both Houſes. There was one *Poe*, who was Adjutant to the Carbineers, then commanded by General *Windham*; *Poe* and I were old Acquaintances, and Bottle Companions. This Gentleman affected much an Huſſar's Dreſs, and provided himſelf with a very rich one, in which he often appeared at the Head Quarters, *&c.* I met him the next Day in this Dreſs, and invited him to take a Bottle at the *Canteen*; juſt as we came there, I ſaw the Silver-ſmith with his Wife, ſtanding at their Door; I ſaluted them with my Hat, ſhaking my Hand, as an item that I would be with them preſently. While the Wine was getting, I begged Mr. *Poe*'s Pardon for a Moment; I went to the Couple, and told them, that was the Gentleman, who was to take up his Quarters there, but that he could not ſpeak one Word of *French*, but as I quarter'd near him, I would often come and be his Interpreter; they thank'd me, but begged if I could help quartering any Perſon on them, that they would not be ungrateful. If I had not ſeen the Ladies, this was what I wanted; but I told them that it was not poſſible; that that Gentleman muſt be quartered there, as I had no other Place fit for him, unleſs I gave him my own. I went away in a ſeeming Hurry, telling them, that the Gentleman would be impatient. *Poe* and I drank a Bottle of Burgundy, then went to the Duke's Quarters, and parted.

In

Digitized by Google

In an Hour afterwards I went to the Silver-ſmiths, bid them prepare the Apartment, for that the Officer was to come that Night. But, Sir, ſays the Wife, that Gentleman is an Huſſar, and they are ſad People, we would rather have any body than one of them; I am frightned out of my Wits, pray in God's Name do not ſend him here. I aſſure you Madam, he is no Huſſar, he is an *Engliſh* Officer of Horſe, and a very civil Gentleman; you will be very well pleaſed when you come to be acquainted with him. It is impoſſible we ſhould ever be acquainted, as we cannot ſpeak to each other, and therefore pray, you'll think of ſome Way to make us eaſy, for we do not like him. I told her all that lay in my Power ſhould not be wanting to convince them of this; though I liked my Quarters, at the *Canteen* very well, that if it would be agreeable to them, I would ſend the Officer thither, and come and lodge there myſelf. At this they both cry'd out, in a ſeeming Rapture, that I could not give them more Pleaſure, neither would they forget ſo ſingular a Favour; and really their Countenances ſeemed to confirm their Words. This Point being thus agreed on, I came that Night, took Poſſeſſion of my new Quarters, and ſup'd with my Landlord, Landlady, and her Siſter, who I had not ſeen all the Day before. We ſpent the Evening very agreeable; and as they expreſs'd a Satisfaction for having me, ſo I alſo was as well pleaſed I had made good my Quarters here, as well as at the *Canteen*, where I was not idle.

Poe and I often took a Bottle there, but I never told him one Word of my Scheme, nor the uſe I made of him to fix myſelf in my new Quarters; nor did I ever bring him thither. I told my Landlord at the *Canteen*, my Intention of going to ſleep at his Neighbours was, becauſe it was quiet, and not ſubject to the Noiſe his was, by the frequent Reſort

Digitized by Google

Reſort of Company coming there to drink, which hindered my Reſt. At this he ſeemed ſtartled, and deſired I would not leave him, as there was a pretty ſnug Room at the back Part of the Houſe, where I might be free from any Diſturbance, and if I pleaſed he would ſhew it to me. I told him, he need not give himſelf the Trouble, as I intended to go from him, only to ſleep; that I would be with him in the Day as uſual, and his Houſe ſhould ſtill be my Quarters, aſſuring him no other ſhould be quartered on him, whilſt our Army continued there. This ſatisfied him, on which we took a Bottle.

Having laid here eight Days without likelihood of the Army's moving, but on the contrary, great Quantities of Forage, *&c.* being continually coming to the Duke's Quarters, and Orders given to the *Engliſh* Army to lay in as much as poſſible, it looked with a peaceable Aſpect, though the two Armies were pretty near each other.

Affairs being thus ſituated, I thought of putting the Duke in mind of his Promiſe. In order to this I drew up a ſhort Memorial, which I took an Opportunity to preſent to his Grace, in the Drawing-room, as he came from taking the Air; he received it very courteouſly, and was putting it in his Coat Pocket, when I made bold to tell his Grace it was very ſhort, and begged he would peruſe it. He did; then called for *Kennedy*, who was his Secretary, and was in the Room; his Grace ſpoke for about half a Minute, then turning to me, honoured me with a Nod. Mr. *Kennedy* came to me, took me into the Garden, and told me his Grace ordered that I ſhould look out in the Army, for a Vacancy, under the Degree of a Captain, and let him know when I had. In the mean time, he had orders from his Grace, to ſubſiſt me, giving me a four Piſtole Piece,

Digitized by Google

Piece, and a ſingle Piſtole of *Spaniſh* Gold, bidding me be frugal, and come to him when that was ſpent. He ſhewed me a Tent in the Garden, where there was a Table of eight Covers for the Officers of the Guard, *&c.* ſaying, I might dine there every Day, to ſave my Money. I dined there but ſeldom, nor ever aſk'd him for any more Money.

About this time, there was a Talk in the Army, that the Town of *Queſnoy*, which was about two or three Leagues from us, would ſoon be beſieged, that there was a great Convoy, with a battering Train, *&c.* coming to *Marſiene* for that Purpoſe: Nevertheleſs, there was Rumours of a Peace being on the Anvil. This Report encreaſed, as there was nothing ſeen but daily Conferences between the Duke of *Ormond*, Prince *Eugene*, and the other Generals. Numbers of Courriers coming and going continually, to and from *England* and *Holland*; ſo that it was eaſy to ſee, there was ſomething extraordinary hatching, that muſt ſoon break out. Sir *Thomas Hanmer* came to the Army, ſaid to be ſent by the Parliament to inſpect and be aſſiſting in whatever Project was then on foot. In ſhort, after a great deal of Time ſpent in Conſultations and Conferences, it was thought and generally believed, that the Duke of *Ormond* told Prince *Eugene*, he had poſitive Orders from the Government of *England*, not to act offenſively: Be that as it will, that Prince put himſelf at the Head of the Imperial and *Dutch* Forces, and marched to lay Siege to *Queſnoy*; the Duke with the *Engliſh* and Foreigners in *Britiſh* Pay, remaining in their Camp. I ſhall ſay little of this Siege, as I had no Concern in it. While it was carrying on, I minded my own Buſineſs, and took my Pleaſure.

One

Digitized by Google

One Day the Lord *Blaney*, who, to the beſt of my Remembrance, was one of the Duke's Aid du Camps, whoſe Company I had the Honour of being in pretty often, came to me, as I was in the Drawing-room at the Duke's Levee, and told me, after Dinner, I muſt take a Bottle with him at the *Canteen*; I accepted it with Pleaſure, ſaying, that his Lordſhip did me a great deal of Honour; he appointed the Time, and I failed not to meet him. After ſitting an Hour or two together, talking of the Siege, and the Likelihood of a Peace, *&c.* at laſt he ſaid, he had ſomething to aſk me, if I would promiſe to anſwer him truly, and ſincerely. I aſſured his Lordſhip that he need not doubt it, if it was in my Power; he ſaid he had ſeen me often, go in and out of a Houſe, about three or four Doors off, and deſired to know whoſe Houſe it was; I told him it was a Silver-ſmith's, that on the Approach of our Army, moved his Stock in Trade, to *Cambray* for Safety, and I had lodged there about ten Days; then he aſk'd me about two pretty Women he had often ſeen at the Door and Windows as he went by. I told his Lordſhip, the one was my Landlady, the other her Siſter; he then wanted to know (ſmiling) if I made Love to them both; I ſaid to neither yet, but that I intended to make my Addreſſes to one of them, but had not as yet fixed my Choice, but ſhould reſolve his Lordſhip the next Time I had the Honour of ſeeing him; adding, that by his aſking, ſo much about them, I imagined he had a Deſign on one, or both; at this he laugh'd, and ſaid he was not ſo unreaſonable to deprive me of both, if in his Power; but when I had fixed on one, he would (with my Leave) make his Addreſſes to the other. I told him he was generous in offering me the Preference, which was juſtly due to his Lordſhip; but to ſhew my Gratitude, I would think on ſome Way, to introduce him

Digitized by Google

him to the Ladies, on Conditions I ſhould propoſe at our next Meeting; he thank'd me, ſmil'd, and begg'd they might not be too hard, and ſaid unleſs he approved of them they ſhould not be binding, ſo we parted.

This Nobleman, was affable, genteel, ſprightly and of a very good Size, about five or ſix and twenty Years of Age; and had the Addition of Rank and Title, which my Reader may judge, might make him a dangerous Rival.

The next Day meeting him by Chance, as I was taking the Air, about a League from the Town, with ſome other Gentlemen, he came up to me, and aſk'd me, if I remembered my Promiſe; I aſſured him I had, and deſired the Honour of his Company the next Day to Dinner, if not otherwiſe engaged, when I would perform it to a Tittle; he ſwore nothing ſhould hinder him. I rode with him and Company, until we came to Town, then parted. After Dinner, I went to my Lodgings, told my Landlord and the two Siſters they muſt dine with me the next Day; begged I might have a good Soop, and gave my Landlady a Guinea, deſiring her to ſend to Market, to get a genteel Dinner, as far as that would purchaſe, or if ſhe laid out more, I would pay her. Lord, Sir, ſays ſhe, what will you do with ſo much, have you a great deal of Company? I told her, No; I had but one Gentleman, but he was of ſome Diſtinction, and I muſt have a handſome Dinner of Things in Seaſon, the beſt the Market could afford; ſhe ſaid ſhe hoped to pleaſe me; which ſhe really did as well as my Heart could wiſh, for about three Crowns. I ordered Dinner to be on the Table about two o'Clock; at twelve I went in ſearch of my Lord, and found him walking in the Palace Garden; I requeſted him to go and take a Whet of Old Hock before Dinner, to which he agreed; we went to the

Canteen

Digitized by Google

Canteen, where we entered on, and concluded a verbal Treaty, for carrying on this Love Intrigue. We ſoon came to an Agreement, which was, to prevent Diſputes, to draw Lots for the Choice of the two Siſters, and however it might happen, not to infringe upon each other's Property; concluding to keep it an inviolable Secret, that the Reputation of the Ladies might not ſuffer. The Wife fell to my Lord, which I was not ſorry for, for though ſhe had moſt Beauty, yet the other had ſufficient for me.

Two o'Clock drawing near, I took my Lord to my Lodgings, and introduced him, firſt to my Landlady, in whom I thought he had a private Property, then to her Spouſe and Siſter, who all received us very politely. Dinner was ſoon brought upon Table in good Order: After Dinner we refreſhed ourſelves with ſome good Burgundy and Champain, which I had provided from the *Canteen*. The Ladies being extreme good Company, engaged us to ſpend the Evening, which we did, with a great deal of Mirth, and to our mutual Satisfaction. As my Lord was now introduced, I ſhall ſay little more on this Subject, than that he often paid me a Viſit, and let ſlip no Opportunity of converſing with my Landlady, ſometimes alone, at other times with her and her Siſter.

Three or four Days after, we propoſed to the Family to go ſee the Duke at Dinner, which they agreed to; accordingly we went, and they were wonderfully pleaſed with the Sight; my Landlord declared, he never ſaw any thing to come up to it; he had often ſeen Marſhals of *France* at Dinner, but never in half that Pomp; we then conducted the Ladies home. In a few Days after we took them to ſee the *Engliſh* Camp and Train; the Landlord deſiring to be excuſed, having ſome Buſineſs on his Hands; this Requeſt was readily

Digitized by Google

granted, I believe by all Parties; we dined in the Camp, and came home very well ſatisfied, and in good Time; ſeveral of theſe pleaſant Jaunts I had with them for about two Months. I ſpent my time here very agreeable, between Love and the Bottle, but every *Saturday* minded Buſineſs, which gave Motion to, and ſupported all the reſt. I went once a Week to pay my Reſpects to the Marquis to know if he had any Commands; and now and then to ſee my good Friend Sir *Robert Montgomery*; I alſo did not forget to appoint Friends to look out for a Vacancy in the Regiment, whom when I met I generally treated at the *Canteen*, which with other Affairs, laid my Landlord under ſuch Obligations, that what I drank with private Friends, *&c.* he would not ſuffer me to pay for, though it was very conſiderable.

The Siege of *Queſnoy* went on briſkly. I went thrice thither, to ſee my old Friend General *Ivoy*, who had employed me the laſt Year at the Siege of *Bouchin*. He was glad to ſee me, and ſaid, that if I had come to him before, he would have employed me; I thank'd him, but as the *Engliſh* did not act, I could not expect it.

Two or three Days after this, in the midſt of my Pleaſures and good Fortune, I met with a ſhocking Affair, which though not to my Credit, I cannot omit informing my Reader of, *viz.* Walking in the Hall at the Palace, I ſaw Colonel *Pocock* come into the Court Yard, at the relieving of the Guard; I met him Hat in Hand, and wiſh'd him a good Morning; he look'd out of Humour, and aſk'd me in a ſurly Manner, what I wanted. I told him that I came to put him in mind of the two and fifty Crowns given me by the Regiment, which I had not yet received, and deſired he would order me Payment. I'll pay you; and without ſaying any more, fell to caning me; this being done

Digitized by Google

done in the Duke's Quarters, I durſt not draw my Sword, which I had certainly done at any other Place, in my own Defence, had he been a greater Man, but had no other Remedy than to run on him: I took him up in my Arms, and flung him flat on his Back, between the two Grenadiers who were Centinels at the Hall Door. The Colonel of the Guard whoſe Name was *Montgomery*, immediately ſent a Sergeant with a File of Grenadiers to ſecure me, and, without farther Ceremony, ſent me to the Provos, and there I was left, with my old Friend Captain *Feurry*, who laught heartily at ſeeing me brought Priſoner. I told him the real Story; his Advice was, at once to petition the Duke. I drew up a ſhort one, and encloſed it in a Letter to Mr. *Kennedy*, the Secretary, deſiring him to have it delivered to his Grace. Captain *Feurry* went with it himſelf, and gave the Letter to *Kennedy*, who promiſed to deliver it ſafe into the Duke's Hand, I dined with the Captain, and may ſay I had only the Name of a Priſoner. The next Morning by ten o'Clock, Captain *Feurry* received Orders from the Duke, not only to ſet me Liberty, but to make ſtrict Inquiry into the Affair: *Pocock* had a ſevere reprimand, and alſo *Montgomery*, Colonel of the Guard, for not confining him who had committed the Offence.

As ſoon as I got my Liberty, I went to my Lodging, found my Lord *Blaney* ſitting in the Parlour, in deep Diſcourſe with the two Siſters, on my late Adventure; he told me he was at the Duke's Levee when he ſent Orders for my Enlargement, and that he came on Purpoſe to ſee me; the Siſters expreſs'd their Joy at my Releaſe, Madamoiſelle *Mary Anne* in particular; this was my *Deſdemona*'s Name. I could perceive by Motions and Glances, that my Lord was gaining Ground, whilſt I ſtill lived in Hopes that I had not loſt the Little I had

Digitized by Google

attained. We miſt no favourable Opportunity of meeting, and made the beſt uſe of our Time: The Siſters were Siſters, could keep each others Secrets, and contrive Excuſes for one another whether at home or abroad; ſo that we paſt our Time as pleaſantly as we could wiſh whilſt I ſtaid here.

In a few Days we had an Account of *Quieſnoy*'s Surrender, and a *Dutch* Garriſon being put in Poſſeſſion: As ſoon as the Trenches were levelled, and other neceſſary Precautions taken, the Army under Prince *Eugene* returned to their former Camp. Whilſt Preparations were making for the Siege of *Landercy*, the *Germans* and *Hollanders* were ſo ſwelled with Pride at the taking this Town, without the Aſſiſtance of the *Engliſh*, that they thought they could do every thing themſelves; but how much they were miſtaken, will ſhortly be ſeen.

About this time, there were ſome Troops ordered to march and take Poſſeſſion of *Dunkirk*, which was to be delivered to the *Engliſh*, until demoliſhed. Now I began to think, there was little or no Hopes of Preferment, and that my Deputy Quarter-maſterſhip was almoſt at an End. I began to retrench, and be as frugal as poſſible, though my Pleaſures went ſtill on. One Morning being at the Duke's Levee, there was a ſtrong Report amongſt the head Officers, that the *Engliſh*, with all the foreign Troops in *Britiſh* Pay, would ſoon march to *Ghent*, and that the Imperialiſts and *Dutch* were to lay Siege to *Landerſy*: that Mareſchal *Villars* would march with the *French* Army, and hazard all to prevent, or raiſe the Siege, if poſſible; ſo that a Battle was ſoon expected.

My Lord came in the Afternoon to paſs away an Hour or two with me and the Ladies; the Converſation ran chiefly on this News, though not agreeable

Digitized by Google

greeable to any of us; it drew ſome Sighs from the Ladies, not without watery Eyes, which they ſeemed to endeavour to conceal, though they might have given them full vent without Danger of being diſcovered, my Landlord being gone that Morning to *Cambray*, for ſome Days, about Buſineſs; ſo we had a clear Stage, all Parties concerned making the beſt Advantage of his Abſence.

Though this News proved true, it did not happen ſo ſoon as we expected, for we ſtaid here near a fortnight longer. During our ſhort Stay here, my Lord and I loſt no Time in viſiting the afflicted Siſters (who really ſeemed to be ſo) by aſſuring them of our real Concern at the Approach of our Separation, with all the tender Expreſſions that Love, or our Capacity could invent, which they returned by no leſs Tenderneſs on their Side, confirmed by Tears, to which they now gave full vent, and I really believe, had they not been apprized before of our going, it might have endangered their Characters. In about five Days, my Landlord returned well pleaſed with his Jaunt, having executed his Buſineſs to his Satisfaction; we ſupped together, but my Lord's Abſence cauſed ſome Concern to one of the Company, which ſhe prudently concealed. Soon after this, we had a certain Account, that the Troops who marched to *Dunkirk* were entered, and in Poſſeſſion of it; and alſo that a large Convoy, with a battering Train, was arrived at *Marſiene* from *Holland*; that the Siege of *Landerſy* was reſolved on by Prince *Eugene*, and the *Dutch* Generals, and would, in a few Days march for that purpoſe. In ſhort, there was a Day fixed for the *Engliſh* and their Auxiliaries to prepare for a March, which was in three Days; during this time, my Lord and I viſited the Ladies as often as Decency would permit, ſometimes together, ſometimes ſeparate; Madamoiſelle *Mary-*

Digitized by Google

Ann gave me an Appointment at a female Friend of hers, where we ſettled a Method for keeping a Paper Correſpondence ;. I was to direct my Letters to this Friend, who would deliver them ſafe to her, charging me not to neglect writing ſoon, and as often as might be, aſſuring me ſhe would punctually anſwer my Letters. Whether her Siſter was to know any thing of this Correſpondence, I know not ; but as ſhe ſaid nothing to me about it, I took no notice to the other. The Evening before we marched, I went to ſettle with my Landlord at the *Canteen*, but he would receive no Money of me, as I have obſerved before ; he produced my Accompt in his Book, and very generouſly croſſed it out, but I deſired a Receipt to prevent any After-claps, which he readily granted, and then I very lovingly took my Leave of him. My Lord and I ſupped that Night with the Silverſmith, who gave us a kind Invitation, and we were as chearful as might poſſibly be on this Occaſion ; all Parties concerned putting the beſt Outſide on, to conceal the real Affliction of their Hearts. At twelve we took our laſt Leave of our ſincere Friends.

Early the next Morning all was in motion, the *Engliſh* towards *Ghent*, with only one Battallion of Foot and *Lapell*'s Dragoons, of all the Foreigners in *Britiſh* Pay, the reſt joining Prince *Eugene*, who marched at the ſame time to *Landerſy*, which he ſoon laid Siege to. Mareſchal *Villars* marched alſo with the *French* Army to obſerve him ; ſo that theſe three Armies were in motion in ſight of each other. There was a ſtrong Detachment of ſome thouſands of *French*, directing their March, as we imagined, to obſerve us ; but it was ſtrongly reported, that this Detachment was to join, and aſſiſt us, if any Inſult ſhould be offered to the Confederates ; be that as it will, they marched in full ſight, and pretty near us all Day, but we ſaw no more of them.

Digitized by Google

them. It might reaſonably be ſuppoſed, they marched back to join their Army; we continued our March towards *Ghent*, where we arrived without any Thing worth notice; the Army encamped at the Village of *Mary-Kirk*, a ſmall League from the Town. Here I ſettled my laſt Accompts with Captain *Crow*, received what was due to me, gave up my Deputy Quarter-maſterſhip, and parted good Friends.

I returned to the Regiment with my Horſe in excellent Order, waited on the Marquis, who received me very kindly; I deſired, as I had been ſo long abſent from the Troop, I might now be put on Duty in my Turn, which was granted. I now commenced Trooper again, and continued in his Lordſhip's Favour as much as ever, viſiting him every Day by his own Order. He would often talk to me with Contempt, of the Peace that was on Foot, and ſeemed concerned at our Confederates being left in the Lurch, as he was pleaſed to term it, declaring, if he could have foreſeen ſo ſudden a Change in the Affairs of *Europe*, he never would have accepted of the Regiment from his Father, but would have ſtaid at Home, rather than come abroad to do nothing. Seeing his Lordſhip in this Temper, I did not know what to ſay; but, after pauſing a little, I told him, that if Peace ſhould be concluded (which was not yet the Caſe) it were to be wiſhed, it would not continue long; that for my Part, I would rather have War, by which I might have a Chance for Preferment, and had ſtill hopes to ſee his Lordſhip a General; he laughed, and ſaid, he was glad to ſee me deſirous of a War.

Things being now in this Situation with me, and having nothing to depend on but Trooper's Pay, I began to conſider there was no looking back, but that I muſt think and contrive how to

Digitized by Google

act hereafter. There was a Talk that the Army would ſoon return to *Great Britain* and *Ireland*; that our Regiment would be ſent to the latter; this ſhocked me, not for any Diſlike I had to my native Country, but for Reaſons that ſhall be taken notice of hereafter. I was Night and Day ſtudying what Courſe of Life I ſhould follow; I had ſome Money, but not enough to ſet up Buſineſs, if I had been bred to any, which was not the Caſe. At laſt, after a whole Week's puzzling my Brains in forming Schemes, and hitting on none to my Satisfaction, I came to a Reſolution to apply to my Lord for my Diſcharge, and go for *England*, in hopes that kind Providence, whoſe Son I was, would do ſomething in my Favour. As I always was quick and active in putting my Projects in Execution, ſo I did not ſleep on this; for it being now confirmed, that the Regiment was to go for *Ireland*, I went to wait on my Lord, and found one of the Quarter-maſters with him diſcourſing about the Matter, who aſked me, If I was not glad of returning to my own Country (he was an *Engliſhman*) juſt the ſame as I was of the Peace, ſays I; for I would ſooner go to any Part of the Globe. This Anſwer ſurpriſed the Marquis, who haſtily aſked me the Meaning; I told his Lordſhip, that I had very ſtrong Reaſons, which I intended (on hearing this News) to acquaint him with, and begged the Favour to be diſcharged rather than go. I freely told him, that I had many good Relations in *Ireland*, ſome of Title and Fortune; that after ſo many Years Abſence, I never could gain on myſelf to return among them in the Station of a Trooper; for I ſhould be juſty looked upon by them with Contempt, which I could not bear, and of the two would ſooner go to *Jamaica*; that my leaving the Troop could be no Loſs, as there would be certainly a Reduction, by which his

Digitized by Google

his Lordſhip might fill his Troop with Choice of Men, and humbly prayed he would grant my Requeſt. He was pleaſed to ſay, ſmiling, that he approved my good Spirit, for my Reaſons were quite juſt. He granted me the Favour, though he was ſorry to part with me, and ſuppoſed I ſhould go for *London*, where he would be glad to ſee me, and do me all the Service in his Power. I thanked his Lordſhip, aſſuring him, I intended myſelf for that Place, and would wait on him, whenever I heard of his Arrival there.

During my Stay near, and at *Ghent*, I wrote two Love-letters to my much-admired *Mary Ann*, at *Chattay Cambriſſy*, and received very tender Anſwers to both, which gave the finiſhing Stroke to this Intrigue.

The next Day the Marquis ſent for me, and gave me an honourable Diſcharge, telling me, I ſhould receive my Pay as uſual until I went off. I went to the Duke's Quarters, took my Leave of Lord *Blaney*, Mr. *Kennedy*, Captain *Crow*, and Captain *Feurry*, &c. I ſtopped at *Ghent* for three or four Days, laid out ſome Money for a Piece of Chintz, with ſome other Trifles, to make Preſents, put my little Equigage in readineſs to travel, and went to take my laſt Leave of the Marquis, never to ſee him more.

He went for *Ireland* with his Regiment; after ſettling it there, he returned to *England*, and died at *Cheſter*, on his Way to *London*: I am poſitive, that the Death of this young Nobleman was a great Loſs and Misfortune to me.

Before I left *Ghent*, there came an Account of the Defeat of a Body of ten thouſand Men at *Denin*, the raiſing the Siege of *Landerſy*, and the taking a great Convoy that was deſigned for that Siege, which was eſcorted by ſix or eight Battallions of Foot, and two Regiments of Dragoons, who were

Digitized by Google

were all made Priſoners of War; Prince *Eugene*, though he was at the Heels of the *French* Army, not being able to prevent it. I only take Notice of this, to ſhew how wrong the Confederates were in their Calculation of being able to carry all before them, without the Aſſiſtance of the *Engliſh*.

Having finiſhed my little Affairs in *Ghent*, I had my Things carried on board the Treckſcuit (or Draw-boat) and went off by the way of *Bruges* and *Oſtend* for *England*. I took my Paſſage from *Oſtend*, in a Sloop bound for *Dover*, and ſet ſail in a Day or two with a fair Wind. We had not been at Sea above two Hours, before the Wind chopped about, and blew very freſh; we lay too for ſome Time, then tacked about again: Some were for returning to *Oſtend*, others for keeping at Sea, the Captain was for the latter, which prevailed, but it had like to have coſt us our Lives, for it blew a perfect Hurricane, inſomuch that the Sailors knew not where they were. In ſhort, having been two Nights, and almoſt two Days beating the Seas, and ſtruggling with the Winds, we made ſhift to get into *Margaret*'s the next Evening, the Sloop having ſuffered much in her Rigging.

Being ſafe landed here, I ſet out the next Day in the Stage for *London*. On the Road as I was pauſing and thinking how I ſhould behave when I got thither, ſome of the Paſſengers took Notice of my being dull, and endeavoured to divert me; they were all very merry People, eſpecially two Sailors Wives, but as I liked neither, ſo did not trouble myſelf about them: However, to make myſelf ſomewhat eaſy in my Mind, I hit on a Project, which I was reſolved to ſtick to, for a Month at leaſt, and if in that Time it failed, then I would think on ſomething elſe. My Scheme was this, not to ſee, or inquire for any of my Acquaintance, my Brother excepted, until I had provided myſelf with

Digitized by Google

with a decent Lodging, that they might believe my Circumſtances were better than they really were; I determined to take this Lodging no where but at a Widow's, as the moſt likely Place to make my Quarters good.

Being arrived at *London*, I went to my Brother and Siſter, who were extremely glad to ſee me; I ſupped with them, and then went to Bed to the *Hummums* in *Covent Garden*. Early the next Day I inquired for a Lodging, ſaw ſeveral, but none to pleaſe me. Thus I ſpent three Days, hunting up and down; at laſt, walking through *Long-Acre*, I ſaw a handſome Houſe near the Bagnio, that had Lodgings to let; I went to a Publick-houſe facing it, called for a Tankard of Porter, deſiring the Landlord to ſit with me, and take Part of it, which Favour he granted. I found him a talkative, merry Fellow: After ſome Diſcourſe, I told him, I came from *Flanders*, and wanted a Lodging, aſking him, who lived at that Houſe over the Way, pointing at it; he ſaid, it was kept by a *Dutch* Widow Gentlewoman, and that there was very good Lodgings: This was enough for me; I paid for my Liquor, and went thither. Giving a thundering Knock, a Servant Maid came to the Door, I aſked, what Rooms they had to let; ſhe deſired me to walk in, and ſhewed me into a handſome Parlour, ſaying, ſhe would call her Miſtreſs; the Widow came in; ſhe was a little plump Woman, about five or ſix and fifty, was well dreſſed, and had the Remains of a good Face. I aſked her, what Lodging ſhe had to let; ſhe ſaid, come, I ſhew you; by this I perceived ſhe ſpoke but indifferent *Engliſh*; I followed her, ſhe brought me to the firſt Floor, which conſiſted of a large Dining-room, Bed-chamber, and a handſom Dreſſing room, all exceedingly well furniſhed: I told her, I only wanted a Room to ſleep in, as I was a ſingle Man. That not ſuiting, ſhe aſked me,

Digitized by Google

me, if I would lie up two Pair of Stairs; I ſaid with Pleaſure. In the two Pair of Stairs Chamber, there was a neat Bed, *&c.* for which I agreed to pay five Shillings a Week; we then went down to the Parlour, where ſhe deſired me to ſit down, aſking me in a Manner I could hardly underſtand, what Time I came in of Nights, ten o'Clock generally, but never exceeded eleven; this pleaſed her very well. I deſired to know, if ſhe was not from *Holland*, and what Part; ſhe ſaid, from *Amſterdam*, but I found ſhe had been ſo long away, that ſhe had forgot her native Language, and had not acquired the *Engliſh* ſufficient to be perfectly underſtood. For better than half an Hour that I ſtaid talking to her, I obſerved all her Motions, which I interpreted to my own Advantage, and was vain enough to think that ſhe liked me, as well as I did her Houſe and Furniture; in that I was not miſtaken, as ſhall be ſeen by the Sequel. I gave her half a Guinea earneſt, and took my Leave, telling her, I would come the next Day; ſhe ſaid, every Thing ſhould be ready for me: I came according to Promiſe, and was genteely received.

The next Morning by nine o'Clock I received a civil Invitation from my Landlady to come to Breakfaſt with her, which I accepted of; there was a Gentlewoman at Breakfaſt, whoſe Name was *Holland*. This Lady I mention, as I ſhall have occaſion to ſpeak often of her in the Courſe of this Story.

After Breakfaſt I went out, bought a handſome Tea-cheſt, and came Home before nine o'Clock at Night, which I generally did, oftner than I ſtaid after ten, the better (as I thought) to ingratiate myſelf into the Widow's Favour. We paſſed our Time very agreeably, Mrs. *Holland* ſeldom miſſing to ſpend the Evening with us; ſo that by this means I made a quicker Progreſs in my Acquaintance

Digitized by Google

tance with my Landlady than I could otherwiſe have done: I was not here above a Week, when I propoſed to give them both a Play, which they freely accepted of; the Play being over, I deſired them to accept of a Supper at the *Roſe* Tavern, but they refuſed it, telling me, that Supper was ordered at home, to be ready by the Time the Play was over. We went home in a Coach I had waiting, and ſpent the Evening together.

In a few Days after, as we were at Breakfaſt, Mrs. *Holland* began in a jocoſe Manner to give ſome Hints that the Widow and I might make a Match. If this was not done by my Landlady's Direction, I am poſitive, by what followed, it was by her Conſent; for it was not long after Mrs. *Holland* told me, that the Widow was in warm Circumſtances, bidding me to attack her briſkly, and make my Quarters good. This military Way of expreſſing ſeemed odd; but ſhe ſoon gave me to underſtand, that her Huſband was a Quarter-maſter in *Otway*'s Dragoons in *Ireland*, and ſhewed me a Letter ſhe had received from him two Days before: By this, finding ſhe was a Brother Soldier's Wife, I ſaid, that I would follow her Directions, and was much obliged to her, hoping ſhe would give me all Aſſiſtance poſſible, which ſhe promiſed. I fixed my Reſolution, and waited for the firſt favourable Opportunity to make a general Attack, which ſoon happened; the Storm was made in the Dead of Night; and after ſome faint Reſiſtance, I entered, and took Poſſeſſion of the Place, with little or no Loſs, and ſoon concluded a Peace; this was not kept a Secret from Mrs. *Holland*, as appears by her wiſhing us joy in two Days after. The Widow returned the Compliment with a Salute, and I followed her Example. This Point being ſo far gained, I began to be more free, but

was

Digitized by Google

was given to underſtand, there were three grown up Sons of my Landlady's, and I muſt be cautious before them. I had ſeen them in and out, but did not know them to be her Children, ſo was on my guard not to give the leaſt Suſpicion of my Conduct; and whenever I met any of them, only gave them the Time of the Day, as I paſſed by.

In about a Month's Time, Mrs. *Holland* propoſed that we ſhould contrive ſome Method to live more open and free, and, at the ſame time, ſave the Widow and her Children's Reputation. I ſaid, if they could think of any other Way, that I would willingly lend a Hand to ſave their Credit, as well as my own. She ſaid, it was very well; that we muſt all three conſult about it, and it would be hard if we did not hit on ſomething that would do. At our firſt Meeting, ſeveral Schemes were propoſed; and, at length, the following was concluded on: That there ſhould be a ſham Wedding in this Manner, *viz.* that Mrs. *Holland* ſhould give out among her Acquaintance, that there was a Match on foot between the Widow and me; that this News would ſoon ſpread, and in courſe, come to the Ears of her Sons, who without doubt, would aſk her about it; that ſhe muſt keep them ſome Days in Suſpence, and then own it; if any of them ſeemed to diſapprove it, to tell them ſhe was her own Miſtreſs, and would do as ſhe pleaſed; and if they preſumed to ſpeak any more about it, it ſhould be worſe for them: So far the Scheme anſwered pretty well; the Sons were introduced to me, and by Degrees we came pretty well acquainted; behaving myſelf civilly to them, I daily grew in their Eſteem: It was farther agreed, that a Day ſhould be appointed, and as many Friends as the Widow thought fit be invited, to the Wedding, which (they were told) would be performed

Digitized by Google

formed at the Embaſſador's Chapel in *Great Queen Street*, in the *Chriſtmas* Holydays, and that timely Notice ſhould be given of the particular Day and Hour: All this being concluded on, the Company had Notice to meet at the *Queen's Head* Tavern in the above Street, on St. *Steven*'s Day by ten o'Clock in the Morning. The Company being met, I pretended to go to the Chapel, to ſee if every thing was ready. I was no ſooner gone, than Mrs. *Holland* (as was before agreed on) told the Company, that ſhe was almoſt ſure no Prieſt would perform the Ceremony in the Preſence of ſo many People, it being againſt the Law; moſt of the Company were of the ſame Opinion. She then prepared them for what I was to ſay at my Return, *viz.* that I was ſorry I could take only one of the Company to ſee the Knot tied; they replied, they were ſure of that before I came; ſo that Mrs. *Holland* was the only Perſon that accompanied the happy Pair, leaving the reſt of the Company to make much of themſelves at the Tavern, until our Return.

In about an Hour we returned, and received the Compliments of the Company: Favours of rich Ribbon had been provided, which were diſtributed by Mrs. *Holland*, who, on this Occaſion adopted me her Son, and conſequently I could do no leſs than ſtile her Mother, by which Appellation I ſhall mention her through the Thread of this Story. Having done at the Tavern, we went home (now to my Houſe) in Coaches, to avoid the Attendance of the Mob. Soon after we came home, we all ſat down to an excellent Dinner, and were as merry as poſſible on this joyful Occaſion: After Dinner, Wine, Punch and Glaſſes were brought; I deſired that the Sons, and ſome other young Folks, who ſate at the Side-board, might come and join the Company: As ſoon as we took a Glaſs round, I begg'd the Company's Pardon, telling them,

Digitized by Google

them, that I had a few Words to ſay to the young Gentlemen, which I intended for their Good, and the Peace of the Family, hoping they would think ſo; I then addreſſed myſelf to them in this Manner. "Young Men, By your Mother and I being "joined together, I am now become your Pa- "rent, and I aſſure you, in the Preſence of this "good Company, that my Intention as well as "Inclination, is, to prove a kind one; but give "me leave to tell you, that this entirely depends "on yourſelves, by a reſpectful and dutiful Beha- "viour to your Mother, which you owe by the "Laws of God and Man; and whenever any of "you tranſgreſs this, you ſhall neither find "Friendſhip or Favour from me, nor ſleep under "one Roof with me, by my Conſent. Now you "know what you have to truſt to; act as your "Diſcretion leads you; I hope for the beſt, and "wiſh it with all my Heart." However the young Men reliſh'd this, it gained me ſome Applauſe from the Company. This Speech was occaſioned by my Mother's having told me ſome Days before, that the ſecond Son was a very wicked Fellow; that he followed ill Courſes, and that his Mother was afraid he would make his Exit at *Tyburn*, and deſired I would ſay ſomething to reclaim him, if poſſible. All I ſaid to him had little Effect, ſo I ſent him, at his Mother's Requeſt, to the *Eaſt-India* Company's Service at *Bengal*, where in leſs than two Years, he ſent an Account to his Mother, of his being made an Enſign. The Eldeſt Son was bound an Apprentice to a Glazier, but after ſerving four Years went to Sea, and there made his Fortune. The youngeſt was bred a Dancing-Maſter, but a very indifferent one; his Mother ſet him up in a creditable Publick Houſe, at the Expence of three hundred Pounds, which he danc'd all away, and broke in leſs than two Years.

Theſe

Digitized by Google

Theſe Gentlemen being thus provided for, I lived peaceably and quietly at home with my old Woman, often going to the Play, and partaking of the other Diverſions of the Town, for the Remainder of this Year 1712.

CHAP. IV.

BEING now ſeemingly well ſettled, I began to be uneaſy in my Mind; my Brother grew cool and would not come near me: He heard of the Match, which he no ways approved of, nor durſt I tell him the Truth, for he had Honour and Conſcience; I was ſhort of both in this Caſe, as well as in ſome others before related; ſo that I was certain, that acquainting him with the Secret, rather than mend would make Things worſe. On the other Hand, I began to reflect and think, how ſcandalous it was for me, in my full Strength, and Vigour, to be living upon a Woman, and waſting her Subſtance, without contriving ſome Method to give a helping Hand. Upon theſe Reflections, I came to a Reſolution to undertake ſomething, which I communicated to my Mother, who I was ſure was my faſt Friend, and aſked her Advice. I told her I had ſome Thoughts of taking a Coffee-houſe, as I was not bred to any Buſineſs, this was the eaſieſt for me to follow, and required but little Stock, deſiring ſhe would, the firſt Opportunity, ſpeak to her Friend about it, and, if ſhe gave her Conſent, I would immediately look out a convenient Houſe for that Purpoſe, but firſt deſired her own Opinion; ſhe ſaid, ſhe really believed it would do very well, and that ſhe thought (her Aunt) which ſhe always called my Landlady, could not be againſt a Thing ſo much to her Intereſt, that ſhe would ſpeak about it in the Afternoon, when

Digitized by Google

at Tea. Accordingly the Matter was propoſed, and debated; my Landlady made ſome feint Oppoſition, but it was carried in my Favour. The next Day I took a handſome Houſe, in *Hemming's-Roe*, St. *Martin's-Lane*, to enter directly in Poſſeſſion, at twenty five Pounds *per Ann.* but not to commence Rent until the *Lady-Day* following, which was near two Months. I ſoon fitted it up in a very genteel Manner, inferior to none at that End of the Town. Every Thing being ready for the Reception of Company, I publiſh'd an Advertiſement in the *Daily-Courant*, that on ſuch a Day, The *Union Coffee-houſe* (for ſo I named it) would be opened, in *Hemming's-Roe*, St. *Martin's-Lane*, where all Friends ſhould be kindly entertained, and meet with the beſt Accommodations.

Now the Scene is changed, and I am turned *Coffee-Man:* My old Woman and Mother came every Day to ſee me, the latter was of great Service, by ſitting in the Bar, *&c.* ſo that all went well for a While. I ſoon got a Couple of *Dutch* Gentlemen to lodge with me; the one was the Son of an Admiral, whoſe Name was *Harthensfelt*, and liv'd at the *Brill*; he was a great Rake, and came to *London* unknown to his Father, but was a very good Cuſtomer, for about the three Months he ſtaid. The other was a Companion he brought with him, who was a ſober pretty Gentleman. By theſe Lodgers my Houſe turned to a better Account, than it would otherwiſe have done. At his taking his Leave to return to *Holland*, he paid me very generouſly, making me a Compliment of a Piece of fine Holland, and made his Countrywoman ſome few Preſents, becauſe he often ſent for her, to divert himſelf with her Jargon. My being ſo particular about this Gentleman, is, that I ſhall have occaſion to ſay ſomething of him hereafter.

The

Digitized by Google

The Time of my Landlady's Houſe in *Long-Acre* expiring at *Michaelmas*, ſhe determined to quit it, and deſired I would (in my Walks) look for a pretty Houſe about *Lambeth* for ſhe lik'd the Country; that it was a pretty Place, and good Lodgings would ſet well. This I agreed to, and ſoon fix'd on one; I took her and my Mother to ſee it; they both liked it, and deſired I would loſe no time but take it, for fear it ſhould be gone, for ſuch a pretty Houſe would not ſtand long empty. I went to the Owner, whoſe Name was *Butler*; he was in the Commiſſion of the Peace, and had been Captain of a Man of War. We ſoon ſtruck the Bargain, at eighteen Pounds and a Crown *per Annum*, to commence Rent from *Midſummer*. I ſoon ſtript the Houſe in *Long-Acre* to furniſh that at *Lambeth*, and put a Bill upon the former to be lett, which was luckily done againſt *Midſummer*. No ſooner was every thing ſettled at *Lambeth*, but my Landlady with two Servant Maids went thither, and my Mother to bear her Company; ſhe was not long without Lodgers: I had but little of her Company, Waterage being ſo expenſive, that I did not go to ſee her ſo often as I could have wiſh'd. However I went every other Day, which ſhe took very kindly: We were now diſtinct Families; mine conſiſted of only two Boys, to attend the Coffee-Room, and a Servant Maid, which was none of the handſomeſt, but ſhe was not of my chuſing. My Landlady and Mother, generally came once or twice a Week to dine with me. In this Manner we ſpent the Remainder of this Year.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. V.

EARLY in the Beginning of 1714, finding that Buſineſs began to flag, and the moſt I could do was to keep the Wolf from the Door, I reſolved once more to change the Scene, being better acquainted with the Ways of the Town: Having got a numerous Acquaintance among the beſt Sort of Gentlemen, I told ſome of my moſt Intimates my Intention of taking a Tavern, which they adviſed me to of all things, promiſing me their Cuſtoms and Intereſt. I look'd out, and ſoon found a handſome Houſe, at the upper End of *Witch-ſtreet*, near *Craven Houſe*, in the Pariſh of St. *Clement's Dean*; this I took, and ſoon fitted it up for a Tavern; then went to one *Whitehead*, a Wine-Merchant, and told him, I was ſetting up a Tavern, that hearing his Character as a fair Dealer, and ſelling the beſt of Wines, I came to offer him my Cuſtom, if he would deal on my Terms; he aſk'd where, and whether I had good Vaults; I told him where, that he might come or ſend to ſee them; he appointed the next Day at one o'Clock to be with me, without fail. He came and viewed my Houſe and Vaults, lik'd them very well, and aſk'd me what Wine he ſhould ſend in; I ſaid we muſt come to an Underſtanding firſt, and he muſt hear my Propoſals; that as I was a new Beginner, I would not take a great Quantity, that he muſt ſend once a Month to gauge the Wine, and what was deficient I would pay him for; if he approved of this Method of Dealing, he might ſend whatever Quantity he pleaſed, for I had a very good Acquaintance, and hoped if we dealed together to be a good Cuſtomer; that I intended to have every thing ready in a Month's time, and then, in the *Daily-Courant*, to invite my Friends to the

Digitized by Google

the Opening. All this he approved of, and assured me, that in three or four Days I might have as much Wine in my Cellar as was necessary on the Terms proposed. This Point being gained, I had an Advertisement published, that the *Union Coffee-house* in *Hemmins-Roe* St. *Martin's-lane*, was to be lett, with or without the Coffee-room, and the Fixtures to be sold if desired, or taken away in ten Days. I lett it to the same Business for my Time; and the Man who took it bought the Coffee-room Utensils, by which I sustained but little Loss; the Rest of the Furniture I sent to *Witch-street*, and then went to *Lambeth* till I was ready to open my Tavern, which was the Sign of the *Queen's Arms*.

I must here take Notice of a Passage relating to my Story, which I should have mentioned last Summer, *viz.* Soon after the Peace was proclaimed, in *May* last, between *England* and *France*, I saw a Paragraph in one of the Daily Papers, intimating, that Mr. *Ebberlin*, who was Secretary to the Duke of *Lorrain*'s Envoy, arrived in Town last Night, in Quality of Resident to this Court, to manage that Prince's Affairs. I was greatly surprized at this News, and went immediately in quest of him, he was also hunting for me; at last we met, and was overjoyed to see each other. He gave me no Opportunity to ask about Mrs. *Goodman*, but told me, after I went to *Flanders*, Baron *Forcenath* was recalled by the Duke, and by the Baron's Consent he took with him Mrs. *Goodman* to *Lorrain*, that soon after their Arrival at *Nancy*, they were solemnly married in the Palace Chapel, in presence of the said Baron, and other Courtiers; adding, that no Man could be happier in a Wife; but now being ordered Resident, to attend his Master's Business at this Court, he had put her to board at a Convent until his Return, and no Woman could be better liked, nor more beloved;

Digitized by Google

in ſhort, he ſpoke all this in a ſeeming Rapture, that I could not tell who had the moſt Pleaſure, he in relating, or I in hearing, this Character of a Woman I had ſo treacherouſly lodged in his Boſom. We continued good Friends as long as he ſtaid in *London*, and were often together. I deſired whenever he wrote to be remembered to her, which he promiſed.

With my Reader's Permiſſion I muſt now take a ſhort Flight for ſome Years paſt, to conclude what I have have to ſay of this happy Couple.—Knowing that the Duke of *Lorrain*, his preſent Imperial Majeſty, was come to *London*, I thought I might hear ſomething of them in his Royal Highneſs's Family; in order to this, I went to Count *Kinſky*'s, the Emperor's Embaſſador, in *Hanover Square*, where the Duke lodged; I enquired of a Servant, he could give me no Account, but ſaid, he would ſend an old Servant who lived with the late Duke, and he might probably ſatisfy me; when he came, I aſk'd him, if he knew Baron *Forcenath*, who had been the Duke's Envoy at this Court ſome Years ago; he ſaid, very well, but he was dead; then I aſk'd for Mr. *Ebberlin*, who was his Secretary; he ſaid, he was alſo dead, that he was married to a Countrywoman of mine; I told him that was true, aſking him what was become of her; he ſaid, the laſt Year his Royal Highneſs being at the Court of *Vienna*, he ſaw her deliver a Petition to him on account of ſome Arrears due to her Huſband, which was paid her; that ſhe was then Governeſs to a Princeſs's Children at that Court, and was very well. I made no further Enquiry, and went away, never hearing more of her.

But to my Story; I had a handſome Bar made, with other neceſſary Conveniencies, and Mr. *Whitehead* did not fail of his Promiſe in ſending me a Stock

Stock of good Wines. One Evening being at the Play, I ſaw from the Pit, in one of the Side-boxes, my old Acquaintance, Mrs. *Viers*. Towards the End of the laſt Act, I made Shift to get on the Stage to come near her; I made a low Bow, which ſhe returned with a Smile; this encouraged me to go and ſpeak to her (ſhe had on all her Diamonds, as when laſt I ſaw her) I aſk'd, in a free Way, if I ſhould have the Honour to hand her to her Coach when the Play was over; ſhe ſaid, if it was not too much Trouble, ſhe would be obliged to me. The Play being done, I deſired her to go with me to the *Roſe*, and take ſome Refreſhment, till the Crowd was gone; ſhe ſaid with Pleaſure, and was glad of the Opportunity of ſeeing me: We went to the *Roſe*, and there expreſs'd our Joy at ſeeing each other, as Lovers generally do after a long Abſence. She ſaid ſhe had a great deal to ſay to me, a hundred Queſtions to aſk me, and twice that Number of Things to tell me which muſt be referred to another Opportunity, as it was late; but however ſhe would make a Beginning by telling me, that ſince I ſaw her ſhe had altered her Condition, was married to a Purſer of an *India* Man, whoſe Name was *Jolly*, that he went on an *Eaſt-India* Voyage, and had been gone near twelve Months, and ſhe did not expect him home for two Years. I looked on all this as a fair Challenge to renew our Acquaintance, or at leaſt I thought ſo; I was no way averſe to it, for ſhe looked as charming as ever, which I did not forget to tell her, but ſaid nothing to her of my own Affairs at this Time; ſhe made no Difficulty to let me ſet her down at her Lodgings, where I viſited her often. Thus did I renew my Acquaintaince with Mrs. *Viers* (now Mrs. *Jolly*) which continued ſome Years, as ſhall be ſeen hereafter.

Digitized by Google

Every thing being fixed and ready, purſuant to my former Reſolutions, I publiſhed an Advertiſement, that the *Queen*'s *Arms* Tavern in *Watch-ſtreet*, St. *Clements Dean*, would be opened ſuch a Day, where all Friends and Cuſtomers ſhould be kindly entertained, and heartily welcome, by their humble Servant, *P. D.*

I had the Houſe full of good Company for two Days, nor did I ever want Buſineſs while I kept it. My old Woman took her Seat in the Bar, and made as good an Appearance as her Age would permit; the Deficiency of her Speech was made up by my Mother, who was a notable, well ſpoken Woman. I provided Bob Wigs, blue Aprons, *&c.* proper for the Buſineſs of a Vintner; theſe I wore at home, but could not yet leave off the Tie Wig and Sword when I went abroad; the Hurry of my Buſineſs being over, I conducted my old Woman and Mother to *Lambeth*, dined with them, and went home.

The next Day I went to Breakfaſt with Mrs. *Jolly*, told her my whole Story, only concealed the Manner of our Marriage, which I aſſured her was real. We ſettled a Method for our future Correſpondence, which was to be done with great Caution, as we were both in the Marriage State, and that my Peace depended upon it, having an old Woman, who are apt to be jealous. At this ſhe laughed, and ſaid, ſhe longed to ſee her; I begged her not to be in a Hurry, that there was Reaſon as well as Time and Opportunity for all Things. My Buſineſs went on briſkly, Money coming in faſter than I could expect, and all went well; but I was obliged to drink more than I cared for.

Some Months after this, there happened an Event which I cannot omit relating in all its Circumſtances, but fear the Truth of it will be doubted, at leaſt by ſome of my Readers, to whom I am a Stran-

Digitized by Google

Stranger. The Affair was thus: In one of my Viſits to Mrs. *Jolly*, being a remarkable Night (it was the Eve of the total Eclipſe of the Sun, which was in *April* 1714.) I ſtaid with her, and in the Dead of the Night, ſhe awaked me, and aſked, in a Fright, "If I had ſeen or heard any Thing? I told "her, no. Were not the Curtains at the Bed's Feet "drawn cloſe when you came to Bed? Yes, ſays I. "You ſee they are quite undrawn now, ſays ſhe, and I "am frightened out of my Wits, I am ſure my Huſ- "band is dead, for he opened the Curtains, I ſaw "him plain, heard, and knew his Voice, uttering "theſe Words; Oh, *Sally*, I am dead, and am no "more! then vaniſhed. I told her, ſhe dreamed, or "was mad; but ſhe aſſured me, ſhe was quite awake, "and what ſhe told me was Truth." As I did not believe this, it gave me little Concern. The next Morning, when we were in the Dining-room, while Breakfaſt was getting ready, ſhe moved backward and forward, as if out of her Senſes, and looked as pale as a Ghoſt: I endeavoured to divert her from theſe gloomy Thoughts, aſſuring her (as I thought) it was nothing but a Dream. After I had breakfaſted (for ſhe would touch nothing) ſhe begged I would take Minutes of the Particulars, and let her have them; this I did, and ſhe carefully put them into her Bureau; I then took my Leave. The further Particulars of this ſtrange Event, I ſhall relate in its proper Place.

I was thronged with Company Night and Day; though Money was coming faſt, I would rather have had leſs Trade, than be obliged to ſit up Night after Night, and drink to my Prejudice. My old Woman conſidered this, and came to ſtay ſome Days to help me. She often ſitting up till three or four in the Morning, it began to impair her Health, not being uſed to ſuch a Life.

I went

Digitized by Google

I went to Dinner with her two Days after, when ſhe ſtrongly urged me to take a Bar-keeper, which, not being averſe to myſelf, as it would be a means of giving me more Reſt, and the Propoſal being ſtrongly ſeconded by my Mother, I agreed; only intimating the Difficulty there would be in getting a Perſon capable of the Buſineſs, that underſtood Accompts, *&c.* and the Expence, if ſuch a one might be had, would not be leſs than 20 *l. per Annum.* My good old Woman told me, if Buſineſs did not anſwer, ſhe would pay that. I cannot but ſay, I ſhould have liked one of my own chuſing, but found there was a ſeeming Neceſſity to refer it to them, which they promiſed to do for me.

When I came home, I was at a Loſs how I ſhould manage this Matter, or, who to get, if the Women ſhould not ſucceed; I had ſome Thoughts of Mrs. *Jolly*, but was dubious of her accepting ſuch an Employ: However, I reſolved to try; I went to ſee her, and told her I had an Affair to propoſe to her, which ſhe might depend on proceeded from the great Eſteem, and ardent Deſire of having her under the ſame Roof with me; then informed her of my Intention; ſhe ſaid ſhe would conſider of it, and let me know the next time we met. In three Days after, I went to ſee her again, when ſhe aſked me, ſmiling, if my old Woman had got me a Bar-keeper; I told her, I had heard nothing of it as yet. Well, ſays ſhe, I am come to a Reſolution, and I aſſure you, my Wiſhes and Deſires correſpond intirely with yours; and if it can be done with Prudence, I will accept your kind Offer. After this Promiſe, I did not mention a Word to the Women of the Project, though I ſaw one, or both, almoſt every Day; I choſe to let them take their own Time, the better to avoid the leaſt Suſpicion of my being deſirous of any ſuch Thing, though I knew they were daily inquiring out one for

Digitized by Google

for me. At laſt, a Fortnight being elapſed, I was acquainted, that they had taken a great deal of Trouble in vain, and deſired me to ſee what I could do. I did not ſeem diſpleaſed (nor neither was I) at this Diſappiontment; telling them, I hoped I could do very well without a Bar-keeper; but the old Woman would not hear of it; ſo, to pleaſe her, I agreed to uſe my Endeavours.

The next Time I went to *Lambeth* to Dinner, I was aſked, if I had heard of any body? I told them, I had not; ſhe then adviſed me to advertiſe for one, to which I agreed; I drew up an Advertiſement for that Purpoſe, and ſent it to the *Daily Courant*. The next Day I went to Mrs. *Jolly*, and told her what I had done, deſiring her to prepare herſelf, for I ſhould bring one of the Papers, which ſhe was to take with her to my Houſe, as the ſaid Paper ſhould direct, inquiring for Mrs. *Drake*, or Mrs. *Holland*, and acquaint either of them ſhe might ſee, that ſhe came about a Bar-keeper's Place, as directed by that Advertiſement, which ſhe was to ſhew. This being ſettled, I went with one of the Papers to Mrs. *Jolly*, and ſent her to *Lambeth* with proper Inſtructions, deſiring at her Return to ſend a Porter to the *Queen's Arms*, to inquire for me, and ſay that Captain *Thompſon* deſired to ſpeak with me. I promiſed to be in the Way, and would wait on her directly. The Porter came, delivered his Meſſage, and I waited on her, when ſhe told me, ſhe was kindly received, that all Things went well, and a Time was appointed for her Return to dine with them, and have a final Anſwer: I told her, I thought of being one of the Gueſts.

The next Day, I received a formal Invitation to Dinner the *Thurſday* following, being the Day appointed for my intended Bar-keeper to dine there. I came a little before Dinner-time, and was introduced to Mrs. *Jolly* as a Friend of my Mother's, juſt

Digitized by Google

juſt come from the Country; I ſaluted her coolly, being a little on my Guard. After Dinner, my Mother told me, that this Gentlewoman was come to offer her Service, purſuant to the Advertiſement. I then aſked her a few Queſtions for Form ſake; whether ſhe could write, and keep Accompts? ſhe ſaid ſhe could: Who recommended her, and would give her a Character? ſhe ſaid, very reſponſable People, whoſe Names and Places of Abode ſhe would give in writing (this Point ſhe and I had agreed before) I ordered Pen, Ink and Paper, deſiring her to walk into the next Parlour, and write them down: As ſoon as ſhe was gone, my old Woman aſked me, how I liked her; I ſaid, well enough, that ſhe was a good jolly Woman; I begged the Favour of my Mother to go with her Friend to inquire about theſe People whoſe Names ſhe was writing; and if ſhe found them reſponſable, and of good Character, to agree with her about Wages, for they might probably get her cheaper than I could, and ſo took my Leave.

Next Day I went to Mrs. *Jolly*, who told me, ſhe had given the Names of the People to Mrs. *Drake*; that Mrs. *Holland* ſaid, they would take their own Time to inquire about them; but as ſhe was well liked, ſhe might come to an Agreement now, not to loſe Time, and deſired to know what Wages ſhe expected; ſhe ſaid, Twenty Pounds a Year: In ſhort, ſhe agreed for Eighteen, and received a Guniea Earneſt, and the *Monday* following was to meet them at the *Swan* Tavern, facing *Somerſet-houſe* in the *Strand*, at Eleven o'Clock preciſely, in order to be conducted to the *Queen*'s *Arms*, and enter on Buſineſs.

On *Monday* about Twelve o'Clock they came, and told me the Agreement they had made, and ſaid, they believed her to be a prudent, well-behaved Woman. My Mother ſaid, ſhe was ſure ſhe

Digitized by Google

ſhe would pleaſe me; I was of the ſame Opinion, though I did not ſay ſo: I gave her ſome Directions of the Method of keeping a Bar, which ſhe took readily; this pleaſed the Women, who ſpoke much in her Praiſe. After Dinner, my old Woman told me, ſhe had taken ſome Trouble to get a Bar-keeper, and hoped ſhe had got me a good one; ſo handing her to me, deſired me to take Care of her, charging her to be careful of me, and not let me ſit up too late. Thus did I receive a Bar-keeper according to my Heart's Deſire, from the Hands of my honeſt *Dutch* Woman, and ſhe returned with my Mother to *Lambeth*. We both behaved with great Caution, to prevent the leaſt Suſpicion, which thoroughly anſwered our Ends. I deſired her, whenever the old Woman came, to uſe her with a great deal of Reſpect, to behave with more than common Civility to my Mother, by which ſhe would preſerve and increaſe the Eſteem and good Opinion they both had of her; this ſhe obſerved to a Tittle, ſo that we lived comfortably, all Parties ſeeming well pleaſed. I ſent to Mr. *Whitehead* to come for his Money, and acquainted him I wanted more Wines; he ſent the Wines, but ſaid, he was in no haſte for the Caſh; he ſaw that Buſineſs went on well, by which he judged there was no Danger.

This Summer I had an odd Adventure, odd I muſt call it, from its Circumſtance, and the Manner it happened, to ſhew how raſhly and inconſiderately ſome People contrive Diverſions to amuſe and divert themſelves and others, which may endanger their Lives. This was the Caſe here, and happened thus: There was at this time in *London*, among many famous Prize-Fighters, one *James Miller*, mightily eſteemed by the Quality and General Officers, who were Lovers of that Sport, on account of his ſmiling Countenance, even when warmly

Digitized by Google

warmly engaged on the Stage; I alſo liked him very well, and was often in Company with him. One Day I took a Walk to *Lambeth* Wells, a Place for Dancing, and other Diverſions; as I was paying at the Gate, one of the Drawers came, and told me, there was a Gentleman wanted to ſpeak with me; he ſhewed me to Mr. *Miller*, who was taking a Glaſs with ſome Company: He ſaid, he ſaw me come in, which made him ſend for me to take a Glaſs, which I accepted of. In about half an Hour the Muſick was ordered to the Gallery; the Company moving to re-aſſume the Dancing, I called for a Flaſk of Wine; Mr. *Miller* ſaid, when the Dancing was over, the Company would join, and accept of my Flaſk; but by the Time the Diverſion was ended, it began to rain; Mr. *Miller* then beſpoke a large Parlour, and brought the Company thither, about Eleven in Number, only one Lady, whoſe Name was *Hopkins*; ſhe kept a Tavern in *Earl's Court*, and ſeemed to have ſome Knowledge of me. I am ſo particular in this, it being neceſſary to my Story. Mr. *Miller* was at this Time in the Horſe Grenadiers. I knew none of the Company but him; we drank pretty briſkly about, and began to be merry; Toaſts went about, mine was called for; I toaſted Mrs. *Jolly*; Mrs. *Hopkins* immediately got up, and uttering ſome indecent Expreſſions, bid me be the Meſſenger of them, and that her Name was *Beſs Hopkins*; I told her, I never interfered in Ladies Quarrels. A Gentleman, in a laced Hat and Waiſtcoat, who ſat near her, gave himſelf the Trouble to come round to me, with a ſeeming angry Countenance, to inform me, I muſt not take amiſs any thing the Lady ſaid, for if I did, he ſhould be very angry: I aſſured him, I was naturally inclined to be civil to the Fair Sex, and the Lady was at Liberty to ſay what ſhe pleaſed; he ſwore by his Maker, ſhaking

Digitized by Google

ſhaking his Head, it was my beſt Way; I deſired he would not ingroſs any Merit to himſelf from my Meekneſs, for if he had ſaid half ſo much, it was fifty to one, he would not come off ſo cheap; he then returned to his Seat. I ſat near a *French* Gentleman, who was Mr. *Miller*'s Sergeant; we diſcourſed in *French*; Mr. *Miller* ſat on one Side of Mrs. *Hopkins*, the Gentleman above ſpoke of on the other; I obſerved they were all three whiſpering and laughing, but did not imagine they were plotting againſt me. The Rain continuing very heavy, there was no Thoughts of going. We being all in a merry Mood, Mr. *Miller* obliged us with a Song, to which all the Company bore a Chorus, performed in this Manner; at the End of each Verſe, the Company (no one to be excuſed) were to humn through the Noſe, ſtriking gently on it with his Finger all the Time; when any was out of Tune, Mr. *Miller* was to give it a light Squeeze with his Fingers to put it to rights; this was done, or repeated to every one three times. He had ſmeared the Inſide of two of his Fingers with ſome Snuff and Candle Greaſe; with theſe he tuned my poor Noſe; this cauſed a general Laugh in the Company, I joined with the reſt, though I did not know the Cauſe, nor think that I was the Object of their Mirth. The Company being thus diverted at my Expence for ſome time, the *French* Gentleman, who ſat near me, whiſpered me to go clean my Noſe, which was all black; I was very much ſurpriſed, and went out of the Room to look in a Glaſs, and found both Sides of my Noſe, from the Eyes to the Tip, as black as a Coal. I took no Notice, but returned to the Company in the ſame Pickle, and ſat in my Place, as if I had known nothing of the Matter, which increaſed their Mirth the more; ſome talked of Faces, others were deſcribing Features, but I fell to ſinging, though

Digitized by Google

though I knew all this was levelled at me. At length, I got up, and ſaid, I had all thoſe Features they ſpoke of, rough as they were; among the reſt I had a Noſe, that he who blacked it, if he did it with Intent to affront me, was a Raſcal and Scoundrel; Mr. *Miller*, to ſhew the Cap fitted him, made a Stroke with his Cane acroſs the Table at me; then the Company interfered to prevent further Miſchief. He was ſtruggling with ſome Gentlemen to get to me, ſwearing I ſhould go out of the Room; I deſired him to ſit down, ſaying, he had done enough in blacking my Noſe, and confirming his Intent of affronting me by a Blow; that if I bore all this he might be eaſy, and let the Company be ſo too. All would not do, I muſt quit the Room; I told him, though he was the Man who brought me in, and I knew no one in Company but himſelf, yet he, nor no ſingle Man ſhould, or was able to put me out; that I appealed to the Company, or the major Part of them, if I had given Offence to any; if I had, I would willingly withdraw; they all declared to the contrary, that no Man could behave civiller, and that Mr. *Miller* was in the wrong.

To ſhew my Diſpoſition for the Peace of the Company, I propoſed, that any Perſon who ſpoke one Word more of the Diſpute, ſhould forfeit a Flaſk of Wine; this was agreed on by all; Mr. *Miller*, in leſs than an Hour, forfeited three, for which he paid as they were brought in: I deſired that he and I might go out to ſpeak a few Words together; this was oppoſed by the Company, unleſs we left our Swords, and promiſed not to go to handy Grips (a Sport I am ſure neither of us liked) this we promiſed. He and I went into another Room, and agreed to take an Opportunity to ſlip the Company, on a Signal to be made, and meet in the Walk as ſoon as the Rain was over; then we returned to the Company.

About

Digitized by Google

About Break of Day it held up, the Company were moſtly diſperſed about the Room, ſome ſnoring in Corners, others ſleeping on Chairs, *&c.* and our Diſpute forgot; in ſhort, finding this favourable Opportunity, I walked cloſe by Mr. *Miller*, then trod on his Foot (the Signal agreed on) and went to the Walk. I had no ſooner got to the upper End, and ſat down in an Alcove, than he appeared at the other; when he ſaw me, (tho' the whole Length of the Walk was between us) he clapped his Hand to his Sword, and came in that Poſture within ten or twelve Yards of me. I immediately drew, and we both attacked ſmartly; he gave Ground almoſt as faſt as he came up. In this Retreat he received two ſlight Wounds, or rather Scratches, in his Sword Arm, he got behind one of the Trees, and begged I would let him breath. I ſaid, though you deſerve no Favour, I would ſcorn to take the Advantage. I put my Sword under my Arm, bidding him to draw Breath. About this Time being miſſed, four of the Gentlemen came, and found us in this Poſture, which prevented our going to it again, ſo we parted for that Time, and all went to their reſpective Homes. This Duel was talked of for ſome Time, eſpecially among the military Gentlemen; it alſo gained me ſome Reputation for having engaged one of the principal Heroes of the Stage.

After this, I ſlept in a whole Skin for twelve Years, no Perſon challenging, or engaging me, in the many Diſputes and Broils I had during that Time. Mr. *Miller* and I ſought each other, but to no Purpoſe, for ſome Days. At length we met by the Perſuaſion of ſome Friends, but neither for that Time would own himſelf in the wrong, eſpecially my Antagoniſt, who warmly inſiſted upon the Groſſneſs of the Affront, from the Appellation of Raſcal and Scoundrel before a whole Company;

Digitized by Google

and I, on the other Hand, on the Baſeneſs he was guilty of in cauſing me to be a Laughing-ſtock, eſpecially as he knew he was the only Acquaintance I had there, and that it was by his Invitation I entered into their Company. The Blow he gave me with his Cane was ſufficient to demand a Gentleman-like Satisfaction, which I requeſted of him the firſt Opportunity; he aſſured me I might depend upon it. As our Friends could not at this Meeting make the Breach up, we parted.

Some Days after, our Friends hit on this Method to ſatisfy us both, and make a friendly Concluſion of the Affair; *viz.* that the Company who were at *Lambeth* Wells that Night, or as many of them as could be got (Mrs. *Hopkins* excepted) ſhould be invited to a Dinner at a Time and Place which ſhould be appointed, there to ſtate, and fairly lay the Matter in Debate before them, and whoever it was given againſt, ſhould beg the others Pardon, and pay the Expence, not exceeding a Guinea, what might be more, to be equally clubbed by the Company: This was communicated, and agreed to, by Mr. *Miller* and me. The Company was invited on a certain Day, and my Houſe, the *Queen*'s *Arms*, was propoſed for the Meeting: This I rejected. Then the *Fountain* Tavern in *Catherine-ſtreet* was named, where the Company met, and dined: As ſoon as the Cloth was taken away, Wine and Glaſſes brought, and the Servants gone, the Cauſe was opened, debated, and given againſt Mr. *Miller* by all the Company, even his own Officers, there being two preſent. He chearfully ſubmitted to the Verdict, paid his Guinea, and begged my Pardon; we embraced, and continued intimate Friends ever after.

The firſt of *Auguſt*, this Year, Queen *Ann* departed this Life, and *George*, Elector of *Hanover*, was proclaimed King of *Great Britain*, &c. the

September

Digitized by Google

September follwing he made his Publick Entry into *London*, to the great Joy of the People. No material Event, to my Knowledge, happened during the Remainder of this Year. I minded my Tavern and Bar-keeper; my Buſineſs went on briſkly, my Houſe at *Lambeth* bore its own Expence, under the Care of my old Woman, with the Help of my Mother; and about this Time, Mr. *Holland* came from *Ireland* to Colonel *Otway* on ſome regimental Buſineſs.

CHAP. VI.

EARLY in the Spring 1715, there were ſtrong Reports of an Invaſion and Rebellion, and fourteen Regiments of Dragoons and Foot were ordered to be raiſed with all Expedition. As ſoon as this News was confirmed it raiſed my Spirits, and I began to think of leaving the ſlaviſh Life of a Vintner, and return to the ſweet old military one: This I communicated to Mr. *Holland*, who I ſhall call Father, as being my Mother's Huſband; he adviſed me to it of all things, ſaying, if I looked out in Time, I might, for forty or fifty Guineas, purchaſe a Quarter-maſter's Warrant, which would bring me Five Shillings a Day, and he thought that much preferable to the deſtroying myſelf by drinking, which muſt ſoon be the Caſe if I continued in the Tavern. This kind Advice of my Father was ſo anſwerable to my real Inclination, that, without farther Debate, I reſolved to let the Tavern, but firſt inquired, and was informed, there was a vacant Warrant in Colonel *Stanhope*'s Regiment: I went to the Colonel, and acquainted him, I had the Honour to ſerve her late Majeſty in *Flanders* under the Dukes of *Marlborough* and *Ormond*, that I loved a military Life, having been bred to

Digitized by Google

it from my Youth, was told there was a Vacancy for a Quarter-maſter in his Regiment, and came to treat with him about it: He aſked me ſome Queſtions in the military Way, which I anſwered to his Satisfaction. He ſaid he believed there was ſuch a Vacancy, but he could not do any thing in it till he ſaw the Major, and deſired I would call again. I had forgot to mention that laſt Year, ſoon after Peace was proclaimed, I filed a Bill in the King's Bench againſt Colonel *Pocock*, and Major *Green*, purſuant to an Act of Parliament paſſed, to oblige all Colonels, *&c.* to account with their reſpective Regiments (this was for the fifty Crowns given me by the Regiment, as I have mentioned before) the Cauſe was defended until the Eve of Tryal, when finding I had ſubpœned Sir *Robert Montgomery*, Lieutenant-Colonel, and all the Captains who were in Town, the Attornies on both Sides met, and ſent for me, offering me Payment, if I would defray my own Coſt; I deſired their Attorney to tell them, that I would ſooner try the Cauſe than abate Two-pence; finding me in this Reſolution, he paid me Debt and Coſt; ſo ended all Dealings with thoſe Gentlemen.

When I parted with Colonel *Stanhope*, I went to dine with my old Woman at *Lambeth*; my Father and Mother *Holland* were there. After Dinner, I told them my Intention of quitting Buſineſs, and letting the Tavern; that I was ſure the Slavery of ſitting up, and what was worſe, drinking, would ſoon deſtroy me. My poor old Woman ſeemed overjoyed at this News; I told my Father, that purſuant to his Advice, I looked out, and had heard of a Vacancy in Colonel *Stanhope*'s Dragoons; that I had talked with him about it, and hoped I ſhould ſoon be his Brother Quarter-maſter; he ſaid, he was glad to hear it. This was a Thunderbolt to the old Woman, but my Determination was

Digitized by Google

was fixed, and my Father and Mother uſed ſeveral Arguments to make it ſit eaſy with her. After Dinner, my Father and I left the two Women, went to the *Queen's Arms*, and took a Bottle. I told Mrs. *Jolly* my Intention, and adviſed her from Bar-keeper to become Miſtreſs, and be my Tenant; aſſuring her, I thought it would be to her Advantage, as ſhe now very well underſtood the Buſineſs, and that ſhe ſhould come in on as reaſonable Terms as poſſible, bidding her to conſider of it, and deſired my Father to take no Notice of this as yet to the Women.

The next Day I waited on Colonel *Stanhope*, who told me, that the Major had been treating with one *Murphy* about the Vacancy I ſpoke of, who promiſed the next Day at ten o'Clock to pay the Money, that if he did not come punctual to his Time, he had ordered Major *Manning* to fill the Warrant for me, which he had already ſigned, that I muſt pay the Major Forty Guineas, which was the Sum *Murphy* was to pay, deſiring me not to fail being at his Lodging in *Southampton-ſtreet*, *Covent Garden*, at the Hour, and if *Murphy* failed, I might depend on having the Warrant.

After I left Colonel *Stanhope*, in my Walks I dropped into a *Derbyſhire* Alehouſe, where ſeveral of my Acquaintance frequented; I there met with an Adventure that might, in all Probability, have fruſtrated my Intention of waiting on Major *Manning* the next Day, and have proved of worſe Conſequence. There was then in *London* one Captain *Hardyman*, of whom I had heard a great deal, but never had the Honour to ſee him, though I often wiſhed it. This Gentleman was reputed brave, but quarrelſome, which are rarely to be met with in one and the ſame Perſon. Thoſe two Talents he chiefly put in Practice againſt the *Iriſh*, publickly profeſſing a mortal Hatred to that Nation, having,

Digitized by Google

or pretending to have, ſo good a Noſe, that he could ſmell an *Iriſhman* from the reſt of the human Specie: I had not been long in the Houſe, but I ſaw ſix or ſeven Gentlemen drinking their Pints; whom I knew. I called for a Pint, but before I had finiſhed it, in came a portly Gentleman, and called for a Pint of *Derby*; ſome of the Gentlemen got up, wiſhing him a good Morning, by the Title and Name of Captain *Hardyman*. I was really glad to ſee him, though I neither intended nor expected any Diſpute with him, but ſoon found to the contrary. He was not ten Minutes in the Room, before he began to ſuck his Breath through his Noſtrils, as if taking Snuff, ſwearing, damn him, he ſmelt an *Iriſhman*. I heard one of thoſe who ſat at the next Table, ſay, Now the Game begins. In a very little Time, the Captain repeated his Words again; I looked very earneſtly at all the Company, and was ſure there was no *Iriſhman* in the Room but myſelf; I reſolved, if he ſhould repeat it again, to ſhew my Reſentment; he did not keep me long in Suſpenſe, when, with an audible Voice, he ſwore, d---n his Bl--d, he ſmelt a rank Smell of an *Iriſhman*; I called for a freſh Pint of Ale, got up, and walked very gravely towards him, and addreſſing him in this Manner; "Sir, as I am the only *Iriſhman* "in this Room, whoſe rank Smell could be ſo offen- "ſive to you"—Without hearing any more, he aſked me in a lofty Manner, "What then, Sir? Why, Sir, I "think I am obliged in Honour to prevent (as much "as in me lies) its having a worſe Effect on you, by "waſhing it away, which I ſhall do in this Manner," flinging the Pint of Ale in his Face, which blinded him for a while. I went to my Seat, called for another Pint, ſat above half an Hour, till he had, with the Help of the Landlady and ſome of the Company, dried himſelf, and got his Sight reſtored. At laſt, finding he did not offer to reſent it, I paid

paid for my Ale, and went away, though I declare I never in my Life was in a better Diſpoſition to take a Breathing, or meaſure the Length of my Sword than at this Time, but kind Providence was more favourable to me than my own Wiſhes, by ſoftning this reputed terrible Man's Heart to a peaceable Diſpoſition, to the Wonder of all who knew him, or heard this Affair.

I went the next Day (as ordered by Colonel *Stanhope*) to Major *Manning*'s by ten o'Clock. I met Mr. *Murphy* coming down Stairs with the Warrant in his Hand; nevertheleſs, I went up to the Major, who told me, the Buſineſs was done, but deſired me to go with him to the Colonel, that probably ſomething elſe might offer for me, as I was an old Soldier, ſuch being very acceptable at preſent. I went with him, and the Colonel and he had ſome private Converſation together: When I was ſent for in, the Colonel was pleaſed to tell me, he was really ſorry at my Diſappointment, but he had an Offer to make, which, if I would accept of, I might depend on his making it equal in Pay to a Quarter-maſter; and, upon his Honour, I ſhould have the Refuſal of the firſt Quarter-maſter's Place that ſhould be vacant; as I underſtood Diſcipline, I ſhould be put on no Duty, but be an Aſſiſtant to the Adjutant in exerciſing the Regiment; that I ſhould muſter as Sergeant, receive Half a Crown a Day, and ſhould be at no Expence for a Horſe, until better provided for: This I accepted of, being reſolved to take my Ramble. The Colonel told me, he did not know how ſoon he might ſend me to *Leiceſter*, the Place of Rendezvous for his Regiment, deſiring me to be ready; as I had ſome Affairs to ſettle in Town, I begged he would indulge me for eight Days, which he readily granted. I then took my Leave, and went home to my Tavern: I aſked Mrs. *Jolly*, if ſhe had conſidered

Digitized by Google

of my Propoſal, for there was but a ſhort Time to think about it, that I had agreed for a Poſt, and ſhould be gone in ten Days at fartheſt; ſhe ſaid, if the *Dutch* Woman approved of her, ſhe would be my Tenant with all her Heart. I ſent to the Coffee-houſe for my Father, when he came, I informed him what I had done with Colonel *Stanhope*, and my Deſign of letting the Tavern to Mrs. *Jolly*, deſiring the Favour of his Advice, in Concert with his Wife, to bring it to bear with the old Woman; this he promiſed, and managed it ſo well, with the Aſſiſtance of her, that at a Meeting we had the next Day at the Tavern, when I ſpoke of publiſhing an Advertiſement to lett the Houſe, the old Woman herſelf propoſed my letting it to Mrs. *Jolly*: This Motion being ſtrenuouſly backed by my Father and Mother, ſo there was no going againſt it. We ſent for an Attorney, had Articles drawn, with a Clauſe of Surrender inſerted, only reſerving a Bed-chamber for my Uſe, when I ſhould be in Town. I likewiſe ſent a Letter to Mr. *Whitehead*, the Wine-merchant, to acquaint him, I was going into the Army, and deſired him to come the next Day to ſettle his Accompts with me, and receive his Money; he came, had the Wines guaged, I paid him the Deficiency, and he took Mrs. *Jolly* for the reſt, giving me a Releaſe, ſo we parted good Friends.

The next Day, an Inventory was taken of all the Goods by two ſworn Appraiſers, one on each Side. Mrs. *Jolly* paid for every thing as appraiſed to the old Woman, as I directed, moſt Part of the Goods being brought from her Houſe in *Long-Acre*. Every thing being thus ſettled, we all went to *Lambeth*, leaving Mrs. *Jolly* now her own Miſtreſs, telling her, we would all come to dine with her the next Day, and give her Poſſeſſion according to Law, and that ſhe muſt ſend to the Attorney to meet

Digitized by Google

meet us for that Purpoſe. We came according to Appointment, and after Dinner ſhe had Poſſeſſion given her of the Houſe in Form, and likewiſe a Receipt for the Goods.

The next Morning I waited on Colonel *Stanhope*, to tell him I had finiſhed my Buſineſs, and was come to receive his Commands; he ſaid it was very well, and ordered me to come once a Day, which I punctually did; in a few Days we had Orders to march for *Leiceſter*; I got myſelf ready, and took Leave of my Friends.

The Time being come, we ſet out from *London*, about thirty in Number, Officers and others included, and got to our Quarters in five or ſix Days: The next Day after our Arrival, I was ſent for by the Commanding Officer, whoſe Name was *Mortell*; he told me, in two or three Days there would be a Muſter of the Regiment; that I, purſuant to an Order from the Colonel, muſt be Muſter-Sergeant in Captain *Gardner*'s Troop, be Aſſiſtant to the Adjutant in exerciſing the Regiment, and be excuſed from all other Duty. I made a low Bow, aſſuring him I was ready and willing to obey his Commands, and would apply cloſely to the Diſcipline of the Regiment, which I did with Succeſs, and to the Satisfaction of all the Officers; my Aſſiduity gained their Eſteem, and I acquired a great deal of Credit; for when the Colonel came down from *London* to review the Regiment, and ſee them perform their Exerciſe, I was ordered to the Front of the Center, from whence I might be ſeen by all. They were to take their Motions from me, which were to be performed by Beat of Drum. The Colonel was ſo well pleaſed with the Performance, that he ordered ſome Money to drink his Health, and ſent me two Guineas by the Adjutant. This was the firſt Time I ſaw my Captain; he was a very compleat Soldier, and, in a few Years, got

Digitized by Google

got a Regiment of Dragoons, at the Head of which he was killed, bravely fighting for his King and Country at the Battle of *Preſton Pans* in *Scotland*, in the late Rebellion, very much lamented by all that knew him, and a general Loſs to his Country.

We were not long here, when there was an Account of the Lord *Marr*'s putting himſelf at the Head of the Rebels in *Scotland*. This emboldened the Inhabitants of the Town to ſhew their Inclination to favour the Pretender's Cauſe, if an Opportunity offered. They would publickly drink his Health, by the Stile and Title of King *James* III. in the Preſence of the Officers and Dragoons, which cauſed many Quarrels, the latter generally coming off with the worſe; at laſt, we were ordered not to mind them.

One Day, I was a little ſurpriſed at an Ordinary, where I daily had the Honour to dine with ſome of my Officers. When I ſat down to Table, I ſaw three Gentlemen, Strangers, one of them was Captain *Hardyman*, with two other Officers, who were going to join their Regiments at *Derby* and *Nottingham*, but ſtopped here to dine; however, the Sight of him no ways ſpoiled my Stomach, though I really thought there would be Exerciſe enough cut out to digeſt my Dinner, and prepared myſelf for it. Whether the Captain had loſt the Faculty of ſmelling, had forgot me, or was, like a good Chriſtian, willing to forgive, I cannot tell, but there was not one Word mentioned about our former Affair. Soon after Dinner, they mounted, and went off, and I never ſaw the Captain ſince.

Some Time after this, an Affair happened that had like to have proved of bad Conſequence, *viz.* There was a Sergeant, with ſixteen Men, mounted Guard in the Church-yard: After Tatoo, it is the military Cuſtom for Centinels to challenge People going

Digitized by Google

going to and fro; a Stocking-weaver (of which there are great Numbers in this Town) coming towards the Centinel, he challenged him, with a *Who comes there?* The other being a head-ſtrong Fellow, anſwer'd him, with a damn you, "What's that to you? "Are you one of King *George*'s Bull-dogs?" The Challenge, and like Anſwer was repeated a ſecond time; and the third time, the Weaver making ſtill towards the Centinel, attempted to prevent his going by; the other laid hold of the Firelock, and ſwore he would box with him; a Struggle enſued that alarmed the Guard, the Sergeant ſent out the Corporal, and a File of Men, who took the Weaver to the Guard-room: This News ſoon ran over the Town, and the Mob gathered from all Parts. Though the Guard had Arms, they had neither Powder nor Ball; the Sergeant ſent an Account to the Commanding Officer of it, deſiring a Reinforcement; in the mean time, he drew up his Guard, with their Bayonets fixed; the Commandant ſent for all the Officers to conſult what muſt be done; it was agreed, that every Officer ſhould take two or three Men only, with their Piſtols concealed, and go by different Ways to the Church-yard. Captain *Gardner* took me with him, we went through the main Street, which was crowded with the Mob, who made Way for us, or rather for themſelves, the better to have Room to puſh us from one Side to the other, hooting, and calling us, *King* George*'s Bull Dogs.* As we went, the Captain ſwore, he had an Inclination to ſhoot one of them; I aſſured him, if he ſhewed his Piſtols, we ſhould be tore to Pieces, deſiring him to have Patience till we joined the Guard.

We had not been long there, when about thirty more Officers and Dragoons came; this rather enraged than appeaſed the Multitude, who flung Dirt, *&c.* ſwearing they would have the Priſoner ſet

at

Digitized by Google

at Liberty; the Officers agreed to ſend for the Mayor, to read the Proclamation againſt Riots; this Meſſage fell to my Share; I went to his Houſe, which was a full Quarter of a Mile, another Way, through as great a Crowd, and met with as ſevere Uſage and Language as before; however, I got thither unhurt, and delivered my Meſſage; the Mayor ſeemed unwilling to venture; I told him in plain Terms, if he refuſed, he would be repreſented to Court as an Encourager, rather than a Suppreſſer of this dangerous Tumult, and bid him look to it: When I was going, he deſired me to ſtay till he ſent for two of the Aldermen, who lived hard by, to go with him; when they came, we all went to the Church-yard. The Magiſtrates propoſed to have the Man ſet at Liberty, the Officers refuſed it, alledging, that they would loſe their Lives, rather than ſo baſely give up the military Honour, charging them, in the King's Name, to read the Proclamation, or otherways they would uſe their Authority to diſperſe the Mob, and let them anſwer it at their Peril. The Mayor, &c. ordered Lights, and were putting themſelves in a proper Manner to read the Proclamation, which the Mob perceiving, ſet up ſuch an Uproar, that nothing but their Cries could be heard, curſing and ſwearing, that they would have the Priſoner, or loſe their Lives; and the Officers as obſtinately refuſing to comply with their Demand. Dirt and Stones began again to fly. I took the Liberty to call my Captain on one Side, telling him, I had thought on a Project, which, in all Probability, would ſave the military Honour, and quiet the People; and if he approved of it, to propoſe it to the Commandant. He aſked me, what it was; I told him, to have the Man ſet at Liberty, on Condition the Mayor and Aldermen would be Security for his Appearance at the Town-hall the next Day, at the Time they

Digitized by Google

they ſhould appoint: He ſaid, he thought it would not do, but however would propoſe it: He conſulted the Officers, who all approved of it, and then the Magiſtrates, who, with ſome Reluctancy, became Sureties; the Priſoner was then diſcharged, and carried away in Triumph by his Brethren, and all retired to their reſpective Homes. The next Day the Magiſtrates being aſſembled, the Priſoner was brought, and a Charge was exhibited againſt him by the Commanding Officer; he acknowledged his Fault, begged Pardon, and gave Security for his future good Behaviour, and then was diſcharged, which put an End to this Affair.

Every Poſt brought Intelligence of Lord *Marr*'s Progreſs at the Head of the Rebels in *Scotland*. I was ſoliciting a Furloe to go to *London* for ſome Days, which was at laſt granted. The Day I was to ſet out, being Poſt-day, I expected ſome Letters, called at the Poſt-office, and found two directed to our Commanding Officer. I carried them to him, and deſired to know, whether he had any further Command to *London*; he read the Letters, the one was from Colonel *Stanhope*, the other from Captain *Gardner*, both relating to me, with poſitive Orders to ſend me directly to *London*. He told me, I might have ſaved myſelf the Trouble of aſking Leave, for that the Colonel had ſent for me, and wiſhed me Joy, for he believed I ſhould be made a Quarter-maſter. I thanked him for this good News, thinking that there might be ſome Probability in it, as I had a Promiſe from the Colonel of the Refuſal of the firſt Vacancy; on the other Hand, I had ſome Thoughts not ſo agreeable, founded on a Diſcourſe I had with one *Commins*, a Quarter-maſter of the Regiment, who came from *London* two Days before. This Gentleman and I were in the Army in *Flanders* and in *London*.

On

Digitized by Google

On his Arrival at *Leiceſter*, we took a Bottle together, when he aſk'd me, if I was acquainted with my Lieutenant? I anſwer'd in the Affirmative, but that I had not ſeen him this ſeven or eight Years; he aſſured me, he did not think him my Friend, for one Evening, as they were taking a Glaſs together, he aſk'd him ſome Queſtions relating to me, inſinuating, that though I was a good Soldier, and a hearty Fellow, yet I was, he believed, diſaffected to the Government. *Commins* told him, he was of a contrary Opinion, for he knew me in the Queen's Service in *Flanders*, where I bore a good Character, and behaved well; the other replied, he was glad to hear it was ſo, and when they came to Quarters, would ſend for me to drink a Bottle with them.

This Intelligence of *Commins*'s, together with the the Colonel's Orders, made me take thoſe Meaſures I did not intend. I packed up all my Things, and ſent my Trunk (for fear of the worſt) to the Inn, to go by the Waggon to *London*, as directed, for which I took a Receipt, then ſet out on my Journey, which I performed in two Days. The next Morning I waited on Colonel *Stanhope*, at his Lodgings in *Dartmouth-ſtreet*, *Weſtminſter*; I was ſhewed into a Parlour; when he came in, he at firſt did not know me, but deſired me to ſit down; I informed him my Name was *Drake*, and that I came from his Regiment to know his Commands; he inſiſted on my being ſeated, and then addreſſed himſelf to me in the following Manner: " Mr. " *Drake*, I have a very good Character of you " from the Officers of my Regiment, they inform " me you are a compleat Soldier, and I know " you have been both uſeful and diligent in the " Diſcipline of it, ſo I have no Objection to your " Perſon or Behaviour; but, on the other Hand, I " have an Account of your being a conſiderable

" Time

Digitized by Google

" Time in the *French* Service, and that you were " actually with the Pretender, on his intended In- " vaſion into *Scotland*, in 1708, and conſequent- " ly an Enemy to the Government. It will be a " great Satisfaction to me, if you can clear your- " ſelf of theſe Aſperſions, for your Behaviour has " merited my Eſteem; but theſe times are tickliſh, " and Care muſt be taken who we employ." I confeſſed that my having been in the *French* Service was true, and at the Reduction of *Ireland*, I went with King *James*'s Army to *France*, and I ſerved there ſeveral Years; but whoever told him that I was in the intended Invaſion with the Pretender, wronged me much, being at that time faſt in Irons, in this Town, and had been ſo ten Months before that Invaſion was ſpoke of. I had been Captain of Volunteers, on board a *French* Privateer, taken Priſoner in the *Downs*, off *Deal*, brought to *London*, where I ſuffered a tedious Confinement, from the Beginning of *February* 1707, until *June* 1708, when I took my Trial, was ſentenced to be drawn, hanged and quartered; but on a proper Repreſentation to her late Majeſty, that I was an Object worthy of her Mercy, ſhe was graciouſly pleaſed to ſave my Life. As ſoon as I got my Liberty, I entered Volunteer in her Majeſty's Service, judging I could not diſpoſe of my Life in a juſter Cauſe, than in the Service of her that preſerved it. What, ſaid the Colonel, were you in our Service, ſince you ſerved in *France?* I aſſured him I was, and if he thought proper could prove it, by ſeveral Officers now in Town, and ſome in his own Regiment, with whom I had the Honour to be in Action againſt the *French*. He ſaid, he had not heard a Word of my being in the *Engliſh* Service, but he would enquire farther into the Matter that very Day, ordering me to be with him the next Morning by nine o'Clock. I was at no

Pains

Digitized by Google

Pains to find out who gave this Information againſt me, it appearing too plain, by the Diſcourſe my Lieutenant and Mr. *Commins* had about me, that the former muſt be the Man; and for a farther Proof of this Opinion, I was ſure he was the ſame Mr. *Sw—ny* mentioned before; who, with ſome other Company, came to viſit me in the *Marſhalſea* in the Year 1707, which he miſtook in his Relation to Colonel *Stanhope* for 1708. This Information, by which I was a Sufferer, gained him but little Credit. I came the next Day by nine o'Clock to the Colonel's Lodgings, as ordered; but the Evening before, an Expreſs arrived with News, on which there was a Council held, and all the Officers (who had Orders to be ready before at an Hour's Warning) were commanded away. When I came to the Colonel's, I was told that he ſet out Poſt at one o'Clock, and was gone to join the Regiment. I went to the Major's who was not gone, and enquired, if there was any Orders left for me, who declared in the Negative. I told him what paſſed between the Colonel and me, and begged his Advice; he bid me write to the Colonel and to my Captain, and he would do the ſame. In the mean time, there was Orders, he ſaid, to raiſe ten additional Men to each Troop, ſo if I pleaſed I might ſtay with him, and endeavour to get ſome Recruits, till farther Orders; I told him, he knew before I could proceed to raiſe any Men, I muſt firſt have a Beating Order; he ſaid I muſt go with him to the War Office, and there he would get me one, which he did: That Day I paſt my Time agreeably, between my Country Houſe at *Lambeth* and my Town-lodging, with Mrs. *Jolly* at the Tavern, and was as happy as the Two Women could make me. I enliſted fifteen Men, which the Major took with him when he went to join the Regiment, which were marched to join other Forces

Digitized by Google

Forces towards *Preſton*. I never received an Anſwer to my Letters, nor any Orders from the Regiment; ſo that I paſſed the Winter with as much Pleaſure as if I had gone to *Scotland*, though not ſo much to my Satisfaction, having been always fond of an active Life. About this Time came a Body of *Dutch* Forces to *England*, one of the Chief Officers was my old Friend, General *Ivoy*, who had ſo well employed me at the Siege of *Bouchin*. I went to pay my Reſpects to him; he expreſſed great Satisfaction at ſeeing me, and made me an Offer to be Conductor to his Baggage, for which I ſhould be paid an *Engliſh* Crown *per* Day, beſides a handſome Preſent when the Buſineſs was over. I thanked him, ſaying, I ſhould be willing and glad to ſerve him, but I was under ſome Engagements with Colonel *Stanhope*, and then acquainted him with the Story; he ſaid he was very ſorry, aſſuring me, he would ſerve me in any thing in his Power; ſo I took my Leave.

Soon after this, there was a Proclamation for all *Roman* Catholicks, to retire (I think five or ten Miles) from *London*, or give ſuch Security to the Government as they ſhould require for their good Behaviour, in failure of which, they were to be committed. Here I was favoured by a kind Turn of Providence, for I found I had ſome Enemies, who had repreſented me to the Lieutenancy, and had got Warrants againſt me. One Day coming to dine with Mrs. *Jolly*, ſhe begged me not to ſtay, telling me, that two Hours before there had been Conſtables in queſt of me; they had ſearched her Houſe from Top to Bottom to look for Arms, *&c.* and ſaid, it was by Order of the Lieutenancy, whoſe Warrants they had. However, I ſtaid to Dinner, and in the Evening I went to the *Piazzas*, *Covent-Garden*, where they ſat; the Duke of *Newcaſtle* was there, his Grace

Digitized by Google

being Lieutenant of the County of *Middleſex*. I told the Door-keepers that I was come to attend the Lieutenancy about Buſineſs; I was admitted, and aſked what my Buſineſs was. I informed them, there had been a Number of Conſtables, *&c.* that came in my Abſence, to my Lodging to ſearch for Arms, *&c.* pretending to have a Warrant for ſo doing, and I came to know their Pleaſure. They aſk'd my Name, which I told them; then a Paper or Book, commonly called the *Black Liſt* was looked into, where I was found returned by the Name of *Peter Drake*, a notorious, dangerous, diſaffected Papiſt. The Duke ſat on a high Chair or Bench, I ſuppoſe as Preſident; he called me by my Name, and aſk'd me, if I had Bail ready; I told him, that I did not know I ſhould want any; Sir, ſaid he, you ſee you are returned a Papiſt, and a diſaffected Perſon, and if you have not ſufficient Security, you muſt be committed. I anſwered, by your Grace's Leave whoever returned me as ſuch, knows nothing of me, for this is what I really am, preſenting my Beating Order for raiſing Men for the Regiment of Dragoons, commanded by Colonel *William Stanhope*. The Duke commanded it to be read, which being done, he ordered it to be handed up to him; having looked at it, he declared it was ſigned by the King's own Hand. I was diſmiſſed with an Aſſurance I ſhould be troubled no more, bidding me mind my Buſineſs, and wiſhed his Majeſty had fifty thouſand ſuch Men. Thus did I luckily eſcape being ſent to my old Quarters *(Newgate)* but having the Recruiting Order in my Pocket, it ſaved me from that terrible Place. I ſpent the reſt of the Winter taking my Pleaſure, nothing worth Notice happening, but the Execution of the Lords *Derwentwater* and *Kenmure*.

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. VII.

THE Rebellion being ſuppreſſed, and every Thing quiet, Colonel *Stanhope* returned to *London*, towards the latter End of *April*. I waited on him, and told him the Hardſhip I lay under by not receiving his Commands, in anſwer to the Letters I made bold to write to him, and the Offers made me by General *Ivoy*, which I was obliged to refuſe, as I was not diſcharged by him, and conſequently obliged to be at my own Expence all the Winter, though not my own Maſter, and might have been well employed if I had. He ſaid, he had Buſineſs of greater Importance to mind, but he had really forgot me; nevertheleſs, if I had joined the Regiment, I ſhould have been continued in Poſt, but muſt own it was not my Fault, then ordered me to call in three Days, and he would conſider me. When I waited on him, he thought my Caſe hard, and deſired to know what would ſatisfy me; I ſaid an honourable Diſcharge for the Time, the reſt I entirely ſubmitted to him; he ſaid he could not refuſe me that, and I ſhould likewiſe have my Pay, equally as if I had been with the Regiment. He gave me my Diſcharge, with an Order on his Agent for near ſeven Months pay. At parting he was pleaſed to tell me, he was ſorry for the Miſtake that cauſed all this, aſſuring me, that whenever any Forces ſhould be raiſed, and I willing to ſerve, he would recommend me. I thank'd him, and took my Leave.

Now it is Time I ſhould ſay ſomething of my old *Dutch* Woman: The fine Seaſon coming on, ſhe propoſed my taking a Jaunt with her to *Holland*, to pay a Viſit to her Brother, who lived at *Amſterdam*. I was too kind to refuſe her this Re-

Digitized by Google

queſt; I told her I would with all my Heart. This ready Compliance took off the Edge of a jealous Suſpicion ſhe began to harbour of Mrs. *Jolly*. About this Time, my Father (Mr. *Holland*) returned to his Regiment in *Ireland*, leaving his Wife to keep my old Woman Company. Early in *May*, we all three ſet out for *Harwich*, and ſailed in the Packet for *Helvoetſluys*, where we landed in ſixteen Hours. Here we hired a ſmall Yatch for *Rotterdam*, ſtaid there two Nights, and the next Day ſet out for *Amſterdam*. Juſt at our landing out of the Treckſcuit (or Draw-boat) at *Leyden*, we luckily met Mr. *Harthensfelt*, the Admiral's Son, and his Companion, who were Lodgers with me at the Coffee-houſe, as before related; he was returning home from *Amſterdam* to the *Brill*, where he lived, and preſſed us to go back with him; this we could not conveniently do, but aſſured him we would do ourſelves the Honour to wait on him in our Return for *England*, which would be (God willing) in a Fortnight; he declared he would not ſtir from Home until we came, if it were ſix Weeks; we took a Bottle together, and parted.

Here we ſtaid two Days, ſaw the Phyſick Garden, the famous Doctor *Boerhaave*, and other Things worth Notice. About twelve at Night we ſet out in the Treckſcuit, by the Way of *Harlem*, for *Amſterdam*, and was conducted by the old Gentlewoman to her Brothers. If I had not been well acquainted with the Ways and Manners of the *Dutch*, I ſhould have thought ſhe met with but a cool Reception, there being but few Words and leſs Ceremony, the whole conſiſting in, How are you Siſter? You are welcome, which really proved ſo. After taking ſome Refreſhment, I left the Women, and took convenient Lodgings, then returned to my Company. Supper being over, we took Leave of her Brother and his Wife, who was a likely

Digitized by Google

a likely Woman of her Age, but had no Children. I conducted the Ladies to my Lodgings, which they liked very well. This Night my Mother told me, that the old Woman had an Income of six hundred Gilders *per Annum* (about thirty Pounds Sterling) that there was three years in Arrears, which she was to receive the next Day. This News was as agreeable as it was surprising to me, for I had never heard any thing about it before. She desired me not to mention any thing of it, which I faithfully promised. The next Day, by eight in the Morning, the Brother and his Wife came to see us, being told over-night where we lodged; we breakfasted together, and when over, I was introduced to them as her Husband; they both wished us Joy, and saluted me as their Brother; they said, they came to invite us to Dinner, and we must go home with them. No sooner had we got to the House, than my honest Brother went up Stairs, brought down two heavy Bags, containing eighteen hundred Gilders, (one hundred and fifty Pounds Sterl.) all in Silver, which he counted, and paid to his Sister, taking her and my joint Receipt for the same. After Dinner, I desired my Brother's Company with me to find a *Jew* that would give me Gold for it; we went and soon found one, who, for a Trifle, about one Penny in the Pound Sterling, did the Business. We staid to Supper, and I invited my Brother and Sister to dine, and pass the next Day with us, which they agreed to. I had Dinner, *&c.* drest at Mr. *Legget*'s, a *Scotchman*, who kept a House after the *English* Manner, and entertained them in that Taste genteelly, but could not prevail on them to stay Supper. No sooner were they gone, than we agreed, at the old Woman's Request, to go spend the Evening at one of the Spell-houses, there being two of them allowed by the States-General in

Digitized by Google

this great City, which brings in a conſiderable yearly Income.

It may not be amiſs to give my Reader a ſhort Detail of the Ways, Cuſtoms, and Manners of thoſe Houſes: They are within a few Doors of each other; Numbers of People reſort to them where thoſe who are ſo diſpoſed, may dance; the firſt Room you go into is ſpacious, and fitted for that Purpoſe; they have a Band of Muſick, begins to play at a fix'd Hour; and there immediately appears ſix or eight, (ſometimes more, never leſs) well-dreſſed, merry, undone, pretty Girls, who take their Places at one Corner of the Room, to ſeparate them from thoſe modeſt Fair Ones, who may go thither to ſee Diverſion. Thoſe Ladies are hired by the People of the Houſe, to oblige their Cuſtomers; they have no Clothes of their own, for on entring here, they are ſtripped of their Rigging, whether good or bad, which is kept for them in caſe of ill Behaviour, or ſome other Misfortune, that may render them incapable of Service, and if they are diſmiſſed, or ſent to an Hoſpital, their Clothes are returned. The Company pays no Money coming in, as is uſual in ſuch Places, in other Countries. Here you are no ſooner ſeated, than a Man with a white Apron, his Hat on, and ſmoaking his Pipe, preſents you with a Glaſs, containing about a Gill of bad Wine, for which he demands a Skilling, (about Sixpence *Engliſh.*) The Company then begin to dance Minuets, the Men taking Partners of the Houſe Ladies. My Women begged that I would take one, and dance a Minuet; I went and took a tall, clever, fair Woman, dreſſed in Crimſon Velvet, and a black Velvet Cap, then in Faſhion. As ſoon as I had finiſhed my Minuet, I took her into a Parlour, that looked into the Dancing-room; there being Glaſs Folding Doors, I made free to go in, ſeeing ſome Gentlemen had done,

Digitized by Google

done ſo before me. I found this to my Coſt to be for the Benefit of the Houſe; for we were no ſooner there, than the abovementioned Waiter was at our Heels, and preſented me with a Glaſs of the ſame Size, and Sort of Wine, as the former, for which he demanded two Skillings, which I paid. I deſired the Lady to drink it, but perceived ſhe was afraid of being ſeen. She aſked me, if I would go into another Room within. To this I agreed, having a Deſign to have ſome Talk with her, on purpoſe to propoſe a Meeting abroad the next Day, which I did. To this ſhe civilly anſwered, if ſhe was ever ſo much inclined to have that Honour, it was out of her Power, never being admitted to ſtir out. At this time the Waiter brought a third Glaſs, for which he made me pay four Skillings; ſo that my three Glaſſes of Wine coſt me Three and Six-pence *Engliſh*, though all not worth Threepence. When the Waiter was gone, I reſumed my Diſcourſe, and told her, I was ſorry ſhe was ſo confined, I had a great liking to her, and ſhould be glad to paſs a few Hours with her, if ſhe could contrive how. She was pleaſed to ſay, I did her a great deal of Honour, but if I was ſo inclined, it was in my own Power, for I might now, or at any other Time I ſhould pleaſe to come, go up Stairs, and, might be by ourſelves with Freedom. I ſaid, being a Stranger, the Waiter impoſed upon me, in different Prices for the Wine; ſhe aſſured me to the contrary, telling me, it was no Advantage to him, for he paid it at the Bar as ſoon as he received it, but above Stairs, Company had as good Wines, and Eatables as cheap as at any Tavern in *Amſterdam*, but we muſt pay a Crown for the Room, if they ſtaid but an Hour, if all Night, it was no more. Thus did I learn from this unhappy Girl, the Ways and Cuſtoms of thoſe licenſed B——y H——s, with ſomething more that

Digitized by Google

ſurpriſed me, *viz.* as I lik'd her, and had given her ſo much Trouble, I offered her a Crown Piece, which ſhe geneouſly refuſed, making a low Couteſy, telling me, ſhe was very much obliged to me for my kind Offer, aſſuring me it would be of no Service to her, for the People of the Houſe would take it from her, as they do from all the Women who live there, ſo that they never can get any Thing for themſelves. I handed my Lady to her Seat, and went to my Women, who flung a few Squibs at my long Stay with the Lady, whether in Jeſt or Earneſt matters not; I only ſaid, if there was any Harm done, they muſt blame themſelves. However, I got ſome Knowledge by it, and acquainted them with all that had paſſed. We went home at about Eleven, and ſo ended the Spell-houſe Frolick.

We ſtaid about ten Days at *Amſterdam*, ſaw all we deſired, then ſet out on our Return for *England*, by the *Hague*, *Mazell* in *Sluice*, to the *Brill*, where we ſtaid three Days, and were generouſly and grandly entertained by Mr. *Harthensfelt*, my Lodger, who did us the Honour to conduct us to *Helvoetſluys*, complimenting the two Ladies with his Chariot, and he and I on Horſeback. Here we dined together; after which he made the Ladies a Preſent of ſome Pieces of fine Cambrick and Holland. He then came with us to the Packet, which lay along-ſide the Quay, handed the Ladies in, and took his Leave. We ſet Sail directly, with a fair Wind and Tide, and landed at *Harwick* the next Day about one o'Clock. I hired a Chariot and Four, and ſet out the next Morning for *London*, by the Way of *Ingate-ſtone*, where we lay that Night, at the *Swan Inn*, and I was kindly received by my old Landlord, Mr. *Palmer*, and his Wife. Next Morning we ſet out, and dined at my Houſe at *Lambeth*; ſo this delightful Jaunt was performed in about three Weeks

Digitized by Google

Weeks. Two Days after our Arrival, I went to pay my Reſpects to Mrs. *Jolly*, and brought her a Preſent of Lace for Head-cloaths, which ſhe received very kindly. I aſk'd her how Buſineſs went on; ſhe told me ſhe had no Reaſon to complain; I often repeated my Viſits, but not oftener than welcome. I now had little or no Care upon my Hands; I paſſed my Time pleaſantly enough, having both Town and Country Houſe to reſort to.

In one of my Viſits to Mrs. *Jolly*, ſhe told me, it was now about the Time the *Eaſt-India* Ship her Huſband went Abroad in, was expected home, and deſired, when I read the News, I would not forget to let her know if there was any Account of it, which I promiſed her. In about ſix Weeks, or two Months after, I read in one of the Papers, the —— an *Indiaman*, Captain *Peacock*, Commander, was come to her Moorings at *Eariff*. This Paper I carried to Mrs. *Jolly*, who begged the Favour of me to go to Captain *Peacock*'s Houſe in *Charter-houſe Yard*, and inquire for Mr. *Jolly*, who went out his Purſer. The next Day I went by Nine o'Clock in the Morning, and was ſhewed into a Parlour, where Captain *Peacock* ſoon came. I acquainted him with my Buſineſs, who, on naming Mr. *Jolly*, told me, he was dead: I aſked him how long; he ſaid, he died in his Paſſage going, and could tell me to an Hour; he called for his Journal, and ſhewed me the Day of the Month, and the Hour of the Night, which exactly agreed with the Time Mrs. *Jolly* ſaid ſhe ſaw the Apparition, as mentioned before. I ſhewed the Captain the Minutes which I had in my Letter-caſe, that Mrs. *Jolly* deſired me to take, which did not a little ſurpriſe him: I told him, as he had aſſured me of Mr. *Jolly*'s Death, I came from his diſconſolate Widow to make the Inquiry: He replied, as he had left a Widow, if ſhe would come to him, and

Digitized by Google

and bring proper Powers, it might be ſomething to her Advantage; for the Amathiſt Ring he had on his Finger (ſhewing it to me) was his. After his Death all his Effects on Board were ſold before the Maſt to the beſt Bidder, it being the Cuſtom on Board the Company's Ships: He then looked in the Accompt-book, and informed me, the Deceaſed's Effects were ſold for One Hundred and Thirty Pounds, which his Widow might receive, bringing proper Powers as above.

Three Days after, I accompanied the Widow in her Weeds, who brought her Powers, received the Ring, with the Hundred and Thirty Pounds, and ſome odd Money, and then took Leave of the Captain. Theſe Proceedings I kept from my Mother and the *Dutch* Woman, to prevent giving the leaſt Suſpicion to the latter of any Familiarity between the Widow and me.

In about ten Days after our Return from *Holland*, my Taylor came to me with ſome faſhionable Patterns to choſe for a Suit of Clothes, which in a few Days he brought home, but ſaid nothing to me about the Payment. I knew it was by the old Woman's Direction, who loved to ſee me appear genteel. When in my new Clothes, ſhe made me a Preſent of ten Guineas for Pocket-money, which I thankfully received, though, by the bye, I did not want it. Having now much idle Time on my Hands, I began to frequent Gaming-tables, and played ſome times with good, at other times with bad Succeſs, which is generally the Caſe; however, it often proves the Ruin of at leaſt nine in ten, that are ſo unhappy to like, or follow that deſtructive Courſe of Life; though I cannot ſay ſo of myſelf, for very good Reaſons; one of which was, I had but little to loſe, ſo that I could not hurt myſelf if I had loſt it all (which was often the Caſe) but when I came to be a little better acquainted

Digitized by Google

quainted with the Society of Gameſters, I had Prudence enough to bet my Money on the ſtrongeſt Side, and play with Coolneſs, which will be ſeen hereafter.

About two Years after this, Mrs. *Holland*, my Mother, took a Reſolution to go to *Ireland* to ſee her Huſband, deſiring my old Woman and me to bear her Company. She made little doubt of my complying, as ſhe knew it to be my native Country, and that I had Relations there. I believe this was a concerted Scheme between the two Women to induce me to go and ſettle in *Dublin*; the old Woman aſſured me, if I would give my Conſent, ſhe ſhould be very willing, and would take a Houſe there to follow any Buſineſs that pleaſed me. I told them, it was impoſſible for me to go theſe Four Months, having a View in that Time of ſomething to my Advantage; but if ſhe was willing to bear my Mother Company, I by no Means would be her Hindrance. If my Expectation did not anſwer at the End of that Time I would follow them, for I had a ſtrong Inclination (which was Truth) to ſee my two Siſters, and ſome other Friends, in that Kingdom, whom I had not ſeen for Seventeen Years, deſiring her not to be over-haſty in taking a Houſe till ſhe could fix upon ſome Buſineſs that might probably anſwer in *Dublin*.

On theſe Terms ſhe agreed on the Voyage, and in three Weeks both ſet out in the Stage for *Cheſter*, and went to *Ireland*, leaving me to take Care of myſelf, and the Houſe at *Lambeth*, which the old Woman left pretty well ſtocked with Wine and other Liquors, with two Servant Maids, who had no Reaſon to complain of their Miſtreſs's Abſence, as I was very kind to them, that they might take the more Care; for I ſpent but little of my Time there, moſtly paſſing my Nights at the Gaming-tables,

Digitized by Google

tables, then retiring to take my Reſt at Mrs. *Jolly's*. I went three or four times a Week to ſee how Matters went at *Lambeth*; every *Saturday* Night I lay there, and ſtaid till *Monday*, but not without Company, ſpending my Time as merrily as I could wiſh. In a ſhort Time I got concerned in a Pharoan Bank, in which I had a fifth Share, having put in Twenty Guineas as my Proportion of one Hundred, which was the Sum in Bank. This brought me in ſufficient to live genteely.

Towards the latter End of this Year 1718, my good Brother departed this Life, who I hope is eternally happy in the next: I ſent my Siſters, and other Friends, this melancholy News to *Ireland*. Some Time after I received Letters from thence, with Compliments of Condolance from my Siſters, *&c.* and one from Mr. *Holland*, who was then in *Dublin*, giving me an Account, that he had two Days before left his Wife and the *Dutch* Woman at my Siſter's at *Killdroughit*; they all longed, and ſoon expected to ſee me; adding, there was a handſome Houſe taken on *George's Quay*, which ſhe had neatly furniſhed for my Reception, requeſting I would make no Delay. This Letter I anſwered, and deſired Mr. *Holland* to give my Compliments to all Friends, and acquaint my *Dutch* Woman I was ſorry at her taking a Houſe without conſulting me; and if ſhe ſhould be a Sufferer for ſo doing, ſhe muſt blame herſelf; for it was impoſſible for me to come to *Ireland* as Things ſtood, alledging the Death of my Brother, for one Reaſon (though my being concerned in the Bank was the real Cauſe) and intreated him to adviſe her to let her Houſe, and inform my Brother and Siſters, that though I longed to ſee them, I could by no Means come over. Several Letters paſſed between my Friends and me on this Subject, which ended at laſt in letting the Houſe, and my honeſt old Woman returning to *England*.

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. VIII.

TOwards the latter End of *September* 1720, ſhe came to *Lambeth*, and found the Houſe in as good Order as ſhe left it, though not ſo well ſtocked with Liquor, at which ſhe no ways ſeemed diſpleaſed. I was really glad to ſee her, and am ſure ſhe was not leſs ſo at our Meeting.

The next Day, ſhe aſked me, how my Tenant Mrs. *Jolly* behaved, and if ſhe paid well. I ſaid, I ſaw her often, that ſhe had good Buſineſs, and ſeveral of my Acquaintance were her Cuſtomers, with ſome of whom I now and then took a Bottle; both the Landlord, and Mr. *Whitehead*, the Wine-merchant, told me ſhe was very good Pay. I then told her my being concerned in a Bank, at which ſhe ſhaked her Head, not knowing the Nature of it, ſaying, I was undoing myſelf; I aſſured her to the contrary, and ſaid I had a good Advantage by it.

About this Time my Fondneſs for Mrs. *Jolly* began to cool, not that ſhe was leſs charming, or I dreaded a Rival, but for other Reaſons which ſhall be mentioned hereafter. I took another Lodging under Pretence of its being more convenient, and nearer my Buſineſs than her's; for I was not willing, for my own Sake, to break ſuddenly, nor did I intirely for above a Twelvemonth after.

A ſhort Time after, I came to my new Lodging, I ſaw a beautiful young Lady ſitting at a Parlour Window at the next Houſe; on Inquiry, I was informed her Name was *Williams*, that ſhe was a Parſon's Daughter, and her Father was Lecturer of St. *Clement*'s; this put a Damp to my Hopes of getting acquainted with her; however, I reſolved

Digitized by Google

ſolved to try all Means poſſible for that Purpoſe. Whenever an Opportunity offered, to ſee her at the the Window, or meet her in the Street, I would give her a Hat Salvo, with a low Bow, which ſhe did not ſeem to diſlike, but civilly returned with a Bow of her Head, a Courtiſy, or both. I often ſaw a plain elderly Gentleman going in and out of that Houſe, eſpecially about Dinner-time; I knew him by his uſing the Hazard-table, and playing at Pharoan. I ſoon got an Opportunity of converſing with him, and found him to be Maſter of the Houſe, where my Beauty lodged; this made me double my Diligence to cultivate a better Acquaintance: In order to this, one Night as he was going from the Hazard-table, having been a little unlucky, I invited him to take Part of a Bottle, which he accepted of: I did not ſay one Word of my Deſign on Mrs. *Williams*, only diſcourſed of indifferent Matters. In a few Days after, he invited me to a Bottle, and kindly deſired my Company to dine with him the next Day, which I accepted of with Pleaſure. I was impatient for the wiſhed-for Hour of Two, which was the Time appointed; the Gentleman ſeeing me coming, met me at the Door, and conducted me into the Parlour, then introduced me to his Wife, and, to a much more pleaſing Object, Mrs. *Williams*. I ſaluted them reſpectfully, but the latter ſomething cloſer, giving her Hand a gentle Squeeze, which ſhe did not ſeem to reſent. This gave me Hopes of Succeſs, nor was I miſtaken, as ſhall be ſeen in its proper Place.

After Dinner we took a Bottle, had Coffee and Tea, with the Pleaſure to ſit and chat with the Object of my Wiſhes until the Duſk of the Evening, then took my Leave, and went to my Office. Now I had both a good Excuſe and Opportunity to viſit my Neighbour, which I did not fail doing twice or thrice a Week, whether Mrs. *Williams* was in the

Digitized by Google

the Way or not, but I ſeldom miſt of her. In about a Month, we agreed to be Partners at a Dance. The Day being come, I waited on her, and conducted her to the Dancing-room; we were at that Exerciſe till three in the Morning, then eſcorted her home, and may ſay, my Strength and Spirits were never ſo well tried before or ſince at that Diverſion. She was a ſmart and good Dancer, and as I had the good Fortune to pleaſe her, whereever we met ſhe always made Choice of me for her Partner, either at publick or private Aſſemblies. She was not full twenty Years of Age, handſome beyond Deſcription, of a chearful, merry Diſpoſition, reputed a Girl of good Senſe, as well as good Humour, and one of the reigning Toaſts of that Time. From this dancing Bout our Acquaintance continued until the Year 1745, when I came for *Ireland*, where I often received, and as conſtantly anſwered, her Letters.

I ſtill kept a good Underſtanding with the *Dutch* Woman, from whom I continually received ſome neceſſary Preſents ſhe thought I might want. Mrs. *Jolly*, though not ſo free as uſual, made me a Preſent of a handſome Diamond Ring of Eight Guineas Value; thus I paſſed my Time, between theſe three Ladies; the two latter (now) for Intereſt, but Mrs. *Williams* for a deſerving, charming Companion.

CHAP. IX.

THIS Lady, at the Beginning of *April* 1722, told me, there was a rich Citizen making ſtrong Love to her on honourable Terms, and, by his Talk, ſhe thought him to be a *Turkey* Merchant, ving told her, but two Days ago, he was ſoon to ſet out for *Conſtantinople* on Buſineſs that would keep

Digitized by Google

keep him abſent for near a Twelvemonth, and if God ſpared his Life, at his Return he would marry her; and deſired, if ſhe approved of his Propoſal, to look out for ſome pretty, convenient, retired Place, where ſhe might board and lodge in a genteel Manner; that he would pay, on Agreement, half a Year down, the other half when he came back. She promiſed him to look for ſuch a Place, and then came to conſult me about it, ſaying, if I approved of it, my Houſe at *Lambeth* being ſuch as he hinted at, would do extremely well, as ſhe would tell him, ſhe had an Uncle lived there, that lett Lodgings; adding, if he approved of it, ſhe would give me timely Notice of the Day appointed to ſee the Place. I heard all this, but very much doubted the Truth of Courtſhip on honourable Terms, *&c.* However, I ſaid nothing, being reſolved to try the Event. I agreed to what ſhe propoſed, deſiring her to let me know their Reſolutions by a Penny-poſt Letter, which ſhe promiſed.

Two Days after I received a Letter, acquainting me that nothing could pleaſe the Gentleman better than to hear ſhe had an Uncle with whom, as he thought, ſhe might paſs her Time with more Freedom and Satisfaction than with Strangers. On the *Saturday* following (this being *Thurſday*) they would be with me at Twelve o'Clock. They came punctually to the Time, and my old Gentlewoman received them as I directed, ſhewed them the Houſe, then conducted them to the Parlour; we had a Bottle of Sherry, and ſome Biſcuits. I paid my Reſpects to the Gentleman, and Mrs. *Williams*, as a Relation, who returned my Compliment with the Reſpect due to an Uncle. We walked out to my little Garden, which they were pleaſed to ſay, was very neat. The two Women went in, and then we began to talk of Buſineſs. He confirmed every Thing

Digitized by Google

Thing which Mrs. *Williams* (who I ſhall henceforward ſtile Niece) told me, relating to Courtſhip and Matrimony, which he was reſolved, by the Bleſſing of God, to perform at his Return from *Conſtantinople*, where his Buſineſs called him for ſome Time; that my Niece's Willingneſs to board with me, during his Abſence, gave him a ſenſible Pleaſure; that he liked the Apartment on the firſt Floor very well, deſiring, at one Word, to know the Price. I aſſured him, it never was lett under a Guinea a Week; he ſaid, that was not dear. When my Niece came to us, he aſked, what ſhe muſt pay for her Board? I told him, I had never boarded any under Half a Guinea *per* Week; he ſaid, he was but of few Words, and he would pay me thirty Shillings *per* Week for my firſt Floor and her Board for twelve Months certain, to begin the *Monday* following; then offered to pay one Half Year in Hand, the other at his Return, with five Guineas to bind the Bargain. I agreed to the Terms, but refuſed the five Guineas, telling him *Monday* would be Time enough. He was for going, but I deſired he would accept Part of a Family Dinner: This Requeſt was backed by my Niece, and they ſtaid as I expected. I took care to have a genteel One, by which I imagined he would conceive a good Opinion of my Houſekeeping. After Dinner, we drank a hearty Bottle, and towards Evening, they went away well pleaſed, the Gentleman aſſuring me, they would dine with me on *Monday*.

On the Day appointed they came, and, to loſe no Time, he paid me before Dinner, Thirty-nine Pounds for Twenty-ſix Weeks Board and Lodging, for which he deſired me to give my Neice a Receipt in her own Name, and then gave me a Note to pay the like Sum of Thirty-nine Pounds, Twelve Months after Date, and ſigned it, *Pallmatier*.

Digitized by Google

After Dinner our Converſation ran chiefly on his Voyage, his ſpeedy and ſafe Return, his intended Marriage, tenderly recommending his Miſtreſs to our Care, and more particularly to the old Woman, tho' I was not (I am ſure) the leaſt careful of her. This being the laſt Time he was to ſee her till his Return, he really ſhewed all the viſible Grief and Concern the moſt tender Lover could do on the like Occaſion: She, on her Part, was no Ways ſhort in outward Appearance, but whether ſo ſincere, I cannot ſay. He was a handſome, well-ſet Gentleman, had a good Face, and fine Complexion, of which I obſerved him to be very careful; his Age was about fifty, of a free, generous Diſpoſition, and thoroughly good-humoured. About Sun-ſet, my Niece and I conducted him to the Water-ſide: In taking her Leave, ſhe expreſſed her Tenderneſs, by a Flood of Tears, which the Ladies ſeldom want when Decency require it. I conducted her home, and gave her the Money; ſhe dried her Eyes, recovered her Complexion and gay Spirits, ſtaid that Night; and the next Morning after Breakfaſt, ſhe went to her Lodging in *London*, telling her Aunt (as ſhe thenceforward called the old Woman) whenever ſhe could, ſhe might lett her Apartment, and when ſhe came (if full) any Room would ſerve her. This generous Offer her Aunt took very kind, not knowing the Cauſe it proceeded from, nor never found it out, till the honeſt old Woman and I parted; which I ſhall take Notice of in its Place.

Some Time before this our Bank was broke, not loſt, but the Partners divided, in Hopes to better themſelves; ſome intending for *Scarborough*, others for *Tunbridge Wells*, and a third for *Bath*, ſo that I was left with no other Companions than my Women, with whom I ſpent the Remainder of this Year as agreeably as I could wiſh; my charming

Niece

Digitized by Google

Niece not having the leaſt of my Company, which I managed with Prudence, fearing a contrary Behaviour might reach *Conſtantinople* as ſoon as my intended Nephew.

CHAP. X.

THIS Winter I had ſome Propoſals made me to go in the Spring to *Bath*, where I had never been. My Niece received a Letter from Mr. *Pallmatier*, acquainting her, that, with God's Leave, Wind and Weather permitting, he would be in *London* the latter End of *April*, or the Beginning of *May* at fartheſt, tenderly recommending her to take Care of herſelf, with his kind Compliments to her Uncle and Aunt, and a Direction how and where to anſwer his Letter, which ſhe punctually obſerved, but heard no more from him till his Arrival in Town about the Middle of *May*. The Receipt of this Letter made me poſtpone my Journey to *Bath* till the latter Part of the Seaſon. As the Lover was expected, I knew where my Niece might be found at an Hour's Warning; but ſhe had heard by Chance of his landing, and came directly to me at *Lambeth*.

The next Day he came about Eleven o'Clock, and found his Miſtreſs in a ſeeming melancholy Diſpoſition; but the Sight of her long-abſent Lover ſoon expelled thoſe gloomy Thoughts, which were immediately turned into the moſt affectionate and compaſſionate Ideas of imaginary Love. We paid our Reſpects to him, which he returned in a genteel Manner, expreſſing his Satisfaction to find us in perfect Health: His Stay was but ſhort, pleading the abſolute Neceſſity of Buſineſs for his Departure, but promiſed to be with us at Four the next Afternoon. He came accordingly, but did

Digitized by Google

not appear ſo chearful as uſual, which we attributed chiefly to the Fatigue of his Voyage, *&c.* but ſoon found our Miſtake. He paid me the remaining Thirty-nine Pounds, and took up his Note, deſiring I would give my Niece a Receipt in full, which I did. At parting, he ſaid, he had ſome Affairs to ſettle with the *Turkey* Company, but if ſhe was diſpoſed to keep the Apartment a Fortnight longer, on the ſame Terms, it would be agreeable to him; for, by that Time, he hoped to finiſh his Buſineſs, but was afraid he ſhould not have an Opportunity of ſeeing her before, though ſhe might expect to hear from him. All this appeared a Myſtery to us, and cauſed us to imagine he was off of the Match, though he ſeemed as fond as ever.

In about ten Days ſhe received a Letter, appointing a Time to meet him at the *Crown* Tavern, near *Guild-hall*, *King's-ſtreet*: When they met, he generouſly told her his Affairs had taken a Turn much to his Diſadvantage; but he loved her too well to keep her in Suſpence, and was extremely ſorry he could not perform the Promiſe he had made to her Advantage, or his own Satisfaction, and that ſhe would ſoon be made ſenſible it was not for want of a ſincere Love and Reſpect on his Part, nor any Fault he had, or could find on her's, but the meer Dint of Misfortunes that obliged him to break his Word; aſſuring her, he would ſtill be her Friend to the utmoſt of his Power, and deſired ſhe would accept a Trifle as Earneſt of his Intention, putting ten Guineas wrapped up into her Hand; he then gave her three Guineas more to pay the Fortnight's Lodging, requeſting her not to mention one Word to her Uncle of what had paſſed between them. Thus ended this really intended Match; however, my Niece ſaw him often, and received many Preſents from him. He was a Widower,

and

Digitized by Google

and had a fine Houſe, which (as my Niece was informed) with the Furniture, were all ſold by Auction.

The latter End of *Auguſt* I went to *Bath*, with an Intent to be a Partner in the Bank, but came too late; however, one of the Bankers, who knew me at *London*, offered me a Guinea a Week to begin the Play at his Table; this being but little Trouble, I accepted of it to help my Expences. I daily played at Hazard, by which I was no Loſer, and now and then ventured a Guinea at the other Banks in Earneſt, to prevent any Suſpicion of my being a Puff, the Appellation generally given, when known, to thoſe who are paid to play, with an Intent to draw in others. This being the Office I was imployed in, the Method I took in playing at other Tables thoroughly anſwered my Ends, I not being in the leaſt ſuſpected. I got acquainted with the beſt of Company, and was extremely well reſpected. I made this Seaſon, at a moderate Calculation, 8*s. per Diem*, paid my Expences there, and carried to *London* twenty Guineas clear. The Banker who imployed me (though but for the Seaſon) was ſo well pleaſed with my Conduct, that before I left *Bath*, he, and three others of the Fraternity, ſeparately endeavoured to ingage me for the inſuing Spring Seaſon, but I did not chuſe to agree with any of them, alledging, it would be Time enough to think of that at my Return, which I propoſed ſhould be towards the latter End of *March*. At the Beginning of *October*, the Company began to leave *Bath*, and by the 29th (which was the Day I left it) there was hardly a Stranger (Invalids excepted) to be ſeen.

Being come to *London*, I went directly to my Houſe at *Lambeth*, where I met with a kind Reception from my old Woman, with whom I paſt the Winter. She told me, ſmiling, our Niece had

Digitized by Google

been to see her two Days before, and seldom missed a Week without paying her a Visit. I was glad of this, having requested that Favour of her by Letter. I often had the Pleasure of seeing her here, but oftner at her Lodgings in Town: I also visited Mrs. *Jolly*, with whom I intirely broke off with: The Reason was, she was not content with getting Money moderately, with a good Character, but wanted to grow rich in a Hurry, which soon ruined her Business and Reputation, by lodging three or four pretty Girls in her House to oblige her Customers. Tho' this Scheme brought in Money very fast at first, yet it was not lasting; for, in a few Months, she spent so much Money to bribe and gain the Favour of Constables and Informers, and then defending herself against them at Law, that the Midsummer following she was obliged to quit the House, though not her new Trade of B-- -d, which she followed to her Death, which happened about five or six Years after, reputed to have died worth betwen six and seven hundred Pounds. I was informed by her Sister, to whom she left the most Part of her Money, that before she took up this Way of Life, she was worth some Hundreds more, I mention this to verify the old Proverb, *That a Shilling got by fair Means is better than a Pound by ill Practices*; and likewise to caution my youthful Readers (especially the Fair Sex, into whose Hands these Memoirs may fall) not to be allured, or drawn in, by fair Promises of high Keeping and Grandeur, to the utter Ruin of Body and Soul.

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. XI.

THE Month of *March* drawing near, I told my old Woman my Intention of going to *Bath* for the Spring Seaſon, having promiſed to meet ſome Gentlemen there towards the latter End of the next Month to conſult on Buſineſs, which I hoped would turn to my Advantage. She expreſſed ſome Concern at this, ſaying, ſhe expected my Company to *Holland*, intending to go thither for a Month to receive her Money. I told her, if I had known her Deſign before, I ſhould not have ingaged myſelf, but it was now too late, and I could not diſappoint the Gentlemen. At this ſhe ſeemed ſatisfied, concluding to ſet out early in *May*, and, with the Bleſſing of God, to be back in a Month, or ſooner.

Before I ſet out for *Bath* I formed a Scheme which anſwered my Ends, and brought me four Guineas a Week. My Plan was this; I made no doubt on my Arrival there, but the Bankers, who were for retaining me laſt Seaſon, would ſoon be with me; nor was I miſtaken, for when they heard of my being there, they came to my Lodging, one by one to make Propoſals: My Anſwer was, that I would conſider of it Time enough before the Banks were laid down, which was ſeldom before the Middle of *April*. One *Sunday* they all invited me to dine with them at a thatched Cabbin, within a Mile of the Town, called *King James's Palace*. Before we parted, I deſired they would do me the Favour to dine with me the next *Tueſday*, which they promiſed, and did not fail of performing. After Dinner, Wine and Punch went about pretty freely, and then I began to talk of Buſineſs, telling them, that laſt *October* I had ſome Propoſals made, which were renewed to me ſince

Digitized by Google

I came to Town, and I had promiſed in a few Days to give my Anſwer, which I would now do, firſt returning them Thanks for their kind Offer, which I could not accept of for the following Reaſons, *viz.* That the Method of having a Man to begin Play at each Table, who ſeldom or ever was ſeen to play, or make a Bett at any Table, but at that he was imployed at, muſt plainly ſhew he was only a Puff, and was paid for his Attendance, and conſequently would be deſpiſed and pointed at by the Gentlemen, *&c.* and rather hurt and expoſe the Bankers than do them any Service; that I heard and ſaw ſome Inſtances of the like Kind laſt Seaſon. I mentioned two, which they knew to be true; and for my Part, if a better Way could not be hit on, I would not run the Hazard of expoſing myſelf, if they would give me five Guineas a Week. Some of them expreſſed their Concern at my not accepting their Offer, and all agreed that there was both Truth and Reaſon in what I ſaid. One of them, who was a merry Companion, ſaid, I knew Puffs were as neceſſary at a Pharoan Bank as at an Auction, which cauſed a loud Laugh; however, ſeveral Ways were propoſed to adjuſt the Matter in Queſtion, but none were hit on. I ſaid, I thought I had hit on one, that (in my Opinion) would do better than any yet ſpoke of, which I would refer to their Conſideration, and deſired their Opinions in three or four Days. My Scheme was this; I undertook to attend at the four Banks, and ſerve them better than if they had one at each, without being ſuſpected, by the Method I intended to take; which was, I would begin the Play at every Table in their Turns, and attend when there ſhould be Occaſion, if ſent for; that at my leiſure Hours I would play at Hazard, and now and then venture to punt a Guinea or two at the other Pharoan Tables, where I had no Concern. This Manner

ner of acting could not have the leaſt Reſemblance of a Puff, who, comparatively ſpeaking, muſt be always chained to one and the ſame Table. My Intention was alſo to ſubſcribe to the Muſick Balls, *Harriſon*'s Walks, *&c.* as other Gentlemen did; and, as I always had a great Regard for the Fair Sex, ſhould often try my Luck among them at the Ladies Fair Chance; and, to conclude, if they thought fit, they might try for a Fortnight, if then they did not approve of the Scheme, the Tryal ſhould coſt them nothing. They all agreed that I offered very fair, would conſider of it, and let me know in a few Days.

The Town began to fill, the Bells daily ringing to welcome ſome great Perſon or Family; the Game of Hazard began, at which I diverted myſelf, until all the Gentlemen I had been treating with agreed to my Scheme; and, on the fifteenth of *April*, I entered on my Office, at a Guinea *per* Week from each of the four Banks. I fulfilled my Promiſes, play'd and ſubſcribed, and moreover gave a publick Breakfaſt to upwards of fourſcore Ladies and Gentlemen. By theſe Means I eſtabliſhed myſelf in good Bread, and a numerous Set of good Acquaintance of both Sexes. The Seaſon being ended, I returned to *London*, moſt of the Company being gone to *Briſtol* Hot-wells, where I had never been. My old Woman who was come back from *Holland*, welcomed me with her uſual Kindneſs, telling me, ſhe had received her three Years Arears, and had brought me ſome handſome Preſents, which I gratefully received, and in return, I gave her a beautiful gilt Silver Snuff-box, I had won in a Raffle at *Bath*. Notwithſtanding all this Friendſhip, an unexpected Event ſoon happened, which, with a great deal of Juſtice, as well as Reaſon, cauſed our parting. The Matter was this:

Digitized by Google

this: I had not been above a Month returned from *Bath*, when an Acquaintance told me, he had been informed that my *Dutch* Widow had a Husband alive, whose Name was *Clark*, a Basket-maker by Trade, and that he was seen by a Person he had been in Company with. This startled me a little; I told him he joked; he assured me he was serious, and that he would make it his Business to enquire farther about it, and let me know all he could learn of the Matter, which I desired he would. I went home to Dinner, and was very pensive; the old Woman took Notice of it, and asked the Cause; I told her, in few Words, what I had heard, and if true, she had greatly imposed on me, and no less on herself; she looked surprized, but denied it to the utmost; I said that a little Time would discover it, and that I would not spare either Cost or Pains to find out the Truth; if she was guilty, it would be better to own it than put me on an Inquiry, which must expose her the more; All this was to no Purpose, she firmly pleading Innocence; so dropped it for this Time. In a few Days after I heard more of it, with this Addition, that the Basket-maker intended to bring his Action for my keeping Company with his Wife. This put me to my Mettle; I took a Gentleman of my Acquaintance home with me, who often dined with us. After Dinner, in his Presence, I acquainted her with this fresh Intelligence, advising her to declare the Truth that I might take proper Measures to avoid Law, which I by no Means liked. All this was to no Purpose, for she denied it as firmly as ever; I was resolved, if there was any Truth in the Matter to find it out, which with the Assistance of this Gentleman, whose Name was *Peyton*, I did. In about a Week's Time, by much Inquiry, I was told the most likely Place to hear of him, was, at a great Ware-house or Yard in *Kent-street*, *Southwark*, where most of the

Digitized by Google

the Baſket-makers buy Materials for their Buſineſs. I ſoon heard of him there, by aſking at the Office, whether they could direct me where one *John Clark* (for I had got his Name and Sirname) lived; one of the Clerks looked over a Book, and gave me a Direction where to find him; I went, but did not find him at Home; I was told his Wife was above Stairs as high as I could go; I deſired ſhe might be called down, that I would give a Penny to a little ragged Girl I ſaw at the Door for her Trouble. Mrs. *Clark* came down, ſhe looked as mean as the Girl that went to call her; ſhe deſired to know what I wanted with her Huſband; I aſk'd her if ſhe was *John Clark*'s Wife; ſhe ſaid, Yes, inſtead of a better, I told her I was informed he was a good Hand at Baſket-making, that I dealt in China Ware, and wanted a Groſs of Baſkets, fit to pack up ſuch Commodities; ſhe ſaid he was not at Home, but if I would leave a Direction he ſhould wait on me; I ordered her to ſend him the next Day by ten o'Clock, to the *Pyed-Bull* in *Mint-ſtreet*, which was hard-by, adding, if he pleaſed me, I ſhould be a good Cuſtomer, and recommend others; ſhe aſſured me he ſhould not fail to meet me. To ſhew her I was in Earneſt, I gave her a Shilling, bidding her give the Girl that called her a Penny, and the reſt to her Huſband to drink, ſo took my Leave.

The next Day I took my Friend *Peyton* with me, and went to the Mint. I ſent him to the *Pyed-Bull* to watch *Clark*'s coming; who would, without Doubt, aſk about a Gentleman and a Baſket; that he muſt ſcrape an Acquaintance with him, under Pretence of knowing him, and aſk him if his Name was not *John Clark*; if he anſwered in the Affirmative, to aſk him how the *Dutch* Woman and her Sons did; if he found him to be the Man, to give me, on my coming in, the Signal we had agreed on.

When

Digitized by Google

When I thought I had given Time enough for the Purpoſe, I came in, and inquired for Mr. *Clark*, on which *Peyton* quitted him, and made the Signal. *Clark* got up, and told me he had been there a good while. I ſaid I would make Amends; that I wanted no Baſkets, but was informed by a Well wiſher of his, that his Wife had uſed him ill, by cohabiting with another Man; he ſaid that's very true, for ſhe had lived a long Time with a tall *Iriſhman*; he was adviſed to go to Law with him, but he had not Money. I aſſured him, if he could prove the *Dutch* Woman who lived in ——— *Roe*, at *Lambeth* to be his Wife, I would put him in a Way to get ſome Money, and yet be at no Expence. To convince him of what I ſaid, I deſired he would go with me over St. *George's-fields*, to *Lambeth Wells*, and I would give him a Crown Piece for his Day's Work; he ſaid with all his Heart; I gave him the Crown, and we went together. Being come to the *Wells*, I ſent for the old Gentlewoman; and Mr. *Clark* was ordered to retire till called for. I went into a Parlour with the Man of the Houſe, and his Wife, who were our Neighbours and very good Friends, and called for a Flaſk of Wine, acquainting them who Mr. *Clark* was, for they knew all the Story before. The Lady came; after taking a Glaſs round, I told her that there was none here but Friends, who had heard her deny ſhe ever impoſed on me, or had another Huſband living; ſhe ſtill perſiſted in her Innocence, and ſaid it was all falſe, and I only had a mind to quarrel with her; I told her ſhe miſtook, it being more to my Intereſt to be at Peace with her, if I might lawfully do it, but the contrary would be ſoon proved to her Face. Upon this I called for a Glaſs of Water, which was the Signal to bring in Mr. *Clark*, who immediately came, and giving his Wife a gentle Chuck

Digitized by Google

Chuck under the Chin, ſaid, " How do you " do *Jenny*," (which was her Name) ſhe puſhed him off, ſaying, " Fellow, I know you not," and went off. I aſk'd Mr. *Clark*, if he would take his Oath before a Magiſtrate that he was married to that Woman; he declared in the Affirmative, in the Preſence of the People of the Houſe, if I would pay the Charge, which I promiſed to do We went to Juſtice *Jackſon*'s, who lived in the Neighbourhood; I acquainted him, that this Man came to make a voluntary Affidavit on a Matter that nearly concerned me, deſiring he would ſware and examine him. When he was ſworn, I begged he might be aſked if he knew the Perſon I had juſt ſhewed him at this Gentleman's Houſe, at *Lambeth Wells* (who came with us) and how long he had been acquainted with her; the Juſtice examined him, putting him in Mind he was upon his Oath; he declared he had been acquainted with that Woman about eighteen or nineteen Years, and was married to her at the *Fleet* ſixteen Years ago; then I paid for his Oath, and took my Leave of his Worſhip. I told Mr. *Clark*, if he would go with me to the *Fleet*, in order to ſearch the Regiſter, relating to his Marriage, I would farther ſatisfy him for his Trouble, to which he agreed. He conducted me directly to the Houſe; we had the Regiſter looked over, and took out a Certificate. I gave *Clark* another Crown, telling him, he might take his Wife, for I was the tall *Iriſhman* he was adviſed to go to Law with, and that I was ready to defend any Action he or his Friends might bring on ſuch an Account; ſo we parted.

Before I went home, I called on the old Woman's Son, the Glazier, and deſired him to breakfaſt with me the next Morning, which he did; when Breakfaſt was over, I frankly told him all that had paſſed, about her having another Huſband, his

Digitized by Google

his Name, of his going before a Juſtice to make his Affidavit, *&c. &c.* and deſired him to aſſiſt her in getting another convenient Houſe, or Lodging for her, as ſoon as poſſible, for that I would never lie another Night under the ſame Roof with her, adding, ſhe might take a Fortnight, three Weeks, or a Month, to provide herſelf; in the mean Time, I deſired her to take all the Furniture, which I allowed to be her own, for I would not keep the Value of a Spoon. I told the Son I knew him to be a worthy honeſt Man, recommending him to take Care, and ſee every thing done ſafe for his Mother's Intereſt, and that I would call upon him now and then, ſo took my Leave, never ſeeing the Houſe at *Lambeth*, until it was quite cleared, which was done in ten Days; all the Goods being carried to the Son's, where the Mother went to live. In this Manner did we part, after having lived twelve Years together; and I may juſtly ſay ſhe was the beſt Friend I ever had. The Son having told me the Houſe was cleared, and his Mother ſettled with him, I went to *Lambeth*, ſent for an Upholſterer, furniſhed the Houſe, took a Couple of Servant Maids, and put my Niece to take care of it during my Abſence.

Towards the latter End of *Auguſt* I ſet out for *Bath*; and acted there on the ſame Footing as in the laſt Seaſon. I met here three elderly Ladies I had often ſeen at *Hamſtead*, *Bellſize*, and other Places of Diverſion, and whom I had often plaid with at *Pharoan*, *Fair Chance*, &c. I renewed my Acquaintance with them, and told them my Intention next Winter of taking a neat Houſe in *Spring Gardens*, on purpoſe to divert the Ladies at Sixpenny or Twelvepenny *Pharoan* or *Fair Chance*; and when ſettled, with the Company's Approbation, a Hazard Table ſhould alſo be got; they doubted my being in Earneſt, but ſaid, if I was I ſhould not

Digitized by Google

not only be ſure of their Company, but they would bring a great many of their Acquaintance, ſo that I might depend on having Company enough. I thanked them, ſaying, I was in Earneſt.

I paſſed this Seaſon after the uſual Manner, then went to *London* at the latter End of *October*, and took a Houſe according to Promiſe, in Partnerſhip with one *Smith*, who had been Purſer of a Man of War. He lately came Home from a Voyage of three Years, and was full of Money. We fitted up the Houſe, for the Reception of Company, appointed a Day for opening, and provided a handſome Entertainment, to which the abovementioned Ladies and their Friends were invited, with other Friends of our own. We had about twenty at Dinner, moſtly Ladies: After Dinner was over, a Pharoah Table, Cards, and a Fair Chance being ready, and Mr. *Smith* and I having laid down a Bank of fifty Guineas, they went to Play. Our Company daily increaſed, ſo that our Houſe was not the leaſt reſorted, eſpecially by the Ladies, who were pleaſed to give me Leave to put up a Hazard Table. This brought a great Number of Gentlemen, among whom the Ladies often diverted themſelves, at this noiſy Game.

There were three Men, who at this Time uſed to frequent the Gaming-houſes; they were genenerally very quarrelſome, and would often raiſe Diſputes. To prevent this in my Houſe, I ordered the Door-keeper, who was a ſtout Grenadier, not to admit them; he did his Duty, and I had good Buſineſs, ſo that I had no Reaſon to complain of my Profits this Winter.

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. XII.

IN the Beginning of *April*, my Partner and I went to *Bath*; he diverted himſelf during the Seaſon at Hazard, of which he was very fond, and I at my Offices as uſual, of which I kept him in the Dark. Thus we paſt the Time between *London* and *Bath*, until *March* 1726; when an Accident happened, that had like to put an End to my Sport and Life. It was thus: One of the three above ſpoke of, whoſe Name was *Kerford*, whether by Bribe or Careleſneſs of the Door-keeper I know not; but on the firſt of this Month he ſlipt in, when the Houſe was full of Company; I was going down to the Parlour, and met him on the Stairs; I aſk'd him where he was going; he ſaid to the Hazard Room; I told him the Table was full (which was true) he anſwered, he would go up nevertheleſs; I aſſured him he ſhould not, upon which a Struggle enſued: I had the Advantage, being a Step or two above him. I puſh'd him down to the Bottom, followed him cloſe, and collar'd him: He drew his Sword, but the Door-keeper coming at that Inſtant, we diſarmed him, to prevent farther Miſchief, which he was very fond of. I deſired him civilly to go about his Buſineſs, and he ſhould have his Sword; this he refuſed unleſs he had it firſt, and I would go to take a Bottle with him at the Tavern. I knew what this meant, and ſaid I had no Buſineſs there, for I had good Wine at Home if I was diſpoſed to drink; if he had any Thing to ſay to me, I was going to my Houſe at *Lambeth*, and would give him a Caſt in my Boat (for I really had a Mind to try his Mettle) which proved to be baſe. A Boat being come, I ordered the Servant to give him his Sword, I took mine, and deſired him to walk to the Boat; we croſs'd the Water, and landed at

Digitized by Google

at *Stone-gate*; he drew in the Preſence of a great Number of Watermen, deſiring me to do the ſame; I told him, with an audible Voice, the better to be heard, that I had no Quarrel with him; aſking him what he meant. This I did, in caſe any Misfortune ſhould happen, that the Standers-by might prove I was forced againſt my Will to this raſh Action, nor was I miſtaken. I walked on through a narrow Lane, between ſome pleaſant Gardens; he paſt by me with his Sword ſtill drawn; I deſir'd him ſoftly to put up his Sword, and walk to the *Pott-houſe*, where he knew there was a convenient Green, there we might adjuſt the Matter without ſo many Witneſſes, but he would not hear nor put up his Sword. The Watermen followed to ſee the Event: By the Time we got to the Green the Mob encreaſed greatly; here I flung off my Coat, drew, and to it we went. He was but an indifferent Sword's-man, and was Left-handed, which a little puzzled me at firſt, but I ſoon got over it. I gave him a ſlight Wound in the left Shoulder, and may ſay (without Vanity) I might eaſily have diſpatched him, had I been as bloody-minded as he proved. However, I gave him another Touch in the left Wriſt, then aſk'd him, if he was ſatisfied; he ſwore he was not, nor would be, until he had my Life, or loſe his in the Attempt. He was a clever, active Man, which did him ſome Service on this Occaſion, for on hearing theſe Words, I made a full Thruſt at his Body. I thought I had done his Buſineſs, but he fortunately eſcaped the Danger, by a ſudden and ſeaſonable Spring backward. Nevertheleſs, the Point penetrated his Clothes and Shirt to his Skin. This inſtant, two Gentlemen of the Company I had left engaged at Hazard, being informed, that Mr. *Carford* and I were gone to *Lambeth* together in a Boat, having had a Diſpute, they feared ſome Miſchief might follow. They

Digitized by Google

took Boat, and joined us at the Inſtant above-mentioned, drew their Swords to part us, and fell a battering on ours with ſuch Fury, that mine flew out of my Hand, which *Carford* obſerving, jump'd forward on it, making a full Truſt at me, which I eſcaped in my Turn, by a Spring backward; he purſued cloſe; I retired ten or twelve Paces, till I got to a Rail, where the Watermen, *&c.* gathered about me. All this Time neither the Gentlemen, nor any of the People had the Preſence of Mind to ſecure this Man, who was cloſe to me, nor take up my Sword to give it me to defend myſelf: He watching an Opportunity, ſhortened his Sword, and, over a Man's Shoulder, ſtabbed me in the Throat. Finding myſelf wounded in this barbarous Manner, I deſired he might be ſecured, which was done by the Watermen, who declared he had murdered me; for my Stock being taken off, the Blood ſpouted as far and free, as if a Horſe had been bled. There was a Gentleman dreſt in Black, who was a Surgeon, or pretended to be one; he dreſt the Wound, without ſo much as probing it. The Minute my Stock was taken off, I felt a Pain come from the Wound, running over my Shoulder to the Small of my Back, as if cut with a Knife; the Surgeon bled me but to no Purpoſe; the Pain continued, ſo that I could not ſtand. I was carried to my Houſe, in an Arm-chair, by the Watermen. The next Morning, Sir *Iſaac Shade*, a Juſtice of the Peace, with Doctor *Jeffries*, both my Neighbours, hearing of this cruel Action, paid me a Viſit. The Surgeon, who had juſt bled me a ſecond Time, told thoſe Gentlemen, it was but a ſlight Wound, that I ſhould do very well in three or four Days. He was bribed by *Carford* to ſay this, in hopes that he might be admitted to Bail; but the Fraud was diſcovered, and he was committed to the County Gaol. On this Sir *Iſaac* conſulted the Juſtices at a Petty Seſſions,

Digitized by Google

Seſſions then ſitting; where it was agreed, that an able Surgeon ſhould be ſent for, from St. *Thomas*'s Hoſpital, to examine the Wound. The Surgeon being come to the Court, Sir *John Lade*, who was Chairman, ordered him to examine my Wound, and inform the Bench with my Condition; he alledged, it was againſt the Cuſtom and Practice of the Body of Surgeons, to meddle, or look at any Patient in another's Hands; he was told he muſt wave that, and obey the Bench, which would indemnify him. He came to me, undreſt, and look'd at the Wound and ſhaking his Head aſſured me he would make a juſt Report of my Condition to the Bench; he found my Breaſt grew black all over, the great Pain ſtill continuing. This Gentleman's Name was *Ambury*; when he came to the Court, he informed them upon Oath, that I was in a bad Condition; that he only probed the Wound and found the Stab went downwards, within my Collar-Bone, and if it had gone a Quarter of an Inch deeper, I muſt have been killed on the Spot; he was then ordered to attend, and take Care of me.

The other Surgeon, who knew nothing of all this, was then in Court, ready to atteſt that I was in no Danger, (as he had told Sir *Iſaac Shade* and Doctor *Jeffries* before,) the Court being moved, the Minute that Mr. *Ambury* came in to make his Report, that the Priſoner might be admitted to bail. This was now rejected, and a Bench Commitment was ſent to the Goal-keeper, carefully to keep him until further Orders; upon which he was ironed, and the pretended Surgeon received a ſevere Reprimand. I have been very particular on this Subject, to ſhew the Goodneſs and human Diſpoſition of thoſe worthy Magiſtrates, who were, under God, the ſaving of my Life; nor would they hear with all *Carford*'s Intereſt, which was not the leaſt, of admitting

Digitized by Google

mitting him to bail until I was out of Danger, which was above two Months; then he was by my Conſent ſet at Liberty, on good Security, firſt paying Mr. *Ambury*'s Bill, who I muſt own took great Care of me. A Day being appointed for the Priſoner's Admiſſion to Bail, I was ordered to attend, and, in his Preſence, bound in a Recognizance of one hundred Pounds to proſecute him at the enſuing Aſſizes for the County of *Surry*, the Fact being committed there. I gathered Strength daily, ſo that towards the End of *May* I was quite recovered.

This Misfortune prevented my going to *Bath* for a Twelvenonth; but I ſent notice to the Bankers of my Condition, that they might take proper Meaſures to ſupply my Place. During my Abſence, my Partner went on pretty well at the Houſe, and ſeldom brought me leſs than four Pounds a Week to my Share during my Illneſs. Being now perfectly recovered, I joined him, and gave my Attendance the Remainder of the Summer. Buſineſs continued pretty good ſtill, though the Company was chiefly out of Town. Towards the latter End of *Auguſt*, I attended at the Aſſizes at *Kingſton*, with Intent to withdraw my Recognizance: When I was before the Grand Jury, I told them, that with God's Bleſſing, I was cured of my Wound, and was willing to drop the Proſecution and that my Antagoniſt might be diſcharged. One of the Gentlemen was pleaſed to tell me, that I muſt be very good-natured to forgive a Man who baſely attempted to murder me; but though I might forgive the Prejudice he did me, I could not pardon the Offence againſt the Crown, giving me at the ſame Time to underſtand, that the Bill was found, and I muſt proſecute, or forfeit my Recognizance; ſo that Mr. *Carford*, by his Lawyers Advice, took his Trial, pleaded guilty, was fined three Marks,

Digitized by Google

Marks, produced a Releaſe from me, and was diſcharged. This Winter I paſſed in *London* with my Partner.

CHAP. XIII.

EARLY in the Spring we went to *Bath*, where I found great Alteration, not for the better, having loſt my being concerned in the Banks; but was kindly received, and welcomed by my Friends and Acquaintance. However, this Loſs was recompenced, partly at Hazard, and partly by two *German* Gentlemen of Fortune (Brothers.) They ſpoke *French*, and I ſoon became acquainted with them; the Eldeſt profeſt a great Regard for me, and, in a ſhort Time, propoſed my taking a Jaunt with them to *Saliſbury*, and to the *Iſle of Wight*, which they had a Mind to ſee, and that the Favour of my Company would be very agreeable. I agreed to accompany them to *Saliſbury*, but deſired to be excuſed from going farther. We ſtaid ten Days there, lived well, and were very merry; at parting, we gave each other Directions to meet in *London*, where they intended to paſs the Winter, and the beſt Part of the enſuing Summer. I ſaid I ſhould not be there till the latter End of *October*, when the *Bath* Seaſon would be over. We then took our Leaves, they on their Journey, and I to *Bath*. Here my Partner and I remained diverting ourſelves at Hazard, *&c.* nothing worth Notice happening.

Towards the middle of *October*, the Town growing thin, and the Seaſon almoſt at an End, we went to *London*, to open our Houſe, for the Reception of Company. The firſt Day we gave a handſome Entertainment, and had a full Table, which daily increaſing, paid us well for our Trouble. I then

Digitized by Google

went in queſt of the two Brothers, with whom I ſpent the moſt of my leiſure Hours. During the Winter we went to all publick Places, thoſe of gaming excepted, which I never ſo much as hinted at, fearing they might hurt themſelves. I had the Pleaſure of their Company at *Lambeth*, where they were mightily pleaſed with my Houſe, and my little Garden; but much more ſo with my charming Niece, who they uſed with much Reſpect, believing her really to be ſo.

CHAP. XIV.

THE Winter being over, and I having no fixed Buſineſs at *Bath*, I ſtaid in Town to attend the Houſe, whilſt there was any Thing to do; and my Partner went to *Bath* for the Spring Seaſon. I then ſhut up until Winter, and took my Pleaſure with the two Brothers, to *Hamſted*, *Tunbridge-wells*, *Epſom*, and other Places of Diverſion, in and about *London*, for the Summer. The Eldeſt (who I hinted before) was very fond of me, ſometime in *Auguſt* told me their Intention of returning to their own Country in ſix Weeks, or two Months at fartheſt, to receive their Fortunes; that my Company would be very agreeable to them, and I ſhould not find him undeſerving the Favour. Having known him by Experience to be of a free and generous Diſpoſition, I readily granted his Requeſt, and promiſed to go; he expreſſed his Gladneſs by his Countenance, as well as his Words, but deſired me take no Notice of this Agreement to his Brother, but to tell them ſome Days before they intended to ſet out, that I propoſed going for *Holland* very ſoon. Whatever was the Reaſon of this, it proved needleſs; for the Brotner, who ſeemed to be in more Haſte, or at leaſt unwilling to ſpend his Money

Digitized by Google

Money in *London*, being closer fisted than my Friend, set out a Month before him, notwithstanding all his Intreaties to stay for a Fortnight longer. The Brother being gone, I was now his sole Companion. One Day he took me to a Coffee-house he used to frequent with his Brother; there he soon gave me to understand he was smitten with the Landlady, with what Success I cannot determine; but this I am sure of, if she did not like his Person (which might be liked) she did not despise his Custom nor Presents, having received a great many to my Knowledge.

A few Days before we set out on our Voyage, an odd Event happened at this House. I went with him there about Nine in the Evening, in order to take Leave, and clear off his Account with her. He ordered a Bowl of Rack Punch, and we were shewed into a little neat Room, at the End of the Coffee-room, which would hold but four People. The Company being all gone, Mr. *Teshmaker* desired the Landlord and his Wife, who were sitting in the Bar, to come and bear us Company, which they did. As we were enjoying ourselves, there came into the Coffee room, a tall, clever Man, in a neat plain Dress, Tradesman-like. He walk'd twice or thrice, backward and forward, without saying any thing. • At last he put in his Head and Shoulders into our little Room, the Door being wide open, and said to the Gentlewoman, in a rude Manner, "Come out here, it is you I want." "Me, Sir, says she?" "Yes, Come out here." "Pray, Madam, says I, who is this Man?" "Indeed, I never to my Knowledge saw him before." "I said let him be who, or what he "would, he was an impudent sawcy Fellow, to "come into any Gentleman's Room, in so rude a "Manner." He made no Answer, but immediately collared me with both his Hands; and I getting

Digitized by Google

up in haſte to defend myſelf, occaſioned him to give me ſuch a Cant, as I never had before nor ſince, which was the whole Length of the Coffee-room; he pitched me on my Head and Shoulders, under a large Table, at the further End, and went off. I got up, and joined my Company, who were very much ſurprized at his Behaviour. They kindly aſk'd me, if I was not hurt; I told them, No; but that my Waiſtcoat was, ſhewing it, with one Side tore down from the Collar to the Pocket, the Row of Buttons hanging over my Knee. At this Inſtant the Hero returned, attended with about five and twenty Conſtables and Watchmen, and charged me with them, ordering them to take me away. I aſk'd him, who the D----l he was? Saying, I had more Reaſon to charge him for aſſaulting me, without the leaſt Provocation, witneſs my Waiſtcoat, which I ſhewed them all. This was to no Purpoſe; he renewed his Commands to take me away, pulling out a ſhort Staff, with a Crow on it, telling me, he was High Conſtable of *Iſlington* Diviſion, and I muſt go with him. I told him that might be, but he could have no Warrant to uſe People ill that had committed no Offence, and refuſed to go; they dragged me down with Fury; I took faſt hold of the Frame of the Table, which was nailed to the Floor, I kept my Hold till the Table followed to the Room-door, which ſtopped it; they then haled me by the Heels into the Street, where I lay on my Back, his High Mightineſs laying his Commands on me to get up, which I refuſed, aſſuring him, I would not be impriſoned by my own Conſent: He ordered four Watchmen, two to put a Pole under my Neck, and two others, under my Hams: Thus was I carried in Triumph through a dirty Lane, my Clothes ſweeping the Kennel all the Way: My Bearers being tired, they gently laid me down to

reſt

Digitized by Google

reſt themſelves, and deſired me to get up, telling me, it would be eaſier for me to walk than be thus carried; this (though true) I refuſed, and aſked, if there was ever an honeſt Watchman among them that would put a third Pole under the Small of my Back, if there was, I would make him drink; this being granted, I was taken up again, carried by ſix Men in great State to the Watch-houſe in *Holborn*, and was deſired to walk in, but would not; they took me up between four, and carried me in, ſeating me at a Table. I then called for my Bearers, and particularly for the honeſt Watchman, who, at my Requeſt, put a Pole under my Back. One anſwered, I am he, Sir. I then made a ſhort Speech, telling them, that I did not blame them in the leaſt for obeying their Superiors, nevertheleſs, I would give them ſomething for their Trouble. I gave the laſt Half a Crown, and a Shilling to each of the reſt.

By this Time the High Conſtable came in, and a Perſon, in a friendly Manner, informed me, he was a very friendly, good-natured Man, and was ſure, if I would ſpeak civilly to him he would diſcharge me. I thanked him for his kind Advice, ſaying, I had no Favour to aſk; aſſuring him, at the ſame Time, I would not be diſcharged, neither would I diſcharge him, but at *Weſtminſter-hall*, where he might depend that I would call him to an Account for this Night's Work: He came himſelf, and ſaid, as I had the Looks of a Gentleman, if I behaved as ſuch, he would be civil to me: I replied, that I ſhould be glad to ſee one Inſtance of his Civility, for I had ſeen a great many to the contrary: He told me I ſhould; and immediately gave me my Choice, to go to the *Round-houſe* or *New Priſon*, which was doing me a great Favour. Have you made your Speech, Mr. *High*, ſays I? He ſaid he had: I then told him, I did not come here,

Digitized by Google

here, but I was brought by his Orders, and by the ſame Authority he might order me where he pleaſed, for I would go no where of myſelf. He told me, he would find a Way to bring down my proud Spirit. I aſſured him, that was above his Match, when provoked, or raiſed by ſuch ill Treatment; and, before I had done with him, I would let him know he had catched a Tartar. He ordered a Coach to be called, then put it to my Choice, to walk, or go in it. I ſaid neither, by my Conſent: He ordered the Watchmen to carry me, and put me in Head-long. I told him, they muſt carry every Ounce of me; and, as I obſerved before, I would not be impriſoned by my own Conſent. I was put in according to Order, with three Watchmen to guard me, and was ſet down at St. *Giles*'s *Roundhouſe*, where I was lodged that Night in a dirty Room, among a Set of dirtier Company, who curſed, ſwore, ſung, and drank Gin all Night, ſo that I had no Reſt.

The next Morning, by ten o'Clock, I was conducted to the Court-houſe in *Bloomsbury* Market, before a Bench of Juſtices, where there was a falſe and heavy Charge laid againſt me by the High Conſtable. I was offering ſomething in my Defence, but was told by the Chairman, it would be to no Purpoſe, as the Cauſe was not to be tried in that Court; adding, that I muſt give two hundred Pounds Bail for my Appearance, the Bench allowing two Hours to procure ſuch, or ſtand committed. I ſent for ſome Friends, entered Security to the Court's Satisfaction, and was ſet at Liberty.

As I always loved Expedition, ſo I was not ſlow in this Affair, for that very Day I went and got the Names of the High Conſtable, and as many of his Fraternity as I could, fee'd an eminent Attorney, one *Heabor*, and gave him the Names, telling him the real State of the Caſe. We then went to a Council, and

Digitized by Google

and had his Opinion under his Hand. I immediately ordered Actions or Writs to be taken out againſt all, whoſe Names I had got, and in three Days after (being *Michaelmas* Eve) Mr. *Teſhmaker* and I, with a Lady of his Acquaintance, and my Niece, ſet out in a Coach and Four for *Graveſend*, they complimenting us with their Company ſo far.

The next Day, as ſoon as the Tide ſerved, the Ladies ſaw us on Board, and then took their Leave. We ſet ſail immediately, and landed at *Rotterdam* on a *Thurſday*, after four Days Paſſage. Next Morning when we were at Breakfaſt, Mr. *Teſhmaker* told me his intended Scheme, *viz.* That we ſhould ſtay here to reſt ourſelves till *Monday*, then go to the *Hague*, where I was to remain till his Return from *Aberfelt*, which ſhould be in three Weeks, or ſooner, if he received his Fortune, which could admit of no Delay on his Arrival, and on his Honour, he would return with me to *London* again to ſpend the Winter, being fully reſolved to purchaſe a Lieutenancy for me, or any thing I might like better, as far as three or four hundred Pounds went. I returned him my ſincere Thanks for his kind Offer, which I ſhould always gratefully acknowledge. After Breakfaſt, he deſired me to take a Walk with him to buy ſomething. He had a Gold repeating Watch, with his Coat of Arms; the Silver one he wore in travelling, he made me a Preſent of. We went into ſeveral Shops, and bought many trifling Things to make Preſents among the Servants (as he told me) of the Family, he had not ſeen ſince his Brother and he were ſent on their Study to *Leyden*, which was about eight Years before. Be that as it will, he laid out this Morning between fifty and ſixty Pounds, and gave me ſixty Ells of fine *Dutch* Holland for a Dozen of Shirts, which I was to get made at the *Hague*, whilſt I waited his Return; he alſo

Digitized by Google

alſo gave me half a Dozen of Handkerchiefs, with many other Things, to the Value (including the Watch) of thirty Pounds at leaſt. We went to dine at *Penning on*'s, an *Engliſh* Ordinary, and paſſed the Afternoon drinking Pontack (a ſtrong *French* Wine) he was too fond of. Towards the Evening, we went to our Lodgings, ſupped, drank a Flaſk of the ſame ſort of Wine, and went to Bed.

The next Morning as we were at Breakfaſt, he found himſelf indiſpoſed, grew worſe, and, about Noon, went to Bed. I ſent for all the Phyſicians, there being but three allowed by the State to practice, one of them was a *Scotchman* (their Fees are very ſmall, being but one Shilling a Viſit to each.) Theſe Gentlemen having preſcribed, he deſired me to write a Direction, which he dictated, and begged I would go to the Gentleman to acquaint him with his being in Town, and the Condition he was in, which prevented his waiting on him, and would be glad to ſee him. I went and brought the Gentleman: After embracing tenderly, he took his Leave, not thinking it proper, as he was ſo ill, to diſturb him. I conducted him to the Door; at parting, he deſired me to tell Mr. *Teſh-maker*, that he would directly write to a Couſin German of his at *Amſterdam*, to deſire he might come without Delay. I begged the Landlady to inquire for, and hire ſome careful Woman to attend him. She aſſured me ſhe would get one of the beſt in *Rotterdam*, a Perſon that made it her intire Buſineſs, and was both ſkillful and careful. One of the Doctors came towards the Evening, found him in a violent Fever, and bled him: At this Time the Landlady came with the Nurſe; the Doctor was glad to ſee her, telling the Landlady he approved her Choice, beſtowing large Encomiums

Digitized by Google

miums on her for her great Care, and close Attendance, wherever she was imployed.

The next Day the three Physicians met (I suppose by Appointment) and daily Attendance was given while there was the least Hopes. *Thursday* Morning the Doctors told me, they were dubious of his Life: I then went to the Gentleman, his Friend, and begged he would come to see him. He came, but the sick Man did not know him, or if he did, he would not speak to him. I took his Keys, and desired the Gentleman to walk to the Dining-room: I then opened his Trunks in his Presence, took an Inventory of all the Effects in them, put his Repeater, Gold Snuff-box, and a Diamond Ring he wore on his Finger, with some other trifling Things into one of the Trunks, with the above Inventory, of which I took a Copy. I then locked them up, and sealed them with his Coat of Arms, offering him the Keys, which he refused, alledging, he expected his Cousin from *Amsterdam*, having wrote to him for that Purpose: But if he did not come, and Mr. *Teshmaker* should die, he would take them under his Care, and deliver them to his Brother, or his Order.

The Cousin came about eight o'Clock in the Evening, the Patient continuing still speechless and light-headed. The next Morning the Physicians came as usual, looked at his Urine, which they ordered to be kept, and then gave him up, assuring the Cousin and me, it was next to impossible he could live twenty-four Hours. He died on *Saturday* at three in the Morning, just a Fortnight after we left *London*. He was of the *Lutheran* Persuasion: I delivered my Charge to the Cousin, in Presence of the Gentleman, who was pleased to say something in my Praise for the Pains and Care I had taken.

In

Digitized by Google

In looking over the Inventory, the Couſin aſked me, if the Deceaſed had not a Silver Watch: I told him he had, and that he made me a Preſent of it the next Day after our Landing. I ſhewed it to him, and offered to return it, if he doubted my Word, having no other Proof. He ſaid, he did not in the leaſt queſtion what I ſaid, aſſuring me, I deſerved it were it better. I told him, he had made me more valuable Preſents the ſame Day, ſhewing him the Linen, *&c.* that he might be ſatisfied of the Truth at the Place where he bought it, naming the Shop and Street, and that he intended to give me far greater if he had lived. He credited all I ſaid, and behaved very civilly to me. Having no farther Buſineſs at *Rotterdam*, I took the Opportunity of a *London* Trader that only waited for a fair Wind, and went on Board on the *Monday* following. Before I ſailed, the Couſin and I breakfaſted at the Gentleman's Houſe, where I took my Leave, and never heard more of them.

We were detained in the River near the *Brill*, for ſome Days, by contrary Wind; ſo that we did not reach *London* till *Saturday*. I went directly to my Houſe at *Lambeth*; my Niece told me, that Mr. *Heabor*, my Attorney, had informed her ſome Days ago, that he had cauſed the High Conſtable, *&c.* to be arreſted, and they were all under Bail, and deſired to ſee me as ſoon as poſſible.

The next Day I went to him, and gave him five Guineas more, having fee'd him with the like Sum before. He aſked me, who were my Witneſſes, for he muſt ſee and examine them in order to draw up a Declaration. I told him the People of the Houſe, no other being preſent, and deſired his Company to dine with me there to examine and take Notes of what they might ſay: This Favour he granted, and I had no more to do in the Affair till *Hillary* Term, which was three Months after. At the

Digitized by Google

the latter End of *October* my Partner came from *Bath*; we opened our Houſe, and diverted ourſelves and Company to our mutual Satisfaction during the Winter.

Term being come, my Friends attended me at no ſmall Expence, as I daily treated them at the Tavern. At length, the Day of Tryal came, and all Things were ready on my Side. The Defendant's Council then moved for the Cauſe to be put off till the enſuing Term, which was granted. I ſhall not trouble my Readers with a Detail of the many baſe Methods made uſe of to make me drop this Cauſe; but ſhall only ſay, it was put off from one Term to another to the fifth, when it was try'd, with all the Diſadvantages I laboured under, ſuch as falſe, perjured Witneſſes, a picked Jury, Nine of the Twelve being his Bottle Companions, and the Foreman his Partner in Trade. All the Service they did, or could do him, was to leſſen the Damage, of which Judge *Airs*, who tried the Cauſe, took Notice, telling them, they had conſulted this before they came to Court, and ought to be aſhamed of themſelves: I ſay, notwithſtanding all this, much againſt their Will, they gave a Verdict againſt their Friend, with full Coſt, and only three Guineas Damage. I had the Honour and Pleaſure of gaining the Cauſe, though Thirty Pounds out of Pocket, which I never repined at. My Intention of trying it being only for the publick Good, and to deter thoſe Sort of Officers from uſing People in ſuch-like Manner, without any Offence. This long and tedious Affair being ended, I minded my Buſineſs through various Scenes and Changes at all the Places of Sports and Diverſion in and near *London*, *Tunbridge-wells*, *Bath*, *Briſtol Hot wells*, &c. Nothing worth Notice happened till the Year 1738.

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. XV.

THE Spring Seaſon being over, I came from *Bath* to paſs the Autumn Seaſon at the *Hot-wells*. Sometime in *Auguſt* there came to this Place two *Iriſh* Noblemen, *viz.* the Earl of *Fingall*, and Lord *Delvin*: I had not the Honour to be acquainted with either, but knew myſelf (in ſome Degree) related to the Earl, and believe I may ſay, without Preſumption, to the Lord *Delvin*: Be that as it will, I had a ſtrong Inclination to make myſelf known to my Lord *Fingall* the firſt favourable Opportunity.

In order to this, I walked to the Coffee-room, from thence to the Long-room; and had not been long there before I ſaw his Lordſhip come in alone. I went towards him, fully reſolved to execute my Deſign; but on my approaching him, my Heart failed me, which never happened in Attempts of greater Danger. When I got to my Lodging, I argued with, and blamed myſelf, for being ſo weak, and reſolved on a ſecond Attempt, which proved to as little Purpoſe, being as faint-hearted as ever. I reflected, that a Man in ſuch Circumſtances as I knew myſelf to be in, it would ſeem ridiculous to endeavour to cultivate an Acquaintance, or claim Kindred, to Men of Title and Fortune; and, inſtead of being well received, might be looked upon with Coolneſs, if not with Contempt, which never would agree with my Temper, ſo dropped all Thoughts of it.

I had been pretty lucky, and my Pocket tolerably well lined, when I took it in my Head to take a Jaunt to *Ireland*, to ſee an only Siſter then living, near Ninety Years of Age. Without further Conſideration I went to *Briſtol*, and agreed with the Maſter of a Ship, bound for *Dublin*, then taking in

Digitized by Google

in her Lading, who told me, the Weather permitting, he would, with God's Bleſſing, ſail in a Fortnight. I made the neceſſary Preparations for my Voyage, fully reſolving to return in two or three Months at fartheſt. I gave my Partner an Account by Letter of my Intention, deſiring him, if he thought it neceſſary, to take a Partner to aſſiſt him during the Winter, that I ſhould abide by whatever Agreement he might make.

Here I cannot, nor muſt not, omit acquainting my Reader with an Event, the beſt and moſt fortunate, that ever happened to me in the whole Courſe of my Life, which proceeded only from giving Two and Sixpence for Half a Crown. I mentioned before, that I had dropped all Thoughts of making myſelf known to the Earl of *Fingall*; but my kind Stars would not ſuffer my Loſs of ſo good a Friend, by giving me an Opportunity to re-aſſume my former Intention, without being put to the Bluſh. It was thus: The Earl coming one Morning to the Coffee-houſe, he wanted ſome Change; there being no Perſon in the Bar, he came to me, and aſked me, if I could oblige him with Two and Six-pence for Half a Crown: I obliged him with the Change, which he thanked me for, and went off, ſaying, he would wait on me immediately. He ſoon returned, and we fell into Diſcourſe for ſome Time. I begged his Lordſhip would pardon my Freedom, in aſking him, if the Counteſs Dowager of *Fingall* was living. He told me ſhe was, and lived in *Dublin*. I ſaid, I was perſonally known by her and the Earl, her Huſband, who did me the Honour to own me for a Relation. He then looked earneſtly at me, ſaying, A Relation to my Lord *Fingall*! Pray, Sir, may I crave your Name? which, when I had told him, he aſked me, How I came related to the *Plunkets*? I told him, my Grandmother was a *Plunket*, of

the Family of *Cluny-bren*, in the County of *Meath*. He looked at his Watch, and ſaid, he muſt beg my Pardon, his Time being come to drink another Glaſs of Water, ſo left me. He no ſooner turned his Back, than I repented having ſpoke to him, judging what I ſo much dreaded was come to paſs, *viz.* that this was, without all Diſpute, looking on me with Contempt in Earneſt, which made me almoſt mad: But theſe gloomy Clouds were ſoon expelled, by ſeeing his Lordſhip coming towards me, handing an elderly Lady. He no ſooner ſhewed me to her, than ſhe quitted his Hand, walked pretty ſmartly up to me, and aſked me if my Name was *Drake*. I anſwered in the Affirmative. She then aſked me, if I was Brother to *Molly Drake*: I told her, I had a Siſter of that Name, but ſhe was dead. She ſaid ſhe knew it; aſking me, if I did not know her, aſſuring me at the ſame Time, that ſhe knew me very well. I replied, Madam, you have a great Advantage over me, for I do not remember to have the leaſt Knowledge that I ever had the Honour of ſeeing you before, looking earneſtly at her. She ſaid I was miſtaken, adding her Name was *Nugent*. The Earl came and joined us, ſaying, Well, Madam, are you right? She ſaid ſhe was, but I did not know her. I was ſtill gazing at her, and imagined I remembered ſomething of her Face, which I had not ſeen for Thirty-ſeven Years (Time long enough to make an Alteration in the greateſt Beauty, of which ſhe had no ſmall Share when I laſt ſaw her) I made bold to tell her, if ſhe was the Perſon I took her for, her Name muſt be *Barnewell*, and that ſhe was Siſter to Lord *Trimbleſtown*: To which ſhe replied, that ſhe was Siſter to the ſaid Nobleman. After embracing me tenderly, I was introduced to two young Ladies, her Daughters, then walking towards us. We all went, accompanied by the Earl,

Digitized by Google

Earl, to Breakfaſt to Madam *Nugent*'s Houſe, and there dined. We ſpent the next Day at Lord *Fingall*'s, the Lord *Delwin* being alſo there.

Having now the Honour to be intimate with the Earl, one Day as we were taking a Walk together, he was pleaſed to tell me, he had a Daughter at *Cambray*; that he ſoon intended to make a Tour that Way, and take her to *Paris* to ſettle her in a Nunnery there for ſome Time, and ſhould then paſs the Winter, and ſome Part of the Summer, in that City; and if I would meet him there the next *March*, he had thought of ſomething that would turn to my Advantage, if not, I ſhould be no Sufferer by the Voyage; this I promiſed his Lordſhip. In a few Days after, I acquainted Madam *Nugent* with my Intention of going ſhortly for *Ireland*, having already agreed for my Paſſage, and only waited for a fair Wind; that I intended, with the Bleſſing of God, to return in two or three Months at fartheſt, having no other Buſineſs but to viſit an only Siſter, who I had not ſeen for thirty ſeven Years. She aſked me, if I would not go to ſee her Brother (my Lord *Trimbleſtown*) I told her, I never had the Honour to ſee him, and conſequently was an utter Stranger to his Lordſhip. She was pleaſed to ſay, I ſhould not be ſo, for ſhe would write to him, deſiring me alſo to trouble myſelf with a Letter to Captain *Nugent* of *Carlingſtown*, in the County of *Weſtmeath*, which I muſt promiſe to deliver to his own Hand; adding, that he was her Huſband, and would be extreme glad to ſee me, deſiring me to paſs the Winter with him, for he was in a Manner alone, having but one of his Daughters, and her Grandſon (about ſeven Years old) to bear him Company. I thanked her for the Honour and Favour ſhe did me, aſſuring her, I would not fail to obey her Commands to the utmoſt of my Power. My Lord *Fingall* alſo begged

Digitized by Google

I would take under my Care a Trunk full of Things for his Children, which I was to see delivered to Mr. *Burn*, his Agent. Having received all my Dispatches, and the Ship falling down, I went on board the 25th of *September*, landed at *Dunlary* on the 28th, and came to *Dublin*.

Here I met a Nephew, my Sister's Son, who told me, his Mother lived in *Drogheda* with her Daughter and Son-in-Law. As soon as I got my Things from the Custom-house, I delivered my Lord's Trunk, *&c.* to Mr. *Burn*; the next Day went with my Nephew to *Drogheda*, and was with all the Love and Affection that was possible, received. I had also the Pleasure of seeing some Cousin Germans of the Family and Name of *Stanley*, most of whom were born since I left the Kingdom. Here I staid but five Days, and then went to *Trimb'estown*, delivered Madam *Nugent*'s Letter to my Lord, and must own, I want Words to express the generous and warm Reception I met with in this noble Family, of which I shall have frequent Occasion to make Repetitions in the Course of my Story. I staid here but three Days, being resolved to perform my Promise in delivering Captain *Nugent*'s Letter, though my Lady *Trimblestown* pressed me to stay longer, kindly offering to send a Servant on purpose. I begged her Ladyship to excuse me, assuring her, I should do myself the Honour to spend some Time with her before my Return to *England*. I then set out for *Carlingstown*, was received by Captain *Nugent* and Miss *Clare*, his Daughter, with a great deal of Respect, nor would he permit me to depart till they set out for *Dublin*, which was in four Months. I stay'd a few Days after their Departure, and then returned to *Trimblestown*. My Lord and his Lady received me as before, and expressed their Acknowledgment of the Favour (as they were pleased to term it) I did them in

Digitized by Google

in coming to ſtay ſome Time there. During my Stay here, my Lord did me the Honour to introduce me to the Acquaintance of ſeveral noble Families of Diſtinction, *viz.* the Right Honourable Lord Viſcount *Mount-Garret*, the Right Honourable Lord Viſcount *Gormonſtown*, with their Ladies, who were my Lord *Trimbleſtown*'s Daughters, *&c. &c.* I ſpent my Time agreeably at one or other of theſe Gentlemens Seats, particularly I went to *Gormonſtown* for a few Months, and there received many Favours and Marks of Friendſhip from my Lord and his Conſort; my Lord *Mount-Garrett* living as far as the County of *Kilkenny*, and my Time being but ſhort, I could not have the Honour and Pleaſure of paying my Reſpects to that noble Couple.

This Winter I went to *Dublin* for a fews Days, and took my Quarters at the *Yellow Lyon* Inn, facing the Bank in *Thomas-ſtreet*. One Evening I appointed a Couple of Friends to meet me there at ſeven o'Clock, to take Part of a Bowl of Punch. Whilſt it was making, I went up with my Nephew to the Dining-room, ordering when the Gentlemen ſhould come to ſhew them up. We had not been there five Minutes, when the wonderful Hand of Providence reſcued me from the Jaws of Death, and out of as great Danger as ever I was in my Life. It was thus: As we were ſitting by the Fire, I heard three very loud Cracks, which a little ſtartled me; I looked about, and ſaw the moſt dreadful (as I thought) and ſhocking Sight my Eyes ever beheld. It was ſo ſudden, that I could not conſider, nor had I Time to think, what it might be; the Beam that went a-croſs, and ſupported the Floor over Head broke ſhort in the Middle, the whole Floor at the ſame Inſtant falling like a Couple of Hanging ſhutters, the one towards the Windows, the other coming towards the Fire-place; at the

Digitized by Google

ſame Time there fell a thick Cloud, enough to frighten the moſt Daring, occaſioned by two or three hundred Barrels of Bran that was in the Loft. My Nephew and I had juſt Time to put our Heads into the Chimney, when the half Floor cooped us in ſo tight, that there was no getting out without Help: To mend the Matter, ſome of the Bran flew into the Grate, which blazed up, and ſet my Wig on Fire. I haſtily took it off, and threw it from me, to conſume by itſelf, and I thank God we had no further Hurt. There ſoon came ſome Workmen to clear the Rubbiſh, and, in about an Hour's Time, we were ſet at Liberty. Thus luckily ended this odd Accident; the Friends I expected came ſoon after the Danger was over.

This Affair made me reflect on the Goodneſs and Mercies of Divine Providence, in leaving Mankind in a State of Uncertainty, as to the Time and Manner we ſhall be called on, to give an Account of our paſt Life, that thereby every one may remember, and be careful in doing their Duty to the Great God, who gave us our Being, that we be not ſurpriſed in the Midſt of our Sins, of which we daily ſee or hear of dreadful Examples, from which I pray God to deliver us all, and give us the Will according to our Capacity, to keep us in the Path of his Commandments, and make a happy End.

Soon after this, I went to viſit *Collomb*, Son to *Patrick Drake*, ſpoke of at the Beginning of this Hiſtory: He ſucceeded his Father (though not the eldeſt Son) in the Leaſe of *Drakerath*, &c. He and his Family received me very kindly. I ſtaid ſome Time here, as I found a ſincere and friendly Welcome. This Gentleman was remarkable for having a great Regard and Friendſhip for the Name of *Drake*. Out of many Inſtances I had to confirm this Opinion, I ſhall only name two: One

was,

Digitized by Google

was, an Uncle of mine, my Father's Brother, who died in low Circumſtances, was buried (as I was informed) before Mr. *Drake* knew of his Death; but as ſoon as he heard of it, he ſent to have him removed from the Place where he died, and laid him among his Anceſtors at *Staholmock*, the Burying-place of our Family. The other Inſtance of his Friendſhip in particular was to me: Some Time before I was to ſet out on my intended Voyage, I told him I ſhould ſoon take a Trip to *England*; at this he ſeemed ſurpriſed, kindly telling me, he thought I had travelled enough; that I knew he kept good Beef and Mutton at his Table, and now and then a Pullet or Turkey; that I ſeemed to like my Bed, ſwearing a great Oath, if my Lord of *Howth* came, I ſhould not be put out of it. (*Note*, my Lord *Howth* was one of his Landlords) adding, if I would accept of this Offer, it would not ſtand him in Sixpence a Year extraordinary. His Son *Patt* was by all the Time: The Father ſaid, there was his Son; that if he had a Million of Money he would leave it all to him, charging him, at the ſame Time, if I would accept of his Offer, and he ſhould die, to continue it to me during my Life, which the Son chearfully promiſed, ſaying, he was inclined to do me any Service in his Power; but as it was his particular Deſire, he would not fail to obey his Commands, if it ſhould ſo pleaſe God to put it in his Power, which happened in *October* 1739. when *Collomb Drake* died at Mr. *Genit*'s Wife's Brother, in *James-ſtreet*, *Dublin*. I am more particular in relating this generous and kind Offer of a Retreat for Life, as we were not of the ſame Family, nor no ways related by the *Drake*'s that ever I heard of.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. XVI.

TOwards the Beginning of the Year 1740, I took my Leave of this Family, thanking them for their Civility, eſpecially for the repeated Offer of Mr. *Drake*, who ſtill inſiſted on my ſpeedy Return to ſpend the remaining Part of my Life, and have my Bones laid among my Anceſtors; kindly adding, that I need not put myſelf to the Expence of buying a Horſe, for there ſhould be always one at my Service; but if I would bring over an *Engliſh* Mare for Breed, he would be obliged to me, which I promiſed him.

Some Time in the Spring or Summer 1739, died my good Friend Captain *Nugent* of *Carlingſtown*, above ſpoke of, at the Houſe of *Corduff*, near *Dublin*. I was at *Trimbleſtown* when this melancholy News was ſent by Expreſs to my Lord, *&c.* who did me the Honour the next Day to take me in his Coach to meet the Corps, and the Day following attended the Funeral ſome Miles. This, and the laſt Year were remarkable to me for the Loſs of Friends, and eſcaping the Danger in *Thomas ſtreet*.

I was preparing to ſet out to be in *Paris* in the Month of *March*, according to my Promiſe to the Earl of *Fingall*, but was prevented, by being certainly informed that his Lordſhip departed this Life ſome Time about *Chriſtmas* in that City; ſo that the Loſs of this good Friend I may juſtly place among the greateſt of my Croſſes. I ſpent moſt of the Summer and Winter with the Familes of *Trimbleſtown* and *Gormonſtown*, from both whom I received at my Departure Preſents worthy themſelves, and far beyond my Merit.

My Intention when I left *Bath*, was to return thither from *Ireland*: This was prevented by an Act

Digitized by Google

Act of Parliament paſſed at *Weſtminſter* the laſt Seſſions, to ſuppreſs the Games of Pharaoh and Hazard, *&c.* ſo that I had no further Buſineſs there.

In *February* I came to *Dublin*, where both the Families of *Trimbleſtown* and *Gormonſtown* then were: The latter I had the Honour to ſee often whilſt they ſtaid in Town, but was at Lord *Trimbleſtown*'s every Day till my Departure in *May*. Some Time in *April* Mr. *Drake* came to Town, and we met by Chance; he expreſſed his Gladneſs of ſeeing me, and aſked me when I ſhould go off, I told him in a few Days; at the ſame Time he made me a handſome Preſent.

Early in *May* I took my Leave of the noble and worthy Family of *Trimbleſtown*, and went on Board the *Dublin* Yatch, Captain *Weller*; we ſailed on or about the Tenth of *May* 1740 for *Parkgate*, but by Streſs of Weather were put into *Holyhead*; we were detained there, by contrary Winds, for four Days, then ſailed to *Parkgate*. I no ſooner got on Shore, but I hired a Horſe for *London*, and arrived in three Days. I went directly to my Houſe at *Lambeth*; my Niece (with whom I kept a Paper Correſpondence during my twenty Months Stay in *Ireland*) took particular Care of every Thing I had left in her Charge, which ſhe delivered ſafely to me, aſſuring me, that nothing could give her more Pleaſure than my ſafe Return; adding, that ſhe would ſoon compleat her Marriage with Mr. *Beard*, of which ſhe had given me ſome Account in her Letters; this ſhe performed in a Month after. As I was unacquainted with the Bridegroom, I was not invited to the Wedding, though he knew me, and alſo knew I was not her Uncle, which I believe was the chief Reaſon I had not the Pleaſure to dance at the Wedding: Nevertheleſs, ſhe and I danced together ſeveral Times after. I ſoon lett my

Digitized by Google

my Houſe, by my Landlord (Captain *Butler*'s) Conſent, to the new-married Couple, and ſold them the Furniture, of which they had a good Bargain for the Bride's Sake.

I took a Lodging in *Bow-ſtreet*, *Covent-Garden*, where the Games of Rowly Powly and Paſſage were ſet up on the Death of Hazard and Pharaoh, their Predeceſſors, at Lord *Mordaunton*'s, and other Places. I was employed ſome time at my Lord's as Regulator, for which I had a Guinea a Week, but ſoon bettered myſelf, by getting in Partnerſhip with one *Clarke*, who invented a new Machine much the ſame as Rowly Powly, but played in a different Manner. There was a Bank of one hundred Guineas, and the Banker played againſt all Comers: Mr. *Clarke* offered me a Share; I contented myſelf with a Sixth, which I repented of, for this ſmall Part brought me but two Hundred *per Annum* whilſt it laſted; but all theſe Games were ſuppreſſed by Parliament, and, on ſevere Penalties, not to be played after the 25th of *March* 1745.

Here I cannot omit, for my own Satisfaction, and (if poſſible) clear ſome Doubts of an unjuſt, though groundleſs Opinion, that ſome of my neareſt Relations harboured (and I believe ſtill harbour of me) relating to an Adminiſtration that by Chance fell into my Hands, of a Relation who died inteſtate, whoſe Name was *Chives*. The High Bailiff of *Weſtminſter* took Poſſeſſion of his Effects for Want of an Heir at Law. This happened a Month before I heard of his Death. One *Talland*, who was a Relation, but a Degree farther off, went to Law with the High Bailiff. As ſoon as it came to my Ears, I entered a Caveat, and put in for the Adminiſtration, being the neareſt Relation. I immediately ſent an Account to my Siſter, and other Relations in *Ireland*, deſiring they would forth-

Digitized by Google

forthwith ſend the Pedigree of the *Stanley*'s, of *Marlſtown* and *Finner*, from whence the Deceaſed deſcended by his Mother, who was my Couſin-German, and alſo to ſend me a Power of Attorney, aſſuring them, I would act for them as for myſelf; acquainting them at the ſame Time what it was reported the Deceaſed's Effects would amount to, which was thought not to exceed one hundred Pounds, his Debts being paid; but this they would not believe; the Deceaſed being in the Diſtilling-way, and marrying a Widow in that Buſineſs, they thought there was Thouſands to be divided, ſo that I was kept in Suſpence for a conſiderable Time, without having any Anſwer, and the Law ſtill going on at a great Expence. At laſt, one of my Nephews came to *London*, ſent with a Power from his Mother to take Care of her Intereſt: A Gentleman was likewiſe ſent by my Relations, the *Stanleys*, who had all an equal Title with me, whoſe Behaviour is ſo well known by his Employers, that I ſhall, for Modeſty-ſake, conceal his Name, he being married to a Couſin-German of mine. At laſt, by Conſent of all Parties, I got the Adminiſtration, and the whole Expence of the Law was to be paid by Agreement out of the Eſtate, which amounted in Caſh, received by me, to no more than One hundred and ſeventy-four Pounds, out of which Sum I paid to the Proctors Sixty odd Pounds; my Siſter's Proportion to her Son, and the Gentleman in Right of his Wife, and other Employers, Thirty-three Guineas, for which I took his Receipts; but, by the by, he never payed One Penny, freely owning, that he was obliged to make Uſe of it, and would pay it with Intereſt, when the reſt was to be received, which he was ſure would amount to a conſiderable Sum, if not to Thouſands. But I can aſſure all Parties concerned, that I never received, including a Bond,

Notes

Digitized by Google

Notes of Hand, Book-debts, with the Caſh above-named, four hundred Pounds, which this Gentleman and my Nephew very well knew, having ſeen every thing adjuſted and ſettled before they left *London*. As Adminiſtrator, I was ſoon involved in three Law-ſuits, of which I ſent an Account to my Friends in *Ireland*, deſiring they would contrive, and enable ſome-body in *London* to pay a Part of the Expence, in Proportion to the Share they expected of the Profit, if any ſhould be; but to this I got no Anſwer, ſo I paid the Demands, and dropped all Proceedings, being unwilling, at my own Expence, to go on further.

The Gentleman in Queſtion came to *London* in the Summer 1742. He aſked me, what I had done: I told him, if he would dine with me, I would ſhew him all my Proceedings. He ſaid, he was come to receive Money, and not to eat; that he expected a good deal from me, knowing I had received a great many of the Debts. I aſſured him I had not, nor would I give him Half a Crown on that Account. He went off in a ſeeming Paſſion, telling me, he knew how to make me.

The next Day he cited me to the Commons to give an Inventory, on Oath, of the Effects I received, and how they were diſpoſed of. This I complied with: He employed a Proctor, commenced a Law-ſuit, put me to ſeven Pounds four Shillings Expence, and in a few Days went off without Beat of Drum, leaving his Proctor in the Lurch, who ſome Time after offered me an intire Diſcharge if I would pay his Client's Bill, which I refuſed. Whilſt this Law-ſuit was depending, my Houſe at *Lambeth* being lett to my Niece, and ſhe married, there was a pretty young Woman, not exceeding twenty Years of Age, whoſe Name was *Gardner*, and lodged in the ſame Houſe with me. I had ſome Thoughts of getting acquainted with her, tho' I deſ-

paired,

Digitized by Google

paired, with ſome Reaſon, of Succeſs, I being then about Sixty-five; however, I was reſolved to try: I had a good Excuſe to go to her Apartment, as ſhe followed the Buſineſs of gilding Picture Frames. I watched all Opportunities to ſpeak to her, and one Day meeting her on the Stairs, I begged ſhe would give me Leave to ſee ſome fine carved Frames that were brought to her: This ſhe civilly granted; from this Favour our Acquaintance commenced, and though my Love-addreſſes were coolly rejected at firſt, in leſs than a Month I became quite a Favourite, and ſo continued as long as I ſtaid in *England*, which was about four Years.

The 25th of *March* drawing near, when an End was to be put to our Buſineſs, I reſolved never more to concern myſelf with Gaming, but return to *Ireland*, there to ſpend the Remainder of my Days among my Friends as invited. I ſtocked myſelf with good Clothes, and Linen, *&c.* that I might be no Charge to them on that Account. I alſo bought a handſome Mare for Breed, as Mr. *Drake* deſired; ſhe had run on the Sodd ſeveral Years, had won ſome Plates of ſmall Value, and was but twelve Years old.

CHAP. XVII.

HAving got every Thing ready, on the 27th of *May* 1745 I ſet out from *London*, accompanied by my Niece and Mrs. *Gardner*, who were ſo kind to conduct me as far as St. *Albans*, where we parted mutually concerned at leaving each other. I got to *Cheſter* in three Days; during my Stay here for a fair Wind, I had the Misfortune of loſing my Mare, by an unlucky Accident; as ſhe was led to water, juſt at the Turning the Corner of a Street, a Coach coming on ſmartly, the Pole End hit her

ſo

Digitized by Google

ſo hard on the Flank, that threw her down, and killed her on the Spot.

My Things being come by the Waggon, I ſet out for *Parkgate*, went on Board a Veſſel bound for *Dublin*, and immediately ſet ſail; we got as far as *Beaumorris*, but the Wind chopping about, and blowing very hard, we turned back to *Parkgate*, where we ſtaid three Days without the leaſt Proſpect of a fair Wind: Two other Gentlemen and I agreed to leave our Things on Board, and go to the *Head*: This we did, and went on Board the Packet. We were two Nights and three Days in our Paſſage, and glad at laſt to land at *Skerries*; at laſt I got to *Dublin*, and was there ten Days before our Ship came in. I went every Day to *Rings-End* to inquire, but could get no Intelligence, ſo that we all thought ſhe was loſt. I was left almoſt as naked as I came into the World; but kind Providence favoured me, for the eleventh Day ſhe came in ſafe.

At my coming to *Dublin*, I found my Lord and Lady *Trimbleſtown* there with their Family; I went to pay my Reſpects to them; they did me the Honour to expreſs their Gladneſs to ſee me, kindly deſiring me to be with them every Day; adding, that I muſt accompany them to *Trimbleſtown*, for they intended to go there in a ſhort Time. I returned them my ſincere Thanks, telling them, I muſt paſs a few Days at *Drakerath*, acquainting my Lord with the generous Invitation I had from Mr. *Drake*, and his Father before he died, of a Retreat for Life, ſo I hoped his Lordſhip would excuſe me; but as I ſhould know when his Lordſhip and Family were at *Trimbleſtown*, I would not fail doing myſelf the Honour of waiting on them. My Lord approved of this, charging me, in a kind Manner, to be punctual to my Promiſe.

In

Digitized by Google

In a few Days after, having got my Things from the Cuſtom-houſe, I ſet out for *Drakerath*, and was received by Mr. *Drake*, and the whole Family, with a Demonſtration of Joy, even beyond my Expectation; nor could my Father and Mother, if living, have uſed me with more Care and Tenderneſs. Mr. *Drake* was ſo good to ſend a Servant with a Car to bring my Things from *Dublin*. I ſtayed here about a Month, then went to *Trimbleſtown*. Mr. *Drake* let me have Horſes and a Servant to carry my Portmanteau, kindly deſiring me to keep the Horſe I rode till my Return, which he requeſted might be as ſoon as poſſible. Without entering into Particulars, my Readers may judge, that my Reception by this noble Family was far beyond my Merit. Here I ſtayed about four Months, partaking all the Pleaſures and Diverſions equally with the Family. I received a Letter from Mr. *Drake*, informing me of his Intention of going from Home for ſome Time, deſiring I would come to bear his Mother Company, ſhe being left alone, and the Times were troubleſome, the Pretender being then in *Scotland*, which a little intimidated her. This Letter I ſhewed to my Lord and his Conſort, who were ſo good to permit me, inſiſting on my ſpeedy Return to them, which I promiſed.

Soon after Mr. *Drake* came home, I went back to *Trimbleſtown*, where I continued till *Michaelmas*, when the Family went to *Dublin* to paſs the Winter. At taking my Leave, my Lord was pleaſed to ſhew me another generous Mark of his Friendſhip and Favour, by a handſome Preſent, ſaying, the Winter was long, and I might poſſibly want Pocket-money; kindly adding, I ſhould not want a Friend as long as he lived, charging me not to fail (if God ſpared both our Lives) meeting him at *Trimbleſtown* on the firſt of *April* to partake of the Diverſion

Digitized by Google

Diverſion of Fiſhing (a Sport his Lordſhip was fond of.) I went to *Drakerath*, where I kept my *Chriſtmas*; then went to my Lord *Gormonſtown*'s, where I met with a moſt kind Reception, and ſpent the reſt of the Winter, only going for a few Days to *Dublin* to pay my Reſpects to the *Trimbleſtown* Family, being informed my Lord was indiſpoſed, which gave me great Concern, not without Reaſon. In three Days I returned to *Gormonſtown*, where there was continual and various Accounts ſent of his Lordſhip's Health, ſome times better, at other times worſe.

My Lord *Gormonſtown* went to *Dublin* with his Lady, and ſoon after their Arrival, the melancholy News came of my Lord *Trimbleſtown*'s having departed this Life, I think on the 6th of *April*, and the next Day (by his former Requeſt) was carried privately to be interred at *Trimbleſtown*. I leave the Reader to judge what a Shock the Loſs of ſo good a Friend and Benefactor was to me, for I really want Words to expreſs it. I conſidered it would be imprudent of one in my Circumſtance to pay Compliments of Condolence to my Lady on this melancholy Occaſion, or if it had been otherways, I had neither Spirit or Reſolution; ſo that I could not gain on myſelf to ſee her for above three Months after. When I went, and ſaw her Ladyſhip, and Houſe, in deep Mourning, my Heart was ſo oppreſſed with Grief, that I at laſt vented myſelf in a Flood of Tears, for I thought I ſhould have dropped down, inſomuch that I was obliged to quit the Room for ſome Time: This her Ladyſhip took particular Notice of, and kindly ſent to know how I was. Being tolerably recovered, I returned to the Room, dined with her, then took my Leave, and went the next Day to *Gormonſtown*.

Some

Digitized by Google

Some Time before I left *Drakerath*, Mr. *Drake* desired me to take a Walk to a Farm of his to see his handsome Filly; that he intended (as he told me) to have broke for my riding, for which I thanked him: He provided me with Horses and a Servant to carry my Portmanteau to *Gormonstown*, desiring, at parting, that I would let him know when I intended to return, that he might send Horses for me. I said about the Beginning of *April*, and that I would not fail to return as soon as his Servant came for me. I stayed till the latter End of that Month, but not hearing from him all that Time, though I had wrote to him, I was apprehensive something extraordinary had happened. In this I was not mistaken; so I got a Horse from my Lord *Gormonstown*, and went to *Drakerath*. Mr. *Drake* was in *Dublin*, but was expected home the next Day with his Bride, and a numerous Company of Friends and Relations, great Preparations being making for their Reception. At this News I was agreeably surprised, never having heard a Syllable of his Intention to marry.

The next Day they all arrived as expected. We were nobly entertained for several Days, there being nothing seen but Mirth, Joy, and Dancing thro' the whole Neighbourhood. This Lady's Name was *Reily*, of a very good Family, and had every requisite Qualification to make this Life happy. This Match proved of singular Service to me: Mr. *Drake* did me the Favour to introduce me to Mr. *James Reilly* of *Roreſtown*, the Bride's Brother, who from that Day to this has proved my sincere Friend and Benefactor: Besides I had on this Occasion the Pleasure and good Fortune to get acquainted with many of the Name and Family, who all gave me a generous Invitation to their respective Houses, and whenever I went to pay my Respects

Digitized by Google

(as Opportunity offered) to any of them, I always found a generous Reception.

Two or three Months after, I thought I found a great Alteration in the Family of *Drakerath* towards me, and ſhall ſay no more on the Subject, than that it is well known to Mr. *Drake*, his Family and Neighbours; alſo to my Friends and Relations, how he performed his Father's Commands, and his own Promiſes. I ſoon began to be uneaſy in my Mind, and had ſome Thoughts of returning to *London*, as I ſtill kept a Paper Correſpondence with my Niece and Mrs. *Gardner*, who both earneſtly requeſted my Return; but this I was unable to do, being in an ill State of Health, having a Cholick, which had hung heavy on me for about thirteen Years; beſides, I was low in Caſh. I neither wanted Spirits nor Inclination, but was unwilling, in my old Age, to leave my native Country with empty Pockets, having ſent repeated Accounts to my Friends in *England* of the generous Offers, and kind Reception I met with from my Friends and Relations in this Kingdom. I believe I was not free from the Spleen (if there be any ſuch Diſtemper) finding myſelf in a Manner confined, not being able to borrow a Horſe to go ſee a Friend, though ſome Months before I was not ſuffered to go five Miles without a Couple, and a Servant to attend me.

At laſt Captain *Irwin*, a worthy Gentleman in the Neighbourhood, taking Notice of my Diſtreſs, generouſly offered me at any Time I ſhould want to go to *Dublin*, or elſewhere, my Choice of a Brace of Geldings. This Kindneſs I thankfully accepted of, and went in a few Days to *Dublin* to pay my Reſpects to the Lady Dowager *Trimleſtown*, who received me kindly, and ſhewed me ſome further Marks of her Friendſhip and Favours by a valuable Preſent.

Digitized by Google

Preſent. I ſtayed in Town a Week, then went to *Drakerath*, returned the Captain his Horſe in good Order, but ſoon borrowed him again to go to *Gormonſtown*, where I ſtayed ſome Time. I was on the Point of going to Mr. *Drake*'s, when my Lord *Gormonſtown* informed me that Lord *Trimleſtown* was come from *France* to *Dublin*. I told his Lordſhip I muſt go thither, the Lady Dowager having charged me not to fail on the firſt Notice I ſhould have of his landing. He did not let me go with an empty Purſe, but made me a handſome Preſent, and has continued ſo to do yearly, from my firſt coming to *Ireland*, to this Day.

As ſoon as I came to *Dublin* I waited on Lady *Trimleſtown*, who did me the Honour to introduce me to her Son, his preſent Lordſhip, to who (without doubt) ſhe had ſpoke before to my Advantage. This Nobleman received me with a Carriage and Behaviour worthy himſelf, and far exceeding my Merit or Expectation, as I never had the Honour to ſee him before. After Dinner, our Converſation turned chiefly on the Countries we had travelled through (though not in Company) on the Death of his Uncle, who was killed in an Action on the *Moſelle*, under Count *D'Arcourt*, in the Year 1693, as has been obſerved. Before we parted, he told me his Intention of going to *Trimleſtown*, but it would be ſome Time firſt, kindly inſiſting on my promiſing to come as ſoon as I heard of his being there, to ſpend ſome Time with him, which I aſſured his Lordſhip of. At taking my Leave, he gave me a handſome Preſent, and charged me not to forget my Promiſe.

The next Day I went to *Drakerath*. Here I ſtayed, expecting to hear of my Lord *Trimleſtown* coming to his Country Seat, where (as I was informed) there were great Preparations making for

Digitized by Google

his Reception, but ſoon heard he was gone for *England*, This was unwelcome News to a great many as well as myſelf. Here I paſſed my Time in the beſt Manner I could, daily viſiting ——*Fleming*, Eſq; Captain *Erwin*, &c. Gentlemen who lived near me, but could find no Alteration for the better at *Drakerath*.

One Day after Dinner I took an Opportunity to join young Mrs. *Drake* in the Garden, believing ſhe might juſtly think (if ſhe had took Notice of the cool Treatment I received) that I had fixed myſelf uninvited, and conſequently not welcome to the Family. As I knew ſhe brought a good Fortune, ſhe had a juſt Right to know how Things went in the Family. I therefore freely told her the Footing I thought myſelf on in her Houſe, by her Step-father's verbal Will, and her Huſband's Promiſes to fulfil it, *&c.* and told her (in my own Defence) that I was no bold Intruder. To this ſhe civilly anſwered, that ſhe was an intire Stranger to what I ſpoke of, but ſhe never harboured the leaſt Thoughts to my Diſadvantage; and that I ſhould always be as welcome to her as any of her Friends: The Truth of this ſhe confirmed by her courteous and kind Behaviour on all Occaſions.

CHAP. XVIII.

EARLY in the Spring 1747, a Report was ſpread about the Country that my Lord *Trimleſtown* was married ſince he went to *England*, with various Circumſtances relating to the Match, the common Conſequences of Country News: However, my Lord, with his Lady, Mrs. *Kemp*, her Ladyſhip's Mother, and Miſs *Colt*, her Siſter, landed ſafe in *Dublin*, to the great Joy of the Well-wiſhers of

Digitized by Google

of that noble Family. This was joyful News to me, being very well assured, if I lived, I should pass a pleasant Summer at *Trimlestown*, where they were daily expected. I reasonably judged, that there would be, for the first Month, a great Concourse of Gentry, so did not go till the Middle of *July*, when Esquire *Fleming* was so good to lend me his favourite Horse, with one of his Livery Servants to attend me, in order to make the better Figure.

I no sooner came into the Yard at *Trimlestown*, than my Lord perceived me, and came directly to me, embraced me, bidding me heartily welcome. He did me the Honour to introduce me to his Lady, who received me with a Politeness worthy herself.

We diverted ourselves in the Meadows, where my Lord shot some Rales: At length the Bell rung for Dinner; being come to the Dining-room, my Lord did me the Honour to introduce me to Mrs. *Kemp* and Miss *Colt*, who both received me in the most genteel Manner.

On this Occasion all the Mirth and good Humour possible was expressed. The Sprightliness and Affability of Miss *Colt* soon spread round the Country, which attracted her many Admirers; among the rest, she sensibly touched the Heart of *Bartholomew Barnewall*, Esq; who proved to be the happy Man. This Gentleman is a Relation of my Lord *Trimlestown*'s; he had the Honour of being Partner with this Lady at different Entertainments of Dancing, which I was invited to, where there was a Number of beautiful and sprightly Girls, enough to warm the most frozen Heart; and, by-the-by, I was then but some Months turned of Seventy-seven.

Digitized by Google

At the Beginning of *September* the Company was invited from *Fineſtown* to dine at *Richard Cuſack*'s, Eſq; where we were nobly entertained, and danced until eight the next Morning, when the Company diſperſed. Some of the Gentlemen went a Fox-hunting, others to different Diverſions, and the Ladies to their reſpective Homes; the happy Miſs *Colt*, with her happier Partner and Company, returned to *Trimleſtown*, and I had the Honour of going with them. We were not long here, when I was told a Marriage was agreed on between Mr. *Barnewall* and Miſs *Colt*; and if I thought I could bear the Fatigue of the Voyage (the Ceremony being to be performed in *England*) Mrs. *Kemp* had intended me the Honour (being a grave Perſon) to chooſe me to perform the Part of a Father, in giving the Bride in Marriage, a Form generally uſed (but I hope not abſolutely neceſſary to make the Marriage lawful, for if it ſhould, the worthy Parſon forgot his Part of this Office, by gazing at an attracting Object not far from him.) By this Miſtake I was deprived of the Honour, and conſequently the Authority of a Parent, which gave me no ſmall Concern. I deſired the Perſon, who told me this, to aſſure Madam *Kemp*, that I was ready and willing to obey this, or any other Commands ſhe might lay on me, and I ſhould rather think it a Jaunt of Pleaſure than a Fatigue, deſiring my Compliments to her, for giving me the Preference of ſo agreeable a Taſk. Then I was told, I had no more to do than to pack up a few Shirts, *&c.* for we were to go off the next Morning.

We ſet out the next Day, accompanied by *Matthew Dowdall*, Eſq; Miſs *Colt* having proper Attendance aſſigned by Mrs. *Kemp*. We came ſafe to *Dublin* that Night, ſtayed a few Days, and ſailed for *Parkgate*, where, after a troubleſome Paſſage of

Digitized by Google

of two Nights, by the Bleſſing of God, we arrived ſafe.

Here I muſt not omit an Accident which had like to have put an End to all our Joy, and prove fatal to the charming Miſs *Colt*. As we were driving with the Tide to caſt Anchor, this Lady was ſitting on the Quarter-deck viewing the Shipping and Harbour, but by a miraculous Turn of Providence ſhe got up, and had not gone three Paces from her Seat, when a Ship run foul of ours, and her Bowſprit broke our Enſign Staff ſhort in two, which fell with great Force on the very Spot the Lady had juſt gone from: It might, in all Probability, have cruſhed her to Death had ſhe remained there; but thank God no worſe happened, than putting us all in a Fright.

We ſtayed here till next Day, but not being able to accompliſh the Buſineſs we came about, we ſet out for *Cheſter* on the 27th of *September*, after preparing every Thing neceſſary for the Marriage, which was next Day performed in St. *Peter*'s Church by the Parſon of that Pariſh, who was invited by the Bridegroom to the Wedding Dinner, which was very elegant. We had extreme good Company, Muſick and Dancing: In ſhort, were as merry as our Hearts could wiſh, not forgetting to throw the Stocking, in which I had the good Fortune to gain the Prize, by fairly flinging it on the Bride's Face. This Ceremony being over, the Company took their Leave, and left the happy Pair to themſelves.

We ſtayed at *Cheſter* three Days, then returned to *Parkgate*, where we were obliged to ſtay ſome Time, the Wind being contrary. Here another wonderful Turn of Divine Providence happened, and, I may ſay, ſaved our whole Company from periſhing. It was thus: One Morning the Wea-

Digitized by Google

ther being extreme ſerene and clear, and the Sea ſmooth as a Looking-glaſs, we all agreed to croſs over into *Wales* to dine at *Holywell*, and return the ſame Night. We lodged at one *Pierce*'s, who had been ſome Time Mate of the *Dublin* Yatch. He undertook to carry us in his own Boat; we went on Board, being nine in Number, and the Paſſage four Miles over: When we got much about the Middle, the Wind blowing very freſh from the Weſt, and meeting the Tide, made the Swell run high, which cauſed the Waves to break ſo terribly, that we expected every Moment would be our laſt. We were at equal Diſtance from both Shores, ſo it was reſolved to go back, which we effected by the Mercy of God, being pretty well waſhed. We had not been long on Shore, when our Boat was turned Bottom upwards by a Wave. I muſt own, I never in all my Life, thought myſelf in greater Danger; and what ſurpriſed me was, to ſee the young Bride, with an undaunted Courage, exhorting the Company not to fear, and truſt in God, whoſe Will muſt be ſubmitted to, having equal Power by Sea and Land.

As ſoon as the Weather permitted, we ſailed for *Dublin*, landed ſafe at *Dunlary*, being two Days and Nights in our Paſſage, and ſoon went to *Trimleſtown*, where we were received with great Joy.

Here I hope (it being pertinent to my Memoirs) my Reader will pardon my Return to *Trimleſtown*. Having ſpent a Fortnight here, and a great Concourſe of Strangers daily coming and going, I propoſed taking my Leave, but his Lordſhip abſolutely refuſed.

About this Time Mr. *Fitzſimmons* invited my Lord *Trimleſtown*, with his Conſort, Mrs. *Kemp*, Miſs *Colt*, and all the Company, then at *Trimleſtown*, to an *Iriſh* Feaſt, which was celebrated in a Barn

Digitized by Google

Barn near Lord *Mornington*'s. We had a ſinged Mutton for one Diſh, with all other Delicacies in Seaſon, and as well ſerved up as the Nature of the Place could admit. In the Evening, my Lord and Company returned to *Trimleſtown*.

Some Days after, *Thomas Nugent*, Eſq; of *Dumore*, came to pay his Compliments to the Family on their coming to this Kingdom. He took particular Notice of me, and gave me a generous Invitation to ſpend ſome Days with him at his Seat, which I promiſed, though did not perform till a conſiderable Time after.

The Winter after my Return from *England* with the married Couple, I ſtayed at *Trimleſtown*, receiving many Marks of Friendſhip and Favour from——*Kemp*, Eſq; and his Lady, who early in the Spring returned to *England*.

CHAP. XIX.

NOthing worth Notice occurred till *Auguſt* 1749, when Lord *Trimleſtown* and his Lady ſet out for *England*, to pay a Viſit to ——— *Kemp*, Eſq; and his Lady. Before his Lordſhip left *Dublin*, he formed a Scheme for my future Support, which was by Subſcription; to which Lady Dowager *Trimleſtown*, Lord *Gormonſtown*, Mr. *Barnewall*, his Lady, *&c.* contributed, and ſtill continue their Favours yearly.

Soon after my Lord and Lady *Trimleſtown* returned from *England*, Mr. *Barnewall* took a pleaſant Farm, with a handſome Houſe, called *Greeningſtown*, near *Athboy*. When they were ſettled, this worthy Gentleman and his Lady gave me the moſt warm and kind Invitation imaginable, aſſuring me, I ſhould never want a Place of Abode whilſt

Digitized by Google

whilſt they had a Houſe; kindly adding, that I might call *Greeningſtown* my Home, and ever ſince I found it ſo when in that Part of the Country.

After this, being at Mr. *Nugent*'s of *Mapeſtown*, I inquired of him, how far it was to *Dunore*, adding, I was under a Promiſe to the Gentleman of that Place, to pay him and his Lady a Viſit: He aſſured me, I could be no where more welcome, and that it was but ſeven Miles. The Weather being fine, and the Days long, I mounted, went thither without taking any Linnen, intending only to dine there; but by the kind Reception, and repeated Intreaties of this worthy and generous Couple I ſtayed three Days; nor was I then permitted to go, but on Condition of a ſpeedy Return to ſpend ſome time with them, which I agreed to.

The next Time I went, they gave me as kind an Invitation for Life as ever I had, both aſſuring me, that nothing could give them more Pleaſure than my accepting their Offer. I returned them my ſincere Thanks, ſaying, I thought myſelf, in Honour, obliged to come once a Year whilſt I was alive and able. Madam *Nugent* ſaid, ſhe did not deſire to limit my Time, for I might come when I pleaſed and go when I pleaſed, for I could not come oftner, nor ſtay longer than I ſhould be welcome.

CHAP. XX.

NOthing elſe material happened till the Year 1753, except the Death of Sir *Robert Kemp*, Bart. whoſe Title and Fortune devolved to his Brother now Sir *John Kemp*. His Goodneſs and Generoſity to me I have before-mentioned.

About

Digitized by Google

About *Michaelmas* I went to *Dunore* to ſee Mr. *Nugent*, with Intent to ſtay ſome Time, but was prevented by the moſt melancholy Accident that could happen, *viz.* On the 1ſt of *October*, a Girl that waited on a young Lady, about ten Years old, careleſsly left a Candle near a Clothes Preſs in the Room where they lay, which ſet fire to it. 'Twas thought ſhe endeavoured to extinguiſh it, but finding ſhe could not, alarmed the Houſe; but it was too late, for in leſs than fifteen Minutes the whole Houſe was in a Blaze. I lay in the next Room, and hearing the Alarm, it put me into ſuch Confuſion, that I made my Eſcape through a thick hot Smoke into the Gallery, with my Breeches in my Hand. At the ſame Time I met Mrs. *Nugent* at the Bottom of the Stairs: She aſked who was murdered; ſhe was told no one, but that the Houſe was on Fire. She cried out, O! ſave my Children, which was immediately effected. To be as brief as poſſible, the whole Houſe, Furniture, Papers, *&c.* excluſive of one Feather-Bed, were intirely conſumed to Aſhes in leſs than two Hours, not being able to ſave a ſecond Thing to ſhift ourſelves with. The computed Loſs of this terrible Cataſtrophe was thought to be no leſs than Four Thouſand Pounds. Mrs. *Nugent* and her Children at Break of Day retired to Mr. *Dardus*, a Relation and Tenant of theirs. Mr. *Nugent* went to a Gentleman's Houſe in the Neighbourhood, and deſired me to take care of myſelf. I went to *Multifarnam*. On the Road I met Mr. *Nugent*'s Coach returning; the Poſtillion called to me, ſaying that he had a Pair of Shoes and Stockings for me, ſent by one Mr. *Richardſon*, a Surveyor of the Exciſe. When I came to the Bridge of the Town, I met this Gentleman, who told me I muſt go with him to his Houſe, for he had provided

Digitized by Google

vided a good Fire in the Parlour for my Reception, expecting of me. According to the ancient Hospitality, he brought some warm Water and a Towel, and offered to wash my Feet, which I would by no Means suffer, and did it myself. This being done, I put on the Shoes and Stockings he sent me. He then gave me my Choice of Beef Stakes or Tea for Breakfast. I chose the latter. Breakfast being over, he brought me all the necessary Apparel requisite for a Person in my Distress. I went with him to take my Leave of Mrs. *Nugent*, intending to go to my Lord *Trimlestown*'s. She was surprised to see me so suddenly changed for the better, and insisted that I should not go till I had seen her Spouse, which was in the Afternoon. I went back to Mr. *Richardson*'s, dined, and lay there that Night. Whilst I was at Dinner, I was told, a Person wanted to speak to me: I went to him, he bowed, saying, he came by Mr. *Nugent*'s Orders to take Measure of me for a Suit of Clothes, which agreeably surprised me.

The next Day I went to Lord *Trimlestown*'s; his Lordship, as well as his whole Family, did not know me at any Rate in my borrowed Feathers: He was extremely kind towards making up my Loss I sustained by the Fire, as well as some other of my Friends, whom I went to visit. In short, in about ten Days I had every Thing made up to me. I went back to Mr. *Nugent*, received my Clothes, and took my Leave of that generous Family, who soon after went to live at *Drogheda*, where I often have the Honour to visit them, and constantly meet with a kind Reception.

As nothing extraordinary has happened from that Time to the present, exclusive of the repeated Favours continually bestowed on me for my Support, by my Friends above mentioned, and their generous

Digitized by Google

generous Offer of ſubſcribing to theſe Memoirs, I ſhall conclude with obſerving, that through the almoſt numberleſs Viciſſitudes of an ill-ſpent and looſe Life, of between ſixty and ſeventy Years, I have, through this Channel, an Opportunity of expoſing the Follies of inconſiderate Youth which were all centered in myſelf, wiſhing, at the ſame Time, that there may be ſome Paſſages ſo intereſting, it may not only be pleaſing, but ſerviceable to the Publick. Then my greateſt Happineſs and Satisfaction that I can deſire from it, in this advanced Age, is, that if it ſucceeds, I ſhall flatter myſelf it will do ſome Good.

FINIS.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

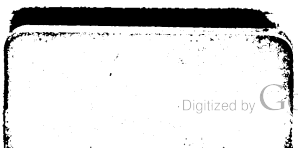
Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google



Digitized by Google

FEB 18 1941